

# CAMBRIDGE ENGLISH CLASSICS

---



PR

2340

ASF42

1912

v.1

CORNELL  
UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY



BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME  
OF THE SAGE ENDOWMENT  
FUND GIVEN IN 1891 BY  
HENRY WILLIAMS SAGE

LIBRARY - CIRCULATION

DATE DUE

~~Olin Fall Reserve~~

~~JUN 7 1985~~

URIS RESERVE SPRING 1992

URIS RESERVE FALL 1993

~~MAY 28 2005~~

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U.S.A

Cornell University Library

PR 2340.A5F42 1912

v.1

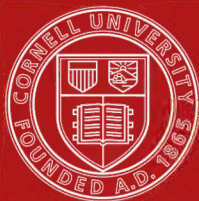
The complete works of Sir Philip Sidney



3 1924 013 123 165

olin

604  
11/11/81 38



## Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.



THE  
COUNTESS  
OF PEMBROKES  
ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE  
SIDNEI.

LONDON

Printed for William Ponsonbie.

*Anno Domini, 1590.*



## PREFATORY NOTE

the incongruity of blending two incompatible forms has been avoided without omitting what is, after all, an interesting part of Sir Philip Sidney's works.

In accordance with the scheme of *The Cambridge English Classics*, the text adopted is printed without any deviations from the original<sup>1</sup> in the matter of spelling and punctuation, save those recorded in the list found on page 520. These exceptions consist of evident misprints which it has been thought useless to preserve. In the Notes, I have given the variant readings supplied by all the editions published from 1593 down to 1674<sup>2</sup>. These are fourteen in number, or, rather, twelve, for the 1623 and 1629 folios are duplicates of the 1621 and 1627 editions respectively. This long and self-imposed task has been, I need not say, tedious and has involved sacrifices of many sorts. To some, it may even seem foolish to have wasted so much time upon mere collation. Yet I do not regret my pains, for it is now possible to solve most of the bibliographical problems which present themselves, that of the Edinburgh edition amongst others.

In the next volumes, I shall have the very pleasant duty to acknowledge various and numerous obligations. In the present volume, my debts are few, though important. First of all, I must mention the courtesy of Mr A. W. Pollard, who, hearing that I was working upon *Arcadia*, spontaneously offered me the use of a valuable copy belonging to him. I owe also many thanks to Mr A. R. Waller, who incited me to undertake

<sup>1</sup> In the British Museum (Press Mark: G. 10440).

<sup>2</sup> The manuscripts of "the old *Arcadia*" have not been collated; to include their variants would have meant practically printing the whole of the earlier form. It also goes without saying that I have not recorded differences in spelling. In the Notes, the spelling given is that of the earliest edition where the difference appears.





TO MY DEARE LADIE  
AND SISTER, THE COUN-  
TESSE OF PEMBROKE.

*H*Ere now have you (most deare, and most worthy to be most deare Lady) this idle worke of mine : which I fear (like the Spiders webbe) will be thought fitter to be swept away, then worn to any other purpose. For my part, in very trueth (as the cruell fathers among the Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes they would not foster) I could well find in my harte, to cast out in some desert of forgetfulnes this child, which I am loath to father. But you desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is an absolute commandement. Now, it is done onelie for you, onely to you : if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be pardoned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it have deformities. For indeede, for severer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinglie handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent unto you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a young head, not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when God will) having many many fancies begotten in it, if it had not ben in some way delivered, would have growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that they came in, then that they gat out. But his chiefe

*safetie, shalbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe protection, the bearing the liverye of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceave me) is worthy to be a sanctuary for a greater offender. This say I, because I knowe the vertue so; and this say I, because it may be ever so; or to say better, because it will be ever so. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follyes your good judgement wil finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stuffe, then, as in an Haberdashers shoppe, glasses, or feathers, you will continue to love the writer, who doth excedinglie love you; and most most hartelie praies you may long live, to be a principall ornament to the familie of the Sidneis.*

Your loving Brother

*Philip Sidnei.*

**T***He division and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneis dooing, but adventured by the over-seer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therfore submits himselfe to their judgement, and if his labour answeere not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneis writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finished, that then choise should have bene made, which should have bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they have bene chosen and disposed as the over-seer thought best.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA WRIT- TEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

## THE FIRST BOOKE.

### CHAP. I.

<sup>1</sup>*The sheperdish complaints of the absented lovers Strephon and Claius.* <sup>2</sup>*The second shipwrack of Pyrocles and Musidorus.* *Their strange saving,* <sup>3</sup>*enterview,* and <sup>4</sup>*parting.*

**I***T was in the time* that the earth begins to put on her new **I** *aparrel* against the approach of her lover, and that the Sun running a most even course becoms an indifferent arbiter betweene the night and the day; when the hopelesse shepheard *Strephon* was come to the sandes, which lie against the Island of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heavy kinde of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly rivall, the pastor *Claius* unto him, and setting first downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my *Claius*, said he, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called unto by over-busie Remembrance, Remembrance, restlesse Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of us, but for it will have us forget our selves. / I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, 145 and that of other shepehardes some were running after their sheep strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble upon the short and sweete grasse, some medicining their sicke ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inventing new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt us any holiday, eyther for pastime

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

or devotion, nay either for necessary foode or naturall rest? but that still it forced our thoughts to worke upō this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did gaze our eyes upon her ever flourishing beautie: did it not still crie within us? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some paultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especially in so troublesome a season? to leave that shore unsaluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth? to leave those steps unvisited wherein *Urania* printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembraunce commaunded, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came ever cloathed unto us in the forme of this place, so this place gives newe heate to the feaver of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my *Claius*, *Urania* lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburdned: and as for thee, poore *Claius*, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reverence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selfe. There shee sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) under her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightsomnes whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulness, as it made even sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning she spake unto us all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine eares did feed upon the sweete words she uttered? And here she laide her hand over thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selfe feelee some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deviding her heavenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when she was imbarcked, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunst for joy, how the sailes did swel with pride, and all because they had *Urania*? O *Urania*, blessed be thou *Urania*, the sweetest fairenesse and fairest sweetness: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and *Claius* thus answered. Alas my *Strephon* (said he) what



needes this skore to reckon up onely our losses? What doubt  
 is there, but that the light of this place doth call our thoughtes  
 to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking  
 steward, Remembraunce? Aswell may sheepe forget to feare  
 when they spie wolues, as wee can misse such fancies, when  
 wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can  
 choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she  
 walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all  
 this? truely no more, but as this place served us to thinke of  
 those thinges, so those thinges serve as places to call to memorie  
 more excellent matters. No, no, let us thinke with considera-  
 tion, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with  
 admiration, and admire with love, and love with joy in the  
 midst of all woes: let us in such sorte thinke, I say, that our  
 poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so  
 exalted as to love, a maide, who is such, that as the greatest  
thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that  
may be praysed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-  
 lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climing  
 up a faire tree, and browsing on his tendrest braunches, and yet  
 are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contayned in  
 them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-  
 west wind, which comes creeping over flowrie fieldes and  
 shaddowed waters in the extreeme heate of summer, and yet is  
 nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth  
 carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when  
 they have seene her, what else they shall ever see is but drie  
 stuble after clovers grasse) is to bee matched with the flocke of  
 unspeakeable vertues laid up delightfully in that best builded  
 folde. But in deede as wee can better consider the sunnes  
 beautie, by marking how he guildes these waters, and moun-  
 taines them by looking upon his owne face, too glorious for our  
 weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her  
 sun-stayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes upon  
 some meaner subject employed. And alas, who can better  
 witnesse that then we, whose experience is grounded upon  
 feeling? hath not the onely love of her made us (being silly  
 ignorant shepherds) raise up our thoughts above the ordinary  
 levell of the worlde, so as great clearkes do not disdaine our  
 conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

made us when others were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of heavens? when others were running at base, to runne over learned writings? when other marke their sheepe, we to marke our selves? hath not shee throwne reason upon our desires, and, as it were given eyes unto *Cupid*? hath in any, but in her, love-fellowship maintained friendship betweene rivals, and beautie taught the beholders chastitie? He was going on with his praises, but *Strephon* bad him stay, & looke: & so they both perceaved a thing which floted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the favourable working of the Sea, then by any selfe industrie. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast up even hard before thẽ: at which time they fully saw that it was a man: Wherupon running for pitie sake unto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constanter frends to his life then his memorie) fast griping upon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all under his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to carry him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew they up a young man of so goodly shape, and well pleasing favour, that one would think death had in him a lovely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparrell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called up their care; so that lifting his feete above his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him upon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recover both breath the servant, & warmth the companion of living. At length, opening his eyes, he gave a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleasaunt dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, until (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) gate up, and looking round about to the uttermost lymittes of his sight, and crying upon the name of *Pyrocles*, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall *Musidorus* live after *Pyrocles*? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparance dead had yet saved his life, and now comming to his life, shoulde be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne unto him, and

pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force stickled that unnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right have you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I list? and what pollicie have you to bestow a benefite where it is counted an injury? They hearing him speake in Greek (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorow; told him they were poore men that were bound by course of humanitie to prevent so great a mischief; and that they wisht him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by his owne prooffe, who had lately escaped as apparant danger as any might be. No, no (said hee) it is not for me to attend so high a blissefulness: but since you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that some Barke may be provided, that will goe out of the haven, that if it be possible we may finde the body farre farre too precious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I have within this casket, of value sufficient to content them. *Claius* presently went to a Fisherman, & having agreed with him, and provided some apparrell for the naked stranger, he embarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the haven, but that some way into the sea they might discerne (as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his brest, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their course as neere unto it as they could: telling, how that smoake was but a small relique of a great fire, which had drivẽ both him & his friend rather to committe themselves to the cold mercie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steared therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came so neere as their eies were ful masters of the object, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carkas of the shippe, or rather some few bones of the carkas, hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death having used more then one dart to that destruction. About it floted great store

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of very rich thinges, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testifie both elemēts violence, but that the chiefe violence was growen of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisly wounds, & their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the seas visage: which it seemed the sea woulde not wash away, that it might witnes it is not alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie: in summe, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwrack without storme or ill footing: and a wast of fire in the midst of water.

But a litle way off they saw the mast, whose proude height now lay along; like a widdow having lost her make of whom she held her honor: but upon the mast they saw a yong man (at least if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who sate (as on horsback) having nothing upon him but his shirt, which being wrought with blew silk & gold; had a kind of resemblance to the sea: on which the sun (then neare his Westerne home) did shoote some of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece used to weare very long) was stirred up & down with the wind, which seemed to have a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feet; himselfe full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture: for, holding his head up full of unmoved majestie, he held a sworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waved about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, & their amasement such a superstitiō, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene *Neptune* and *Venus*, that had made all this terrible slaughter) as they went under sayle by him, held up their hands, and made their prayers. Which when *Musidorus* sawe, though he were almost as much ravished with joy, as they with astonishment, he leapt to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou live, and arte well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond *Pyrocles*: and therefore *Musidorus* could doo no more but perswade the



## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most divine excellencies, and promising great rewardes for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come upon the staies; when one of the saylers descried a Galley which came with sayles and oares directlie in the chase of them; and streight perceived it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee imployed eyther to bee his Galley slaves, or to sell at the best market. Which when the Maister understood, he commaunded forthwith to set on all the canvasse they could, and flie homeward, leaving in that sort poore *Pyrocles* so neere to be reskewed. But what did not *Musidorus* say? what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight? But feare standing at the gates of their eares, put back all perswasions: so that hee had nothing to accompanie *Pyrocles*, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leave the pursuite of them, & turne to take up the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly he might well see them lift up the yong man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere *Pyrocles* shall that bodie of thine be enchaind? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaunded to base offices? shall vertue become a slave to those that be slaves to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so evill as unworthy servitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the gallie setting upon an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friende, and to wish well to the Pirates whome before he hated, least in their ruyne hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the haven, that they absented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselves into the sea: so that beyng as full of sorrow for being unable to doe any thing, as voide of counsell how to doe any thing, besides, that sicknesse grew something upon him, the honest shepherds *Strephon* and *Claius* (who being themselves true friends, did the more perfectly judge the justnesse of his sorrowe) advise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured persuasion

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of his death, to have no cause to dispaire of his life: as one that had lamented the death of his sheepe, should after know they were but strayed, would receive pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

*Scene 1. The Countesse of Pembroke's Chamber.*

## CHAP. 2.

<sup>1</sup> *The pastors comfortes to the wracked Musidorus.* <sup>2</sup> *His passage into Arcadia.* *The descriptions of* <sup>3</sup> *Laconia,* <sup>4</sup> *Arcadia,* *Kalanders* <sup>5</sup> *person,* <sup>6</sup> *house,* *and* <sup>7</sup> *entertainment to Musidorus, now called Palladius.* *His* <sup>8</sup> *sicknes,* *recovery,* <sup>9</sup> *and perfections.*

**1** **N**OW sir (saide they) thus for our selves it is. Wee are in profession but shepherds, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilitie of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present unto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie wee are, is but a little way hence, and even upon the next confines.

**5** There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name *Kalander*, who vouchsafeth much favour unto us: A man who for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturre, but comes to his eares; for his upright dealing so beloved of his neighbours, that he hath many ever readie to doe him their uttermost service, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the use of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these cōtries of *Peloponnesus*: and (which is worth all) all these things give him not so much power, as his nature gives him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deserved thanks. To him we will bring you, & there you may recover againe your helth, without which you cānot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect, you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the cōfort of curtesie, & ease of wise counsell shall not be wanting.

**2** *Musidorus* (who besides he was meerly unacquainted in the cōtrie had his wits astonished with sorow) gave easie consent

to that, frō which he saw no reason to disagree : & therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed upon thē) they tooke their journey together through *Laconia* ; *Claius* & *Strophon* by course carying his chest for him, *Musidorus* only bearing in his cōitenance evidēt marks of a sorowful mind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiving, & knowing that the violence of sorow is not at the first to be strivē withal : (being like a mighty beast, soner tamed with folowing, thā overthrowē by withstāding) they gave way unto it for that day & the next ; never troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melācholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, thogh they had not a lively entrāce to his sēces shut up in sorow, yet like one half asleep, he toke hold of much of the matters spoken unto him, so as a man may say, ere sorow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away something els beside his own sorow, which wrought so in him, that at lēgth he grew cōtent to mark their speeches, then to marvel at such wit in shepheardes, after to like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe conferēce : so that the 3. day after, in the time that (the morning did strow roses & violets in the heavenly floore against the cōming of the Sun,) the nightingales (striving one with the other which coulde in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorow) made thē put of their sleep, & rising frō under a tree (which that night had bin their paviliō) they went on their jorney, which by & by welcomed *Musidorus* eyes (wearied with the wasted soile of *Laconia*) with delightfull prospects. ( There were hilles which garnished their proud 4 heights with stately trees: hūble valleis, whose base estate semed cōforted with refreshing of silver rivers: medows, enameld with al sorts of ey-pleasing floures: thicketts, which being lined with most pleasāt shade, were witnessed so to by the chereful depositiō of many wel-tuned birds: each pasture stored with sheep feeding with sober security, while the prety lābs with bleting oratory craved the dams cōfort: here a shepheard's boy piping, as though he should never be old: there a yong shepherdesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemed that her voice cōforted her hands to work, & her hāds kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the cōūtry (for many houses came under their eye) they were all scattered,

parts  
elen  
mag  
and  
✓✓

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

no two being one by th'other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an accōpanable solitarines, & of a civil wildnes.) I pray you (said *Musidorus*, then first unsealing his long silent lips) what cōtries be these we passe through, which are so divers in shew, the one wāting no store, th'other having no store but of want.

3 The country (answered *Claius*) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing fertill) as by a civill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants (by them named *Helots*) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so unhospitall as now you have found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entring for feare of being mistaken.

4 But this countrie (where now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and even harde by is the house of *Kalander* whether we lead you: this countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men, as we two are, that live upon the commoditie of their sheepe: and therefore in the division of the Arcadian estate are termed shepherds; a happie people, wanting litle, because they desire not much. What cause then, said *Musidorus*, made you venter to leave this sweete life, and put your selfe in yonder unpleasant and dangerous realme? Garded with povertie (answered *Strepheon*) & guided with love: But now (said *Claius*) since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of us whose basenes is such as the very knowledge is darknes: geve us leave to know somthing of you, & of the young man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to enforme *Kalander*, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. *Musidorus* (according to the agreement betweene *Pyrocles* and him to alter their names) answered, that he called himself *Palladius*, and his friend *Daiphantus*; but till I have him againe (said he) I am in deed nothing: and therefore my storie is of nothing, his entertainment (since so good a man he is) cannot be so lowe as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all his curtesie may be to helpe me by some meanes to seeke my frend.



They perceived he was not willing to open himselfe further, and therefore without further questioning brought him to the house: about which they might see (with fitte consideration both of the ayre, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie additions to a great house, as might well shewe, *Kalander* knew that provision is the foundation of hospitalitie, and thrift the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable representing of a firme statelines. The lightes, doores and staires, rather directed to the use of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, so the other not neglected; each place handsome without curiositie, and homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet slubberd up with good felowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleewe it was exceeding beautifull. The servants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and serviceable in behaviour, testifying even in their countenaunces, that their maister tooke aswell care to be served, as of thẽ that did serve. One of them was forth-with readie to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maister greatly favoured: and understanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common greatnes, how so ever now eclipsed with fortune: He ranne to his master, who came presentlie foorth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheardes, but especially applying him to *Musidorus*, *Strephon* privately told him all what he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be knowen.

No said *Kalander* (speaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a false witnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you have done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking *Strephon* by the sleeve, delivered him a letter, written joyntly both to him and *Claius* from *Urania*: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leave-taking of *Kalander* (who quickly ghest and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastily) recommending the

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

young man unto him, they went away, leaving *Musidorus* even lothe to part with them, for the good conversation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in unto them: and therefore, they delivering his chest unto him, he opened it, and would have presented thẽ with two very rich jewels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening unto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that sight *Kalander* soone judged that his guest was of no meane calling; and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, *Musidorus* found his sicknes (which the fight, the sea, and late travell had layd upon him) grow greatly: so that fearing some suddaine accident, he delivered the chest to *Kalander*; which was full of most pretious stones, gorgeously & cunningly set in diverse māners, desiring him he would keep those trifles, and if he died, he would bestow so much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a young man, naming himselfe *Daiphantus*, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

8 But *Kalander* seeing him faint more and more, with carefull speede conveyed him to the most cōmodious lodging in his house: where being possest with an extreeme burning fever, he cōtinued some while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of sicknesse, so that in six weekes the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embassadour of his health; to the great joy of *Kalander*: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Messenia, set foorth a shippe and a galley to seeke and succour *Daiphantus*: so at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie *Palladius*.

9 For having found in him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration) by dayly discourses which he delighted him selfe to have with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a pearcing witte quite voide of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence as sweete in the uttering, as slowe to come to the uttering, a behaviour so noble, as gave a majestie to adversitie: and all in a man whose age could not be above one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was even enamoured with a fatherly love

towards him; or rather became his servaunt by the bondes such vertue laid upon him; once hee acknowledged him selfe so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

## CHAP. 3.

*The <sup>1</sup> pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narration of the <sup>2</sup> Arcadian estate, <sup>3</sup> the King, <sup>4</sup> the Queene, <sup>5</sup> their two daughters, and <sup>6</sup> their gardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this storie.*

U**T** *Palladius* having gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answere of the shippes set foorth, *Kalander* one afternoone led him abroad to a wel arayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selfe more then in any other delighted: the backside of the house was neyther field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as soone as the descending of the stayres had delivered them downe, they came into a place cunninglie set with trees of the moste tast-pleasing fruites: but scarcelie they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were suddainely stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicket bend, behinde the thickets againe newe beddes of flowers, which being under the trees, the trees were to them a Pavilion, and they to the trees a mosaical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull by counterfaiting his enemie error, and making order in confusion.

In the middest of all the place, was a faire ponde, whose shaking christall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, so that it bare shewe of two gardens; one in deede, the other in shaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked *Venus* of white marble, wherein the graver had used such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to set foorth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe *Aeneas*, who seemed (having begun to sucke) to leave that, to looke upon her fayre eyes, which smiled at the babes follie, the meane while the

breast running. Hard by was a house of pleasure builte for a Sommer retiring place, whether *Kalander* leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workman of Greece. There was *Diana* when *Ætæon* sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame & disdaine: & one of her foolish Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was *Atalanta*; the posture of whose lims was so livelie expressed, that if the eyes were the only judges, as they be the onely seers, one would have sworne the very picture had runne. Besides many mo, as of *Helena*, *Omphale*, *Iole*: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excellēt beautie; & more excellēt would have bene deemed, but that there stood betweene thẽ a yong maid, whose wonderfulnessse tooke away all beautie from her, but that, which it might seeme shee gave her backe againe by her very shadow. And such differēce, being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a person living, was there betweene her and al the other, though Goddesses, that it seemd the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquisitivenes an uncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inventiō. *Kalander* answered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the yonger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were contained in that Table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an over-curious eye of her parents: & that he would also have drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beautie, in her shepheardish attire; but that the rude clown her gardiā would not suffer it: nether durst he aske leave of the Prince for feare of suspitiō. *Palladius* perceaved that the matter was wrapt up in some secresie, and therefore would for modestie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which *Kalander* perceaving, well said he, my deere guest, I know your minde, and I will satisfie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of

the question, but I will discover unto you, aswell that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is delivered unto me: knowing so much in you, though not long acquainted, that I shall find your eares faithfull treasurers. So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the provinces of Greece, 2 hath ever beene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are the onely people, which as by their Justice and providence geve neither cause nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, so are they not sturred with false praise to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wasting of their owne lives in ravening, that their posteritie should long after saie, they had done so. Even the Muses seeme to approve their good determinatiō, by chosing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that the very shepheards have their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you 3 see) by name *Basilius*, a Prince of sufficient skill to governe so quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had set down good lawes, and the well bringing up of the people doth serve as a most sure bond to hold thē. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous love of his people, wherein he doth not only passe al his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke al the princes living. Wherof the cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wisdome, height of courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre affection, as trueth of worde, meekenesse, courtesie, mercifulnesse, and liberalitie.

He being already well stricken in yeares, married a young 4 princes, named *Gynecia*, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband:

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of most unspotted chastitie, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie shee tooke a good course: for otherwise it would have beene terrible.

5 Of these two are brought to the worlde two daughters, so beyonde measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable creatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much so ever some men (sharpe witted onely in evill speaking) have sought to disgrace them. The elder is named *Pamela*; by many men not deemed inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receyve the worde of more) more sweetnesse in *Philoclea*, but more majestie in *Pamela*: mee thought love plaide in *Philocleas* eyes, and threatned in *Pamelas*: me thought *Philocleas* beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeelde: *Pamelas* beautie used violence, and such violence as no hart could resist: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; *Philoclea* so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolne into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope, but teach hope good māners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who avoids not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be voide of pride; her mothers wisdom, greatness, nobilitie, but (if I can ghesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our *Basilus* being so publickly happie as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happinesse as to be a beloved Prince, and so in his private blessed as to have so excellent a wife, and so over-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For, having made a journey to Delphos, and safely returned, within short space hee brake up his court, and retired himselfe, his wife, and children into a certaine Forrest hereby, which hee calleth his desert, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of meane calling, who do all houshold services,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him selfe remains with his younger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without having any other creature living in that lodge with him.

Which though it bee straunge, yet not so straunge, as the<sup>6</sup> course he hath taken with the princesse *Pamela*, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied? truly with none other, but one *Dametas*, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke ever was without the priviledge of a bable, with his wife *Miso*, and daughter *Mopsa*, in whome no witt can devise anie thing wherein they maie pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serve for a foile of her perfections. This loutish clowne is such, that you never saw so ill favoured a visar; his behaviour such, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparrel, even as I would wish him: *Miso* his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splayfoote have made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she observes *decorũ*, having a froward mind in a wretched body. Betweene these two personages (who never agreed in any humor, but in disagreeing) is issued forth mistresse *Mopsa*, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praises in verse, I will only repeate them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are these, which I have so often caused to be song, that I have them without booke.

*What length of verse can serve brave Mopsas good to show?  
Whose vertues strange, & beauties such, as no mā thē may know  
Thus shrewdly burnded thē, how cā my Muse escape?  
The gods must help, and pretious things must serve to shew her shape.  
Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste:  
As smothe as Pan, as Juno milde, like goddesse Iris faste.  
With Cupid she fore-sees, and goes god Vulcans pace:  
And for a tast of all these gifts, she steales god Momus grace.  
Her forehead jacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue,  
Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:  
Her haire like Crapal-stone; her mouth O heavenly wyde;  
Her skin like burnisht gold, her hands like silver ure untryde.  
As for her parts unknowne, which hidden sure are best:  
Happie be they which well beleewe, & never seeke the rest.*

Now truely having made these descriptions unto you, me thinkes you should imagine that I rather faine some pleasant

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

devise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banished from his own wits) could possibly make so unworthie a choise. But truly (deare guest) so it is, that Princes (whose doings have beene often soothed with good successe) thinke nothing so absurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way; & so falling into other questiōs, he found some of his aunswers (as a dog sure if he could speake, had wit enough to describe his kennell) not unsensible, & all uttered with such rudenes, which he enterpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them) that *Basilus* conceaving a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant shew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no sooner takē the Princes minde, but that there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, & shadowes of vertues found for *Dametas*. His silence grew wit, his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous simplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great persons, in love with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that his weaknesse with his presence would much be mended. And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus having first given him the office of principall heardman, lastly, since he tooke this strange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too great a sayle for so small a boate) doth so over-sway poore *Dametas*, that if before he were a good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt me (I feare mee in deede) my master will in the end (with his cost) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to use men as men are; no more then a horse will be taught to hunt, or an asse to mannage. But in sooth I am afraide I have geven your eares too great a surfette, with the grosse discourses of that heavie peece of flesh. But the zealous greefe I conceive to see so great an error in my Lord, hath made me bestow more words, then I confesse so base a subject deserveth.



## CHAP. 4.

*The* <sup>1</sup>*cause of Basilius his discourting.* <sup>2</sup>*Philanax his dissuasive letter.* <sup>3</sup>*Basilius his privileged companie.* <sup>4</sup>*Foure causes why old men are discourters.* <sup>5</sup>*The state, the skil, and exercise of the Arcadian shepheards.*

**T**Hus much now that I have tolde you, is nothing more <sup>I</sup> then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moved him to this strange solitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one person living. My selfe cā cōjecture, & in deed more then conjecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I have an onely sonne, by name *Clitophon*, who is now absent, preparing for his owne marriage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking up thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the cōpy which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed *Clitophon* for the curiositie, which made him break his duetie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subject to be revealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I ever since for my good liking, have caried about me: which before I read unto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named *Philanax*, appointed by the Prince, Regent ✓ in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there lives no man, whose excellent witte more simple imbraseh integritie, besides his unfained love to his master, wherein never yet any could make question, saving, whether he loved *Basilius* or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either servile-ly yeeld to al appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fansie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loves, it should seeme (for more then the letter I have not to ghesse by)

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

that the Prince upon his returne from Delphos, (*Philanax* then lying sick) had written unto him his determination, rising (as evidently appears) upon some Oracle he had there receaved: whereunto he wrote this answere.

*Philanax his letter to Basilus.*

- 2 Most redouted & beloved prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to have used my humble service, both I should in better season, and to better purpose have spoken: and you (if my speech had prevayled) should have beene at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietnes; I would then have said, that wisdome and vertue be the only destinies appointed to mā to follow, whēce we ought to seeke al our knowledge, since they be such guydes as cannot faile; which, besides their inward cōfort, doo lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue; or, if the wickednes of the world should oppresse it, it can never be said, that evil hapneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then have said, the heavenly powers to be revered, and not searched into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, then their hidden counsels by curiositie. These kind of soothsayers (since they have left us in our selves sufficient guides) to be nothing but fansie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be prevented. But since it is weakenes too much to remember what should have beene done, and that your commandemēt stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the maner of your determination dooth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you have so governed this Region, that neither your Subjectes have wanted justice in you, nor you obediēce in them; & your neighbors have found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendshippe, then make newe triall of your enmitie. If this then have proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise providence, generally to prevent all those things, which might encōber your happines: why should you now seeke newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of

the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then wisdome and goodnes? Why should you deprive your selfe of government, for feare of loosing your government? like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accoüted of, arme up your courage the more against it: for who wil stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subjects have you in their eyes; let them see the benefites of your justice dayly more and more; and so must they needes rather like of present sureties, then uncertaine changes. Lastly, whether your time call you to live or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you live to keep thẽ both unmarried; &, as it were, to kill the joy of posteritie, which in your time you may enjoy: moved perchance by a mis-understoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficiẽtly against such fancies? once certaine it is, the God, which is God of nature, doth never teach unnaturalnes: and even the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loves should follow. Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hetherto such, as hath beene most fit to restraine all evill: geving their mindes vertuous delights, and not greeving them for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall to a sodain straightning them, what can it doo but argue suspition, a thing no more unpleasant, then unsure, for the preserving of vertue? Leave womens minds, the most untamed that way of any: see whether any cage can please a bird? or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying? what dooth jelousie, but stirre up the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrayned? for they are treasures, or things of great delight, which men use to hide, for the aptnesse they have to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishment, then it had been before to have kept the minde (which being the chiefe part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommending so principall a charge of the Princessse *Pamela*, (whose minde goes beyond the governing of many thousands such) to such a person as *Dametas*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

is (besides that the thing in it self is strange) it comes of a very evil ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faithfulness. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good, as his fortune may keepe him un-assaied: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easily changed, or easily deceived: & so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to have been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commaundement and my zeale drawn me; which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hilles, or like a poore passenger that may spie a rock, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe, to stand wholly upon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are, and to avoyd any evil which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceive, that the cause of all, hath beene the vanitie which posseseth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing so certaine, as our continual uncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may see by one place of *Philanax* letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes us, that *Basilus* judgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wise (as I take it) counsell of *Philanax*. For, having lost the sterne of his government, with much amazement to the people, among whom many strange bruits are received for currant, and with some apparance of daunger in respect of the valiant *Amphalus*, his nephew, & much envy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against *Philanax*, to see *Philanax* so advaunced, though (to speake simply) he deserve more thẽ as many of us as there be in Arcadia: the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainly to cõfesse, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal have any husbād, but  
 3 keep thẽ thus solitary with him: wher he gives no other body leve to visit him at any time, but a certain priest, who being excellent in poetrie, he makes him write out such things as he best likes, he being no les delightful in cõversatiō, thẽ needfull  
 ✓ for devotiō, & about twēty specified shepheards, in whō (some for exercises, & some for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreatiō.

And now you know as much as my self: wherein if I have<sup>4</sup> held you over long, lay hardly the fault upon my olde age, which in the very disposition of it is talkative: whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loves to exercise that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it knowen but by utterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I will say for my selfe, that I have not laid these matters, either so openly, or largely to any as your selfe: so much (if I much fayle not) doo I see in you, which makes me both love and trust you. Never may he be old, answered *Palladius*, that dooth not reverence that age, whose heaviness, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lifts up the noble and spirituall part: and well might you have alledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that have I received of you, never to be forgotten, but with ungratefulnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which have shewed effects in your Prince, truly even the last, that he should conceive such pleasure in shepheards discourses, would not seeme the least unto me, saving that you told me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe having beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by *Strephon* and *Claius*, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheards as *Homer* speakes of, that be governors of peoples, then such senatours who hold their councell in a shepecoate: for them two (said *Kalander*) especially *Claius*, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, having neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they have not so much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sporte to heare howe they impute to love, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (saie they) with suche a strength.

But certainly, all the people of this countrie from high to<sup>5</sup> lowe, is given to those sportes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare how soone even children will beginne to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

yersifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to  
 ✓ make Songes and Dialogues in meeter, either love whetting  
 their braine, or long peace having begun it, example and emu-  
 lation amending it. Not so much, but the clowne *Dametas*  
 will stumble sometimes upon some Songs that might become a  
 better brayne: but no sorte of people so excellent in that kinde  
 as the pastors; for their living standing but upon the looking to  
 their beastes, they have ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither  
 are our shepherds such, as (I heare) they be in other countries;  
 but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther  
 themselves looke, or their children give daylie attendaunce.  
 And then truely, it would delight you under some tree, or by  
 some rivers side (when two or three of them meet together) to  
 heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliver out, some-  
 times joyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes chalengings one  
 of the other, sometimes under hidden formes uttering such  
 matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they  
 have most commonly one, who judgeth the price to the best  
 doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are  
 of triumphes: and his parte is to sette downe in writing all that  
 is saide, save that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth  
 polish the rudenesse of an unthought-on songe. Now the  
 choise of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnesse of  
 voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom  
 also there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde melan-  
 cholies having made weery of the worldes eyes, have come to  
 spende their lives among the countrie people of *Arcadia*; &  
 their conversation being well approved, the prince vouchsafeth  
 them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great  
 courtesie and liberalitie, animates the Shepherdes the more  
 exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no  
 cause to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them; the  
 blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather goes to  
 solitarinesse, then makes them come to companie. Neyther  
 doo I accuse my maister for advauncing a countriman, as  
*Dametas* is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as  
 truely it is among divers of that fellowship) any outward low-  
 nesse should hinder the hiest raysing, but that he would needes  
 make election of one, the basenesse of whose minde is such,  
 that it sinckes a thousand degrees lower, then the basest bodie

could carrie the most base fortune: Which although it might bee aunswered for the Prince, that it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great advauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman: yet all honest hartes feelee, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all advauncement. But I am ever too long uppon him, when hee crosseth the waie of my speache, and by the shaddowe of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomacks, thē to break the aire with my idle discourses: And more witte I might have learned of *Homer* (whome even now you mentioned) who never entertayned eyther gwestes or hostes with long speaches, till the mouth of hunger be thoroughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading *Palladius* through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they used to suppe; *Palladius* assuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfullest trencher-men of *Media*.

## CHAP. 5.

*The <sup>1</sup> sorow of Kalander for his sonne Clitophon. The <sup>2</sup> storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their <sup>3</sup> perfections, their <sup>4</sup> love, their <sup>5</sup> troubles, her <sup>6</sup> impoysoning, <sup>7</sup> his rare constancie, <sup>8</sup> her straunge refusall, <sup>9</sup> their pathologies, her <sup>10</sup> flight, his <sup>11</sup> revenge on his rivall the mischiefe-worker Demagoras, then Captaine of the rebell Helots, who <sup>12</sup> take him, and <sup>13</sup> Clitophon that sought to helpe him: but <sup>14</sup> both are kept alive by their new captaine.*

**B**Ut beeing come to the supping place, one of *Kalander's* servaunts rounded in his eare; at which (his collour chaungyng) hee retired him selfe into his chamber; commaunding his men diligentlie to waite and attend upon *Palladius*, and to excuse his absence with some necessarie busines he had presentlie to dispatch. Which they accordinglie did, for some fewe dayes forcing thēselves to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces never so cunningly, *Palladius* perceaved there was some il-pleasing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe set alone at supper, he called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

✓✓ the matter of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the ende confessed unto him, that his maister had received newes, that his sonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunst to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemenne of Lacedæmon and the *Helots*: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliver a friend of his taken prysoner by the *Helots*; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunsome for his life: but that the hate those paysaunts conceived agaynst all Gentlemen was suche, that everie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether-unto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to have a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which losse had stricken the old Gentleman with such sorrowe, as if abundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyred, tearing his bearde and hayre, and cursing his old age, that had not made his grave to stoppe his eares from such advertisements: but that his faithfull servants had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (*Philanax* the governour refusing to deale in it, as a private cause, but yet giving leave to seeke their best redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered upon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their lives by any way, to redeeme or revenge *Clitophon*. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to live is a griefe unto him, & that even his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitality (long and holily observed by him) give still such a sway to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the straunger lodged under his rooffe, to receyve (as it were) any infection of his anguish, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his love, or admiration bee greater. But *Palladius* could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in peeces with compassion of the case, liking of *Kalanders* noble behaviour, kindnesse for his respect to himwarde, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his dearest friend *Daiphantus*, whom he judged to suffer eyther a like or a worse fortune: therefore rising from the boorde, he desired the steward to tell him particularly, the ground, and event of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumstaunces, there might perhaps



some waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward easilie in this sorte condescended.

My Lord (said he) when our good king *Basilus*, with better 2  
 successe then expectation, tooke to wife (even in his more then  
 decaying yeares) the faire yong princes *Gynecia*; there came  
 with her a young Lord, cousin german to her selfe, named  
*Argalus*, led hether, partly with the love & honour of his noble  
 kinswomā, partly with the humour of youth, which ever thinkes  
 that good, whose goodnes he sees not: & in this court he  
 received so good encrease of knowledge, that after some yeares  
 spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions,  
 that *Arcadia* gloried such a plant was transported unto them, 3  
 being a Gentleman in deede most rarely accomplished, ex-  
 cellentie learned, but without all vayne glory: friendly,  
 without factiousnes: valiaunt, so as for my part I thinke the  
 earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall actes then  
 hee; how soever now of late the fame flies of the two princes  
 of *Thessalia* and *Macedon*, and hath long done of our noble  
 prince *Amphialus*: who in deede, in our partes is onely ac-  
 counted likely to match him: but I say for my part, I thinke  
 no man for valour of minde, and habilitie of bodie to bee  
 preferred, if equalled to *Argalus*; and yet so valiant as he never  
 durst doo any bodie injurie: in behaviour some will say ever  
 sadde, surely sober, and somewhat given to musing, but never  
 uncourteous; his worde ever ledde by his thought, and followed  
 by his deede; rather liberall then magnificent, though the one  
 wanted not, and the other had ever good choise of the receiver:  
 in summe (for I perceive I shall easily take a great draught of  
 his praises, whom both I and all this countrie love so well) such  
 a man was (and I hope is) *Argalus*, as hardly the nicest eye can  
 finde a spot in, if the over-vehement constancie of yet spotles  
 affection, may not in harde wrested constructions be counted a  
 spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which  
 hath made bothe him, and it selfe in him, over all this country  
 famous. My maisters sonne *Clitophon* (whose losse gives the  
 cause to this discourse, and yet gives me cause to beginne with  
*Argalus*, since his losse proceedes from *Argalus*) beyng a young  
 Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings sisters sonne) so  
 truely of good nature, and one that can see good and love it,  
 haunted more the companie of this worthie *Argalus*, then of any

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and friendlines, as hath brought forth the effectes which you shall heare. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my maister, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire *Parthenia*; faire in deede (fame I thinke it selfe daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not *Helena* queene of *Corinth*, and the two incomparable sisters of *Arcadia*) and that which made her fairenesse much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire embassadour of a most faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to judge it selfe, then to shoue it selfe: her speach being as rare as pretious; her silence without sullenesse; her modestie without affectation; her shamefastnes without ignorance: in summe, one, that to praise well, one must first set downe with himselfe, what it is to be excellent: for so she is.

4 I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in reason to drawe liking with affection: mens actions doo not alwaies crosse with reason: to be short, it did so in deed. They loved, although for a while the fire therof (hopes winges being cut of) were blownen by the bellowes of dispaire, upon this occasion.

5 There had beene a good while before, and so continued, a suter to this same lady, a great noble mā, though of *Laconia*, yet neere neighbour to *Parthenias* mother, named *Demagoras*: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly stout, loving no bodie but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake *Parthenia*: and pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so guilded over all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had given her consent; and using a mothers authoritie upon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not because shee liked her choise, but because her obedient minde had not yet taken uppon it to make choyse; and the daie of their assurance drew neere, when my young Lord *Clitophon* brought this noble *Argalus*, perchaunce principallie to see so rare a sight, as *Parthenia* by all well judging eyes was judged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance

appointed, yet love that sawe hee had a great journey to make in shorte time, hasted so him selfe, that before her worde could tie her to *Demagoras*, her harte hath vowed her to *Argalus*, with so gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired above all thinges to have *Argalus*, *Argalus* feared nothing but to misse *Parthenia*. And now *Parthenia* had learned both liking and misliking, loving and lothing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of judgement; in so much, that when the time came that *Demagoras* (full of proude joy) thought to receave the gifte of her selfe, shee with woordes of resolute refusall (though with teares shewing she was sorie she must refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her grave, then wedded to *Demagoras*. The chaunge was no more straunge, then unpleasant to the mother: who beyng determinately (least I shoulde say of a great Lady, wilfully) bent to marrie her to *Demagoras*, tryed all wayes which a wittie and hard-harted mother could use, upon so humble a daughter: in whome the onely resisting power was love. But the more shee assaulted, the more shee taught *Parthenia* to defende: and the more *Parthenia* defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that *Argalus* standing betweene them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining upon *Demagoras*, she sought all meanes how to remove him, so much the more, as he manifested himself an unremoveable suiter to her daughter: first, by imploying him in as many dāgerous enterprises, as ever the evill stepmother *Iuno* recommended to the famous *Hercules*: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to overthrow him, did set him up upon the height of honor; inough to have moved her harte, especially to a man every way so worthy as *Argalus*: but she struggling against all reason, because she would have her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with *Demagoras*, the more vertuous *Argalus* was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquered in his cōquests, and therefore still imploying him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, she used all extremities possible upon her faire daughter, to make her geve over her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to judge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constancie of affection: for, as to *Argalus* the world sooner

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

wanted occasions, then he valour to goe thorow them; so to *Parthenia*, malice sooner ceased, thẽ her unchanged patience. Lastly, by treasons, *Demagoras* and she would have made away *Argalus*: but hee with providence & courage so past over all, that the mother tooke such a spitefull grief at it, that her hart brake withall, and she died.

6 But then, *Demagoras* assuring himselfe, that now *Parthenia* was her owne, she would never be his, and receiving as much by her owne determinate answer, not more desiring his owne happines, then envying *Argalus*, whom he saw with narrow eyes, even ready to enjoy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his conceite with all the mischievous counsels which disdayned love, and envious pride could geve unto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that *Argalus* was gone to his countrie, to fetch some of his principall frendes to honour the marriage, which *Parthenia* had most joyfully consented unto,) the wicked *Demagoras* (I say) desiring to speake with her, with unmercifull force, (her weake armes in vaine resisting) rubd all over her face a most horrible poyson: the effect whereof was such, that never leaper lookt more ugly thẽ she did: which done, having his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of her servãts, as redy to revenge as they could be, in such an unexpected mischiefe. But the abhominableness of this fact being come to my *L. Kalander*, he made such meanes, both by our kings intercession, & his own, that by the king, & Senat of *Lacedæmō*, *Demagoras* was upon paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should have hated the fault, joynde himselfe, with al the powers he could make, unto the *Helots*, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to have a man of such authority among thẽ) made him their general: & under him have committed divers the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate revenge) can imagine.

7 But within a while after this pitifull fact committed upon *Parthenia*, *Argalus* returned (poore gentleman) having her faire image in his heart, and alredy promising his eies the uttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselves of their owne misfortune. I meane not to move passions with telling you the grieffe of both, when he knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first

knowledge could possibly have Vertues aide so ready, as not even weakly to lament the losse of such a jewell, so much the more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was unrecoverable: but within a while, trueth of love (which still held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and even a delight to be constant, faith geven, and inward worthines shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the noble *Argalus*, that not onely in such comfort which witty arguments may bestow upon adversitie, but even with the most abundant kindnesse that an eye-ravished lover can expresse, he laboured both to drive the extremity of sorow from her, & to hasten the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he unfainedly shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had never been disinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed unto her: and for that cause deferred his intēded revenge upon *Demagoras*, because he might continually be in her presence; shewing more hūble serviceablenes, and joy to content her, then ever before.

But as he gave this rare ensāple, not to be hoped for of any 8 other, but of an other *Argalus*: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: for, where she desired to enjoy him, more then to live; yet did she overthrow both her owne desire, and his, and in no sorte would yeeld to marry him; with a strange encounter of loves affects, and effects: that he by an affection sprong from excessive beautie, should delight in horrible foulnesse; and she, of a vehement desire to have him, should kindly buyld a resolution never to have him: for trueth is, that so in heart she loved him, as she could not finde in her heart he should be tied to what was unworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might have a fayre field to 9 use eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, and truely affectionated speeches, while he conjured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him so unhappy, as to think he had not only lost her face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayrest, had been but as a marshall, to lodge the love of her in his minde; which now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beseeching her, even with teares, to know, that his love was not so superficial, as to go no further then the skin; which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers:

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

how could hee be so ungratefull, as to love her the lesse for that, which she had onely received for his sake? that he never beheld it, but therein he saw the lovelines of her love towarde him: protesting unto her, that he would never take joy of his life, if he might not enjoy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that overheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other answere but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I love you: if I were Princesse of the whole world, and had withal, al the blessings that ever the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, & them, under your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must cōfesse) far unworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a joy for my hart to think of) have accepted your vouchsafing me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would have supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match *Argalus* to such a *Parthenia*: Live happy, deare *Argalus*, I geve you full libertie, and I beseech you take it; and I assure you I shall rejoyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to containe her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

10 But *Argalus* with a most heavie heart still pursuing his desire, she fixt of mind to avoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie; which (even of him) grew unpleasant unto her; one night she stole away: but whether, as yet is unknowne, or in deede what is become of her.

11 *Argalus* sought her long, and in many places: at length (despairing to finde her, and the more he despaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but first determining to be revenged of *Demagoras*, hee went alone disguysed into the chiefe towne held by the *Helots*: where comming into his presence, garded about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his fury no löger for a fitter time: but setting upon him, in despite of a great many that helped him, gave him divers mortall wounds, and  
12 himself (no question) had been there presently murthered, but that *Demagoras* himselfe desired he might be kept alive; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with some cruell execution to bee layd upon him, but death came soner then he

lookt for; yet having had leisure to appoint his successor, a young man, not long before delivered out of the prison of the King of *Lacedæmon*, where hee should have suffered death for having slaine the kings Nephew: but him he named, who at that time was absent, making roades upon the *Lacedemonians*, but being returned, the rest of the *Helots*, for the great liking they conceived of that yong man, (especially because they had none among themselves to whom the others would yeeld) were cōtent to follow *Demagoras* appointment. And well hath it succeded with them, he having since done things beyond the hope of the yongest heads; of whom I speak the rather, because he hath hetherto preserved *Argalus* alive, under pretence to have him publicly, and with exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende of these warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous issue.

And he hath likewise hetherto kept my young Lord *Clitophon* alive, who (to redeme his friend) went with certaine <sup>13</sup> other noble-men of *Laconia*, and forces gathered by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but he issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the *Laconians*, slew many of the noble-men, & tooke *Clitophon* prisoner, whom with much a <sup>14</sup> doo he keepeth alive: the *Helots* being villanously cruell; but he tempereth thẽ so, sometimes by folowing their humor, sometimes by striving with it, that hetherto hee hath saved both their lives, but in different estates; *Argalus* being kept in a close & hard prison, *Clitophon* at some libertie. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selves litle of their safeties, while they are in the *Helots* hands, I have delivered all I understande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to *Clitophons* case, to be so particularly told, yet the strāgenes of it, made me think it would not be unplesant unto you.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *Kalanders expedition against the Helots.* <sup>2</sup> *Their estate.* <sup>3</sup> *Palladius his stratageme against them:* <sup>4</sup> *which prevayleth.* <sup>5</sup> *The Helots resistance, discomfiture, and* <sup>6</sup> *re-enforce by the returne of their new captaine* <sup>7</sup> *The combat and* <sup>8</sup> *enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius, and by their* <sup>9</sup> *meanes a peace, with* <sup>10</sup> *the release of Kalander and Clitophon.*

**P**alladius thanked him greatly for it, being even passionately delighted with hearing so straunge an accidēt of a knight so famous over the world, as *Argalus*, with whome he had himselfe a long desire to meet: so had fame poured a noble emulation in him, towards him.

**I** But thē (wel bethinking himself) he called for armour, desiring them to provide him of horse & guide, and armed al saving the head, he wēt up to *Kalāder*, whom he found lying upō the groūd, having ever since banished both sleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But *Palladius* raySED him up, saying unto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord *Kalander*; let us labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you know my selfe misse one, who, though he be not my sonne, I would disdayn the favour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will folow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, *Kalanders* spirits were so revived withal, that (receiving some sustenance, and taking a litle rest) he armed himselfe, and those few of his servants he had left unsent, and so himselfe guyded *Palladius* to the place upon the frontiers: where alredy there were assembled betwene three and four thousand men, all wel disposed (for *Kalanders* sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and brave armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enimies,



whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them selves they knew; but neither cunning use of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which *Palladius* soone perceiving, he desired to understand (as much as could be delivered unto him) the estate of the *Helots*.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the 2 affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who having been of old, freemen and possessioners, the *Lacedæmonians* had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage upon them: which they had long borne; till of late the *Lacedæmonians* through greedinesse growing more heavie then they could beare, and through contempt lesse carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practise) set themselves in armes, and whetting their courage with revenge, and grounding their resolutiō upon despaire, they had proceeded with unlooked-for succes: having already takē divers Towns and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentry; for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for an excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any souldierly discipline, practise had now made then comparable to the best of the *Lacedæmonians*; & more of late then ever; by reason, first of *Demagoras* a great Lord, who had made him self of their partie, and since his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought up their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good government, and withall led them so valourouslie, that (besides the time wherein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in some other great cōflicts: in such wise, that the estate of *Lacedæmon* had sent unto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. *Palladius* having gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping *Clitophon*: but some device was to be taken in hand, wherein no lesse discretion then valour was to be used.

Whereupon, the council of the chiefe men was called, 3 and at last, this way *Palladius* (who by some experience, but especiallie by reading Histories, was acquainted with strata-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

✓ games) invented, and was by all the rest approoved: that all the men there shoulde dresse themselves like the poorest sorte of the people in *Arcadia*, having no banners, but bloudie shirtes hanged upon long staves, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of drumme and fife, their armour they should aswell as might be, cover, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill-favouredly as might well become such wearers; and this the whole number should doo, saving two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength, whereof *Palladius* him selfe would be one, who should have their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was captive; and being come two houres before Sunneset within vewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie descrying their number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a cunning fellow, (so much the cunningger as that he could maske it under rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, delivered unto the *Helots* assembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then they, & therfore had put themselves in the field, & had alreadie (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten skore Gentlemen prisoners, whō they had there well & fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in *Arcadia*, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the field against their Princes forces, they were come to them for succor; knowing, that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock unto thē, but that in the mean time, lest their Prince should pursue thē, or the *Lacedæmonian* King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cause) fall upon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe under the walles, and for surety have their prisoners (who were such mē as were ever able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

- 4 The *Helots* made but a short consultatiō, being glad that their contagion had spread it selfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of *Greece*; besides their greedinesse to have so many Gentlemen in their handes, in whose ransoms they already meant to have

a share; to which hast of concluding, two things wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of *Lacedæmon*: the second, that over-many good fortunes began to breed a proude recklesnesse in them: therefore sending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had had no warre, never suspecting a private mans credite could have gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chaines upon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leave for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour under the walles. So opened they the gates, and received in the carts; which being done, and *Palladius* seing fit time, he gave the signe, and shaking of their chaynes, (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easily loose them) drew their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting upon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and so give entrie to all the force of the *Arcadians*, before the *Helots* could make any head to resist them.

But the *Helots* being men hardened against daungers, 5 gathered as (well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would have given a shrewd welcome to the *Arcadians*, but that *Palladius* (blaming those that were slow, hartning thē that were forward, but especially with his owne ensample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the *Helots*, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger; at length, every particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then *Kalander* cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but *Palladius* wisht him (first scouring the streates) to house all the *Helots*, and make themselves maisters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the *Helots* had gotten 6 new hart, and with divers sortes of shot from corners of streats, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come unto them by the returne of their Captain; who though he brought not many with him (having disperst most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great nūber rūning out of the gate, not yet possessd by the *Arcadians*, he made them

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpet give the lowdest testimonie he could of his returne, which once heard, the rest of the *Helots* which were otherwise scattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had beene a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had sprong. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obstinacie. The *Arcadians* fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the *Helots* to recover what they had lost. The *Arcadians*, as in an unknowne place, having no succour but in their handes; the *Helots*, as in their own place, fighting for their livings, wives, & children. There was victorie & courage against revenge and despaire: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

7 At length, the left winge of the *Arcadians* began to loose ground; which *Palladius* seeing, he streight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed thẽ, with such an overflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whose eies soone judged of that wherwith thẽselves were governed) saw that he alone was worth al the rest of the *Arcadians*. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that upon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought onely to joine with him: which minde was no lesse in *Palladius*, having easily marked, that he was as the first mover of al the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselves to be the uttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the battaile in noise and number, as it was surpassing it in bravery of fighting, & (as it were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men despising death; both confident, as unwonted to be overcome; yet doutefull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already seene. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge should

have bene sharply visited, but that the aunswere was as quicke as the objection. Yet some lighting; the smarte bred rage, and the rage bred smarte againe: till both sides beginning to waxe faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to live victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake *Palladius* upon the side of the head, that he reelde astonied: and withall the helmet fell of, he remaying bare headed: but other of the *Arcadians* were redie to shield him from any harme might rise of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in steed of pursuing that advauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliver the pommell of his sworde, in token of yeelding, with all speaking aloud unto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his prisoner, then any others generall. *Palladius* standing upon him selfe, and misdoubting some craft, and the *Helots* (that were next their captaine) wavering betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, saide the captaine, hath *Palladius* forgotten the voice of *Daiphantus*?

By that watche worde *Palladius* knew that it was his onely 9 friende *Pyrocles*, whome he had lost upon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of joye then wonder, caused the retraite to be sounded, *Daiphantus* by authoritie, and *Palladius* by persuasion; to which helped well the little advauntage that was of eyther side: and that of the *Helots* partie their Captaines behaviour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the *Arcadian* side the good olde *Kalander* striving more then his old age could atchieve, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe 10 parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious sightes one from the other. But he that tooke *Kalander*, meant nothing lesse then to save him, but onelie so long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreit to be sounded: looking for no other deliverie from that captivitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whome should he see nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the *Arcadians*) but his sonne *Clitophon*? But nowe the Captaine had caused all the principall *Helots* to be assembled, as well to deliberate

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

what they had to do, as to receive a message from the *Arcadians*; Amōg whom *Palladius* vertue (besides the love *Kalander* bare him) having gottē principall authoritie, he had perswaded them to seeke rather by parley to recover the Father and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (where-with he was of old acquainted) made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therfore was donne in orderly manner, giving them to understand, that as they came but to deliver *Clitophon*, so offering to leave the footing they already had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurte, so as they might have the father, & the sonne without raunsome delivered. Which conditions beyng heard and conceaved by the *Helots*, *Daiphantus* perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can bee deare unto you: if you winne, it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our selves that same badde humour of revenge. Besides, it is like to stirre *Arcadia* uppon us, which now, by using these persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, least the king and nobility of *Laconia* (with whom now we have made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of this quarrell to joyne the *Arcadians* with them, & so breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in al deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with the harme of the evill successe) you shall find this way most safe and honorable.

- 10 The *Helots* asmuch moved by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were content therewith. Wherupon, *Palladius* tooke order that the *Arcadians* should presently march out of the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and so avoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarel might engēder. This being on both sides concluded on, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, who now (with infinite joy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of *Daiphantus*: *Clitophon* telling his father, how *Daiphantus* (not without danger to himselfe) had preserved him from the furious malice of the *Helots*: & even that day going to conclude the

peace (least in his absence he might receive some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, upon promise he should take the parte of the *Helots*; which he had in this fight perfourmed, little knowing that it was against his father: but (said *Clitophon*) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saved me from many deaths, which already laid hold on me: which *Kalander* with teares of joy acknowledged (besides his owne deliverance) onely his benefite. But *Daiphantus*, who loved doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know how *Palladius* (for so he called *Mysidorus*) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiving a brief declaration of *Kalander*, he sent him word by *Clitophon*, that he should not as now come unto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the *Helots* minds, that he would adventure him in their power, who was so well knownen with an unfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to return with *Kalander*, whether also he within few daies (having dispatched himselfe of the *Helots*) would repaire. *Kalander* would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, protesting, he would esteme his house more blessed thẽ a temple of the gods, if it had once received him. And then desiring pardon for *Argalus*, *Daiphantus* assured them that hee woulde die, but hee woulde bring him, (though till then kept in close prison, indeed for his safetie, the *Helots* being so animated against him as els hee could not have lived) and so taking their leave of him, *Kalander*, *Clitophon*, *Palladius* and the rest of the *Arcadians* swearing that they would no further in any sorte molest the *Helots*, they straight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were alreadie within the limits of *Arcadia*.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 7.

*The articles of peace betwene the Lacedæmonians & Helots,  
2 Daiphātus his departure frō the Helots with Argalus to  
Kalanders house. 3 The offer of a straunge Lady to Argalus  
4 his refusal, and 5 who she was.*

THE *Helots* of the other side shutting their gates, gave them selves to burye their dead, to cure their woundes, and rest their weered bodies: till (the next day bestowing the chereful use of the light upon them) *Daiphantus* making a generall convocation spake unto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) have delivered us out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie swallowed. For all being lost, (had they had not directed, my return so just as they did) it had bene too late to recover that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne betweene us, you may easily conceive, what little reason we have to think, but that either by some supplie out of *Arcadia*, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would have made fruites of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should have had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorow. But now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining *Clitophon* more hardly then his age or quarrell deserved, becomes a sharply learned experience, to use in other times more moderation.

I Now have I to deliver unto you the conclusion between the Kings with the Nobilitie of *Lacedæmon*, and you; which is in all points as your selves desired: aswell for that you would have graunted, as for the assurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you presently have, are still left unto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay such dueties as the rest of the *Laconians* doo. Your selves are made by publique decree, free men, and so capable both to give and receive voice in election of



Magistrates. The distinction of names betweene *Helots* and *Lacedæmonians* to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enjoy both names and priviledges of *Laconians*. Your children to be brought up with theirs in *Spartane* discipline : and so you (framing your selves to be good members of that estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer servaunts.

Which conditions you see, cary in themselves no more contentation then assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly, a forgetfulness decreed of of all what is past, they shewing themselves glad to have so valiant men as you are, joynd with them : so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of war is finished ; and as you hated them before like oppressours, so now to love them as brothers ; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your joyning. But now one Article onely they stood upon, which in the end I with your commissioners have agreed unto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king *Amiclas* procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kil his nephew *Eurileon* ; but how soever it be, I have condiscended. But so will not wee cryed almost the whole assemblie, coũcelling one an other, rather to trye the uttermost event, then to loose him by whõ they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferree such an opportunity before a vaine affection ; but yet could not prevaile, til openly he sware, that he would (if at any time the *Lacedæmonians* brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setling them in perfect order, hee 2 tooke his leave of them, whose eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and after making temples unto him as to a demi-God : thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to have a witt so farre overgoing his age, and such dreadful terror proceed from so excellent beutie. But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for *Argalus*, whom also (uppon oath never to beare armes against the *Helots*) he delivered : and taking onely with him certaine principall Jewells of his owne, he would have parted alone with *Argalus*, (whose

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

countenaunce well shewed, while *Parthenia* was lost he counted not himselfe delivered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into *Arcadia*. Where again leaving thẽ all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the wel-knowne house of *Kalander* : There was he received with loving joye of *Kalander*, with joyfull love of *Palladius*, with humble (though doulfull) demeanor of *Argalus* (whom specially both he and *Palladius* regarded) with gratefull servisablenes of *Clitophon*, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to have no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashfull kinde of modestie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was unmooved with sight of the most horrible countenaunces of death ; and as if nature had mistaken her woorke to have a *Marses* heart in a *Cupides* bodye : All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they had seene the uttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder *Palladius* had before stirred, but that *Daiphantus*, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the advantage in the moyst & fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all men (saving poore *Argalus*) made the joy of their eyes speake for their harts towards *Daiphantus* : Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleasaunt adventure among thẽ.

- 3 It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to *Kalander* a messenger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the fair *Helen* Queene of *Corinth* ; was come thether, and desired to be lodged in his house. *Kalander* (most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie guests with him, saving onely *Argalus*, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken up, that he might goe in his solitarie quest after *Parthenia*. But when they met this Lady ; *Kalander* streight thought he sawe his neece *Parthenia*, and was about in such familiar sorte to have spoken unto her : But she in grave and honorable manner giving him to understand that he was mistaken, he halfe ashamed, excused himselfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion ; shee said,

it might very well be, having bene many times taken one for an other. But assoone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest her, she desired to speake with *Argalus* publickly, who she heard was in the house. *Argalus* came in hastely, and as hastelie thought as *Kalander* had done, with sodaine chaunges of joye into sorrow. But she whē she had stayd their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this sort spake unto him. My Lord *Argalus*, sayd she, being of late left in the court of Queene *Helen* of *Corinth*, as chiefe in her absence (she being upō some occasion gone thēce) there came unto me the Lady *Parthenia*, so disguysed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so ougly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was *Parthenia*. Yet at last finding certenly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had ever told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betweene us, I tooke the best care I could of her: and of her understood the whole tragicall historie of her undeserved adventure: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord *Argalus*: which whosoever loves not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and unworthie to live in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salve the inward sore of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly desiring, and perswading me, to thinke of no husbände but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loved; with-all, she gave me this Ring to deliver you; desiring you, & by the authoritie of love cōmaunding you, that the affection you bare her you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who shuld rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceding: and therfore I am come (with faithfull love built upō your worthines) to offer my self, & to beseech you to accept the offer: & if these noble gētleme presēt will say it is great folly, let thē withal, say it is great love. And then she staid, earnestly attending *Argalus* his answer, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could, to *Parthenia*) thus answered her.

Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I unto you, for this, 4

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

no more rare, then noble courtesie ; but most bound for the goodnes I perceiue you shewed to the lady *Parthenia*, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes ; but he followed on) and as much as so unfortunat a man, fitte to be the spectacle of miserie, can doo you service ; determine you have made a purchase of a slave (while I live) never to fayle you. But this great matter you propose unto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see what happines it should be unto mee ; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to give, you before al other, should have it ; but *Parthenias* it is, though dead : there I began, there I end all matter of affection : I hope I shall not long tarry after her, with whose beautie if I had onely been in love, I should be so with you, who have the same beautie : but it was *Parthenias* selfe I loved, and love ; which no likenes can make one, no cōmaundement dissolve, no foulnes defile, nor no death finish. And shall I receive (said she) such disgrace, as to be refused ? Noble Ladie (said he) let not that harde word be used ; who know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert : but it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happines I could and can desire, I am refused.

5 He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbrasing him, Why then *Argalus* (saide she) take thy *Parthenia* ; and *Parthenia* it was in deede. But because sorow forbad him too soon to beleeeve, she told him the trueth, with all circumstances ; how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitarie place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the *Queen Helen of Corinth* (who likewise felt her part of miseries) being then walking also alone in that lovely place, heard her, and never left, till she had knowen the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pittying, she sent her to a Phisition of hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could helpe her : which in such sorte as they saw perfourmed, and she taking with her of the *Queenes* servaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true *Parthenia*, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the *Corinthian* Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and *Argalus* easily perswaded to what more then ten thousand yeares of life he desired : and *Kalander* would needes have the mariage celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare guesstes, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of

hospitalitie) carried with love and dutie : & therefore omitted no service that his wit could invent, and his power minister.

## CHAP. 8.

*The adventures <sup>1</sup> first of Musidorus, <sup>2</sup> then of Pyrocles since their shipwracke, to their meeting. <sup>3</sup> The mariage of Argalus and Parthenia.*

BUt no waie he sawe he could so much pleasure them, as by leaving the two friends alone, who being shruncke aside to the banqueting house where the pictures were ; there *Palladius* recounted unto him, that after they had both abādoned the burning ship (& either of them taken some thing under him the better to supporte him to the shore) he knew not how, but either with over-labouring in the fight and sodaine colde, or the too much receaving of salt water, he was past himselfe; but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to doo) the chest that was under him, he was cast on the sandes, where he was taken up by a couple of Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him selfe, when he despaired of his safetie. How after having failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the Shepheards persuasion come to this Gentlemans house ; where being daungerouslie sicke, he had yeilded to seeke the recovery of health, onely for that he might the sooner go seeke the deliverie of *Pyrocles* : to which purpose *Kalander* by some friends of his in *Messenia*, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of *Clitophons* taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. Thē did he set foorth unto him the noble entertainment and careful cherishing of *Kalander* towards him, & so upon occasiō of the pictures present delivered with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what *Kalander* had told him touching the strange storie (with al the particularities belonging) of *Arcadia*, which did in many sortes so delight *Pyrocles* to heare ; that he would needs have much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till *Kalander* him selfe had answered him divers questions.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

2 But first at *Musidorus* request, though in brief māner, his mind much running upō the strange storie of *Arcadia*, he did declare by what course of advētures he was come to make up their mutuall happinesse in meeting. When (cosin, said he) we had stript our selves, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swom a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of the shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came alive to the shore, you would seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perishe as to live, so that place as good to perish in as an other. There I found my sworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall waving it about my head, that saylers by it might have the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken up by Pyrates, who putting me under boorde prisoner, presentlie sett uppon another shippe, and mainteining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the sworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie prayse one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as love is carefull, and misfortune subject to doubtfulness) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I sought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwise I would have bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kinges of *Lacedæmon* having sett out some Galleys, under the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with us, where our Captaine wanting men, was driven to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kil *Eurileon* the Kings nephew: but in the end they prevailed, & we were all takē prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of *Daiphantus*, according to the resolution you know is betweene us,) but beyng laid in the jayle of *Tenaria*, with speciall hate to me for the death of *Eurileon*, the popular sort of that towne conspired with the *Helots*, and so by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so delivered me; and I mooved with gratefulnesse,

and encouraged with carelesnesse of life, so behaved my selfe in some conflictes they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking unsensible wonders of mee, and withall so much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of *Lacedæmon*, (their chiefe Captayne beyng slaine as you knowe by the noble *Argalus*, who helped thereunto by his perswasion) having borne a great affection unto me, and to avoyde the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who should have the place, and all so affected, as rather to have a straunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie,) restoring unto mee such thinges of mine as being taken first by the pyrates, and then by the *Lacedæmonians*, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my successe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you delivered *Clitophon*, whom I with much adoo had preserved. And in my peace the King *Amiclas* of *Lacedæmon* would needes have mee bannished, and deprived of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to travaile over the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere *Musidorus*) you have mee. And with that (embracing and kissinge each other) they called *Kalander*, of whom *Daiphantus* desired to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to *Palladius*, and to see the letter of *Philanax*, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene *Argalus* 3 and the faire *Parthenia* beyng to be celebrated, *Daiphantus* and *Palladius* selling some of their jewels, furnished themselves of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their loving hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges so much beautifie, nor all the daintie devises so much delight, as the fairenesse of *Parthenia*, the pearle of all the maydes of *Martinæa*: who as shee went to the Temple to bee married, her eyes themselves seemed a temple, wherein love and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepte close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to invite

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the guesstes that lookt on them; her cheekes blushing, and withal when shee was spoken unto, a little smilyng, were like roses, when their leaves are with a little breath stirred: her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare shewe as if the voward fayled, yet that would conquere. *Daiphantus* marking her, O *Jupiter* (said he speaking to *Palladius*) how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to *Arcadia*? But *Palladius* not greatly attending his speech, some daies were continued in the solemnising the marriage, with al conceipts that might deliver delight to mens fancies.

### CHAP. 9.

<sup>1</sup> *Pyrocles his inclination to love.* <sup>2</sup> *His, and Musidorus disputation thereabouts* <sup>3</sup> *broken of by Kalander.*

<sup>1</sup> **B**UT such a chaunge was growen in *Daiphantus*, that (as if cheerefulness had bene tediousnesse, and good entertainment were turnd to discourtesie) he would ever get him selfe alone, though almost when he was in companie he was alone, so little attention he gave to any that spake unto him: even the colour and figure of his face began to receive some alteration; which he shewed little to heede: but everie morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods towards the desert, it seemed his only comfort was to be without a cōforter. But long it could not be hid from *Palladius*, whom true love made redy to marke, & long knowledge able to marke; & therfore being now growē weary of his abode in *Arcadia*, having informed himselfe fully of the strength & riches of the cōtry, of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes: and, seing the courte could not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapheardish people, he greatly desired a speedy returne to his own cōtrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden. But perceaving this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to hasten his returne; whereto he founde him but smally enclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say unto him.



A mind wel trayned and long exercised in vertue (my sweete 2  
and worthy cosin) doth not easily chaunge any course it once  
undertakes, but upon well grounded & well wayed causes. For  
being witnes to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes  
nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be  
altered. Even the very countenance and behaviour of such a  
man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by main-  
taining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in  
yeelding it selfe sutable to the vertuous resolution of the minde.  
This speech I direct to you (noble friend *Pyrocles*) the excel-  
lencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo  
not sufficiently know, having seene such rare demonstrations of  
it, it is my weakenes, and not your unworthines. But as in  
deede I know it, and knowing it, most dearly love both it,  
and him that hath it; so must I needs saye, that since our late  
comming into this country, I have marked in you, I will not say  
an alteratiō, but a relenting truely, & a slacking of the maine  
career, you had so notably begon, & almost performed; and  
that in such sorte, as I cannot finde sufficient reason in my great  
love toward you how to allow it; for (to leave of other secreter  
arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me easily  
finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyfest, that whereas  
you were wont in all places you came, to give your selfe  
vehemently to the knowledge of those things which might  
better your minde; to seeke the familiaritie of excellent men in  
learning and souldiery: and lastly, to put all these things in  
practise both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie  
enterprises, as occasion fell for them; you now leave all these  
things undone: you let your minde fal a sleepe: beside your  
countenance troubled (which surely comes not of vertue; for  
vertue like the cleare heaven, is without cloudes) and lastly (you  
subject your selfe to solitarines, the slye enimie, that doth most  
separate a man from well doing.) *Pyrocles* minde was all this  
while so fixed upon another devotion, that he no more at-  
tentively marked his friends discourse, then the childe that  
hath leave to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the  
diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempest doth attend the unskilful  
words of a passinger: yet the very sound having imprinted the  
general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike  
of so deere an esteemed friend, and desirous by degrees to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (witnessing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose. Excellent *Musidorus*, in the praise you gave me in the beginning of your spech, I easily acknowledge the force of your good will unto mee, for neither coulde you have thought so well of me, if extremitie of love had not made your judgement partiall, nor you could have loved me so intierlie, if you had not beene apt to make so great (though undeserved) judgements of me; and even so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I have ever through weaknes been subject, yet you by the daily mēding of your mind have of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not discerne; so that the chaunge you speake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your betring. And yet under the leave of your better judgement, I must needes say thus much, my deere cosin, that I find not my selfe wholye to be condemned, because I do not with continuall vehemēcy folow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it selfe must (like other thinges) sometimes be unbent, or else it will be either weakned, or broken: And these knowledges, as they are of good use, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe unto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Trulie as I know not all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led unto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselves. And in such contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enjoye my solitarines; and my solitarines perchaunce is the nurse of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and (they are but sheepe, which alwaies heard together;) cōdemne not therefore my minde somtime to enjoy it selfe; nor blame not the taking of such times as serve most fitte for it. And alas, deere *Musidorus*, if I be sadde, who knowes better then you the just causes I have of sadnes? And here *Pyrocles* sodainly stopped, like a man unsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might wel have served to have satisfied another. And so looking with a countenance, as though he desired he should know his minde without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward evill, sending againe new

blood to his face, he continued his speach in this manner. And Lord (dere cosin, said he) doth not the pleasauntnes of this place carry in it selfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you not see how all things conspire together to make this coütry a heavenly dwelling? Do you not see the grasse how in colour they excell the Emeralds, everie one striving to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expresse? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their florishing olde age with the onely happines of their seat, being clothed with a continuall spring, because no beautie here should ever fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweet cōsent of their voyces? Is not every *eccho* therof a perfect Musicke? and these fresh and delightful brookes how slowly they slide away, as loth to leave the company of so many things united in perfection? and with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainelie, certainly, cosin, it must needes be that some Goddess enhabiteth this Region, who is the soule of this soile: for neither is any, lesse then a Goddess, worthie to be shrined in such a heap of pleasures: nor any lesse thē a Goddess, could have made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiall dwellings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rufully casting his eye upon *Musidorus*, as more desirous of pittie thē pleading. But *Musidorus* had all this while helde his looke fixed upon *Pyrocles* countenance; and with no lesse loving attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceived such strange diversities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gave him ground to settle any judgement: for, besides his eyes sometimes even great with teares, the oft chāging of his colour, with a kind of shaking unstayednes over all his body, he might see in his countenāce some great determinatiō mixed with feare; and might perceive in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which served as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wōted phrase) not knit together to one constāt end, but rather dissolved in it selfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde passion prevayled: which made *Musidorus* frame his aunswere nearest to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For, having in the beginning of *Pyrocles* speech which defēded his solitarines, framed in his minde a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of cōtēplatiō is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in actiō a man did not onely better himself, but benefit others; that the gods would not have delivered a soule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instrumēts of doing, but that it wer intēded the mind should imploy thē; & that the mind should best know his own good or evill, by practise: which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeelded to the sharpnes of his wit. When he found *Pyrocles* leave that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and joyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor utter more store of passion; and even thus kindly embrasing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitarinesse, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe up into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enjoy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be perswaded to follow solitarines. And even so doo I give you leave (sweet *Pyrocles*) ever to defend solitarines; so long, as to defende it, you ever keep companie. But I marvell at the excessive praises you give to this countrie; in trueth it is not unpleasant: but yet if you would returne into *Macedon*, you should see either many heavens, or find this no more then earthly. And evē *Tempe* in my *Thessalia*, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought up together) is nothing inferiour unto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subject: or els you feede sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easilie travaile over mountaines, as molehills: and so like wel disposed men, set up every thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fantasticall mind-infected people, that children & Musitiās cal Lovers. This word, Lover, did no lesse pearce poore *Pyrocles*, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sick of the *Tarantula*. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a sodaine

motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sounde of that word; yet after some pause (lifting up his eyes a litle from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of *Musidorus*) armed with the verie countenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as even that miserable subject of his conning, whereof you speake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out *Musidorus*) that ever my eare should be poysoned with so evill newes of you. O let me never know that any base affectiō shuld get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, *Kalander* came, and brake of their discourse, with inviting thē to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which beeing harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good sporte, and drive away some part of *Daiphantus* melancholy. They condescended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished thē selves as liked them *Daiphantus* writing a few wordes which he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.

- <sup>1</sup> *Kalanders hunting.* <sup>2</sup> *Daiphantus his close departure,* <sup>3</sup> *and letter*  
<sup>4</sup> *Palladius his care, and* <sup>5</sup> *quest after him,* <sup>6</sup> *accompanied with*  
*Clitophon.* <sup>7</sup> *His finding and taking on Amphilus his*  
*armor* <sup>8</sup> *Their encounter with Queene Helens attendants.*  
<sup>9</sup> *Her mistaking Palladius.*

Then went they together abroad, the good *Kalander* entertaining thē, with pleasaunt discoursing, howe well he loved the sporte of hunting when he was a young man, how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights; that the Sunne (how great a jornie soever he had to make) could never prevent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) dissuade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding. O, saide he, you will never live to my age, without you kepe your selves in breath with

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

exercise, and in hart with joyfullnes: (too much thinking doth consume the spirits : & oft it fallés out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaves to doe the effect of his thinking.) Then spared he not to remember how much *Arcadia* was chaunged since his youth : activitie & good felowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. Thē would he tell them stories of such gallaunts as he had knowen : and so with pleasant company beguiled the times hast, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining Accent craving libertie : many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it showed they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liveries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staves in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to sounde an alarum upon a sillie fugitive. The houndes were straight uncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimblenes of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging : but even his feete betrayed him ; for howsoever they went, they themselves uttered themselves to the sent of their enimies ; who one taking it of an other, and sometimes beleeving the windes advertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull councellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was already begun.

Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceive therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a musick. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horsmen sundrie wayes ; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citizens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters ; and even the Nymph *Echo* left to bewayle the losse of *Narcissus*, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leaving his flight) he was driven to make courage of despaire ; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifie that he was at bay : as if from hotte pursuite of their enemie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

But *Kalander* (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besiged Deere ; whom when some of the younger sort would have killed with their swordes, he woulde not suffer : but with a Crossebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the unkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie. *if unkindnesse?*

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, 2 and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among them that had killed him, *Daiphantus* was mist, for whom *Palladius* carefully enquiring, no newes could be given him, but by one that sayd, he thought he was returned home ; for that he markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by-way, which might lead to *Kalanders* house. That answer for the time satisfying, and they having perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned : some talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie ; some of the fairenes of his head ; some of the hounds cunning ; some of their speed ; and some of their cry : til comming home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit the Suns office) they found *Daiphantus* was not to bee found. Whereat *Palladius* greatly marvailing, and a day or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could help him to knowledge, at last he lighted upon the letter, which *Pyrocles* had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his studie among other of his writings. The letter was directed to *Palladius* himselfe, and conteyned these words. *Diff-*

My onely friend, violence of love leades me into such a 3 course, wherof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, since : if I wrong you, it is in respect I beare you. Returne into *Thessalia*, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of desire : and if I live, I will in short time follow you ; if I die, love my memorie.

This was all, and this *Palladius* read twise or thrise over. 4 Ah (said he) *Pyrocles*, what meanes this alteratiō ? what have I deserved of thee, to be thus banished of thy counsels ? Heretofore I have accused the sea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my evill fortune, that deprived me of thee ; But now thy self is the sea, which drounes my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes thy selfe of me : Thy owne will becomes my evill fortune. Thē turned he his thoughts to al forms of ghessees that might light upon the purpose and course of *Pyrocles* : for he

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

was not so sure by his wordes, that it was love, as he was doubtful where the love was. One time he thought, some beautie in *Laconia* had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of objections rising against any accepted opinion.

- 5 Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, never to leave seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting accōplished, or by death ended. Therfore (for all the unkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secrete determination should be kept from any suspition in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receaved a message from his friend, by which he understood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had undertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such private wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe choise jewels, leaving the greatest number of them, & most of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to give the more cause to *Kalander* to expect their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitive after thē: and partly to leave those honorable thanks unto him, for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way receive. The good old man having neither reason to dissuade, nor hope to persuade, receaved the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might have the happines, fully to know what they were: which he said, he had ever till then delaid, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be so much an enemie to his desires as any longer to imprison thē in silence. *Palladius* tolde him that the matter was not so secrete, but that so worthie a friend deserved the knowledge, and shuld have it as soone as he might speak with his friēd: without whose consent (because their promise bound him otherwise) he could not reveale it: but bad him hold for most assured, that if they lived but a while, he should find that they which bare the names of *Daiphātus* and *Palladius*, would



give him & his cause to thinke his noble courtesie wel imploied. *Kalāder* would presse him no further: but desiring that he might have leave to go, or at least to sende his sonne and servaunts with him, *Palladius* brake of all ceremonies, by telling him; his case stood so, that his greatest favour should be in making lest adoo of his parting. Wherewith *Kalander* knowing it to be more cumber then courtesie, to strive, abstained from further urging him, but not from hartie mourning the losse of so sweet a conversation.

Onely *Clitophon* by vehement importunitie obteyned to go with him, to come againe to *Daiphantus*, whom he named and accoūted his Lord. And in such private guise departed *Palladius*, though having a companiō to talke with all, yet talking much more with unkindnesse. And first they went to *Martinæa*; whereof because *Parthenia* was, he suspected there might be some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes of him he went to *Tegæa*, *Ripa*, *Enispæ*, *Stimphalus*, and *Pheneus*, famous for the poisonous *Stygian* water, and through all the rest of *Arcadia*, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongue serve almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of those places he was knowne. And so went they, making one place succeed to an other, in like uncertaintie to their search, manie times encountring strange advētures, worthy to be registred in the roulles of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of either side of which high hils lifted up their beetle-browes, as if they would over looke the pleasantnes of their under-prospect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of thēselves, invited to light frō their horses; & pulling of their bits, that they might something refresh their mouths upon the grasse (which plentifully grewe, brought up under the care of those wel shading trees,) they thēselves laid thē downe hard by the murmuring musicke of certain waters, which spouted out of the side of the hils, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion of sleepe, they rose, and walkt onward in that shadie place, till *Clitiphon* espied a peece of armour, & not far of an other peece: and so the sight of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpeece & shield, by the devise

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whereof, which was he streight knew it to be the armour of his cōusin, the noble *Amphialus*. Wherupon (fearing some incōvenience hapned unto him) he told both his doubt, and his cause of doubt to *Palladius*, who (considering therof) thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on : least perchance some violēce were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to set in ballance with any Knight living. Yet with a sodaine conceipt, having long borne great honour to the name of *Amphialus*, *Palladius* thought best to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that should know that armour, some newes of *Amphialus*, & yet not hinder him in the search of *Daiphantus* too. So he by the help of *Clitophon* quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too great, but yet served well enough.

- 8 And so getting on their horses, they travailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses, furnished all in blacke, with a black a more boy upō every horse, they al apparelled in white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black & white. But before they could come so neere as to discerne what was within, there came running upō them above a dozen horsmen, who cried to thē to yeeld thēselves prisoners, or els they should die. But *Palladius* not accustomed to grant over the possessiō of him self upon so unjust titles, with sword drawne gave them so rude an answer, that divers of thē never had breath to reply again : for being wel backt by *Clitophon*, & having an excellēt horse under him, when he was overprest by some, he avoided them, and ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellowes faults : and so, ether with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either living, or able to make his life serve to others hurt. Which being done, he approached the coach, assuring the black boies they should have no hurt, who were els readie to have run away, & looking into the coach, he fōūd in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but al as much darkened, as might be, with sorow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well,

they were but her servants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gētleman (whom he knew not) painted, having in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie having not so much as once heard the noise of this cōflict (so had sorow closed up al the entries of her mind, & love tied her sēces to that beloved picture) now the shadow of him falling upō the picture made her cast up her eie, and seeing the armour which too wel she knew, thinking him to be *Amphialus* the Lord of her desires, (bloud cōming more freely into her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for feare) with a pitiful looke (like one unjustly condēned) My Lord *Amphialus* (said she) you have enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leave you, & evil fortune me; if not I pray you, (& to graunt, my praier fitter time nor place you can have) accomplish the one even now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be slowly uttered in her oftē staying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares, that *Palladius* could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet, Madame (said he) I perceave you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set upon (without any cause givē by me) by some of your servants, whom because I have in my just defence evill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo, I find greater cause, why I should crave pardon of you. When she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, and seing her men, some slaine, some lying under their dead horses, and striving to get from under them, without making more account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are well served that durst lift up their armes against that armour. But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then have I more to say unto you. *Palladius* assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately used. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowes hath bereft me of my cōpany: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selfe hath given, as to garde me to the next towne. How great so ever my businesse be fayre Ladie (said he) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first even by the favour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour, I conjure

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

you to tell me the storie of your fortune herein, lest hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so straunge a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my selfe of want of consideration in not having demaunded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sworde and faith may availe you, they shall binde themselves to your service. Your conjuration, fayre Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one unrelieveable) to graunt your wil herein: and to say the truth, a straunge nicenesse were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a person representing so much worthinesse, which I am glad even to rockes and woods to utter.

## CHAP. II.

*The story of Queene Helen <sup>2</sup> Philoxenus her suiter \* Amphialus an intercessor for his friende. <sup>4</sup> His praises, <sup>5</sup> birth, and <sup>6</sup> education. <sup>7</sup> Her love wonne to himselfe <sup>8</sup> His refusall and departure <sup>9</sup> Philoxenus wronge-rage against him. <sup>10</sup> Their fight. <sup>11</sup> The death of sonne and father. <sup>12</sup> Amphialus his sorrow and detestation of the Queene. <sup>13</sup> A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour: <sup>14</sup> whose grieffe is amplified by meeting his dead friends dog. <sup>15</sup> Palladius his parting with Helen and Clitophon.*

**K** Now you then that my name is *Helen*, Queene by birth: and hetherto possession of the faire Citie and territorie of *Corinth*. I can say no more of my selfe, but beloved of my people: and may justly say, beloved, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receive; assoone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suiters; some perchaunce loving my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoever my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom ether birth or vertue gave courage to avowe so high a desire.

Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord 2  
*Philoxenus*, sonne and heire to the vertuous noble man *Timotheus* :  
 which *Timotheus* was a man both in power, riches, parentage,  
 and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all  
 these) love of the people, beyond any of the great men of my  
 countrie. Now this sonne of his I must say truly, not unwor-  
 thy of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of servise-  
 ablenes to mee, and setting foorth of himselfe to win my favour,  
 wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him then  
 any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenance  
 delivered unto him. Though I must protest it was a verie  
 false embassadour, if it delivered at all any affection, whereof my  
 hart was utterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule,  
 & thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whiles *Philoxenus* in good sorte pursued my favour, and 3  
 perchaunce nourished himselfe with over much hope, because  
 he found I did in some sorte acknowledge his vawle, one time  
 among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his.  
 With that she looked upon the picture before her, & straight  
 sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought  
 to be honoured with such oblations, and thẽ her speach staied  
 the tale, having brought her to that loke, but that looke having  
 quite put her out of her tale. But *Palladius* greatly pitying so  
 sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already  
 knowen, and honoured, besought her for her promise sake, to  
 put silence so longe unto her moning, til she had recounted the  
 rest of this story.

Why said she, this is the picture of *Amphialus* : what neede 4  
 I say more to you? what eare is so barbarous but hath hard of  
*Amphialus*? who follows deeds of Armes, but every where  
 findes monumẽt of *Amphialus*? who is courteous, noble, liberall,  
 but he that hath the example before his eyes of *Amphialus*?  
 where are all heroicall parts, but in *Amphialus*? O *Amphialus* I  
 would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee  
 not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so : with  
 that she wept againe, til he againe solliciting the conclusion of  
 her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of *Am-  
 phialus* : for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed,  
 in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of  
*Amphialus*?

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

5 This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to *Basilus* King of *Arcadia*, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till *Basilus* in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cosin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of *Argos*, either disdainig, or fearing, that her sonne should live under the power of *Basilus* sent him to that Lorde *Timotheus* (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought up in company with his sonne *Philoxenus*?

6 A happie resolution for *Amphialus*, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could have, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre unworthie of such a sonne) would not have given him. The good *Timotheus* no lesse loving him then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres; and shortly occasions fell aptly to trie *Amphialus*, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour overcame: which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his māhood, yet, as though therein he excelled him selfe, he was cōmonly called the courteous *Amphialus*. An endlesse thing it were for me to tell, how many adventures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieved: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes using policy, some times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by *Philoxenus*: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last *Philoxenus* having no greater matter to employ his frindship in, then to winne me, therein desired, and had his uttermost furtheraunce: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may justly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceive (and his wit can conceave as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forward the suite of his friend *Philoxenus*: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of *Philoxenus*, and of the great happines it would be unto me to have such a husband: with many arguments, which

God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleeve.

For why should I use many circūstances to come to that 7  
where alredy I am, and ever while I live must continue? In  
fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for  
himselfe: if at least (with that she sighed) he would account it  
a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that  
his presence so full of beauty, sweetnes, and noble conversation,  
had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes.  
O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake!  
O when he in feeling maner would describe the love of his  
frend, how well (thought I) dooth love betweene those lips!  
when he would with daintiest eloquence stirre pitie in me to-  
ward *Philoxenus*, why sure (said I to my selfe) *Helen*, be not  
afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol  
the deeds of *Philoxenus*, who indeede had but waited of him  
therin, alas (thought I) good *Philoxenus*, how evil doth it become  
thy name to be subscribed to his letter? What should I say?  
nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed,  
nay am delighted, thus to expresse mine owne passions?

Dayes paste; his eagernes for his friende never decreased, 8  
my affection to him ever increased. At length, in way of  
ordinarie courtesie, I obtained of him (who suspected no such  
matter) this his picture, the only *Amphialus*, I feare that I shall ever  
enjoy: and growen bolder, or madder, or bould with madnes, I  
discovered my affection unto him. But, Lord, I shall never  
forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his  
eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he  
taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing unassayed,  
which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his frēd; in sweet  
termes making me receive a most resolute refusal of himself.  
But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for  
himselfe, then his speeche could doo for his frend, he left my  
court: hoping, that forgetfulnesse (which commonly waits upon  
absence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome he  
woulde not utter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to  
grieve him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a  
certaine honorable gratefulness, nor yet to discourse so much of  
my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to travell into farre  
countreyes, untill his friends affection either ceased, or prevayled.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

9 But within a while, *Philoxenus* came to see how onward the fruites were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenance, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found jelousie and disdaine tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chieftest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my favor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for *Amphialus*, as well as *Amphialus* had done for him: he never answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgave me some evill successe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to have stayed him (as in these fatall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes unwittingly accessarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whose faithfulness to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) have brought forth that which I feare I must ever rewe.

10 For he had travailed scarce a dayes journey out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he overtooke *Amphialus*, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had bene here stayed: and by and by called him to fight with him, protesting that one of the two should die: you may easily judge how straunge it was to *Amphialus*, whose hart could accuse it selfe of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine have made *Philoxenus* understand, but (as my servant since tolde me) the more *Amphialus* went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet never telling the cause of this strange alteration. Ah *Philoxenus* (saide *Amphialus*) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with this much, and let this satisfie thee, that I love thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leaving words drew his sworde, and gave *Amphialus* a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would have slaine him: and yet so farre did *Amphialus* containe himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him, Well *Philoxenus*, and thus much villany am I content to put up, not any longer for thy sake (whom I have no cause to love,



since thou dost injure me, and wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy servant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake so fiercely at *Amphialus*, that in the end (nature prevailing above determination) he was faine to defend him selfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an unluckye blow the poore *Philoxenus* fell dead at his feete; having had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby *Amphialus* knew it was for my sake: which when *Amphialus* sawe, he forthwith gave such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my servant said, no imagination could conceive greater woe. But that by and by, an unhappie occasion made *Amphialus* passe himselfe in sorrow: for *Philoxenus* was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous *Timotheus*, who (having heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he found him dead before he could over take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is even unable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing *Amphialus* and *Timotheus* as I have done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in *Amphialus*, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine upon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for *Timotheus*, sorow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) unkindnes of *Amphialus* so devoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but *Amphialus, Amphialus*, have I? he sancke to the earth, and presently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily used to complaints; no 12  
nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tonges, durst it under-take to shew the unspeakeablenes of his griefe. But (because this serves to make you know my fortune,) he threw away his armour, even this which you have now upon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and thẽ (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lamẽting, & even crying out so pityfully, that my seruant, (though of a fortune not used to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he tolde it

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

me. He once overtooke him, but *Amphialus* drawing his sword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he caried about him, threatned to kill him if he folowed him, and withall, bad him deliver this bitter message, that he wel inough foūd, I was the cause of al this mischief: & that if I were a man, he would go over the world to kill me: but bad me assure my selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight (whose eares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes) how way my case, if at lest you know what love is. For this cause have I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, advēturing what perils or dishonors might ensue, only to folow him, who proclaimeth hate against me, and to bring my neck unto him, if that may redeem my trespas & assuage his fury. And now sir (said she) you have your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. *Palladius* willingly cōdiscēded: but ere they began to go, there cam *Clitophon*, who having bene something hurt by one of them, had pursued him a good way: at length overtaking him, & ready to kill him, understood they were servants to the faire Queene *Helen*, and that the cause of this enterprise was for nothing, but to make *Amphialus* prisoner, whō they knew their mistresse sought; for she concealed her sorow, nor cause of her sorow from no body.

- 13 But *Clitophon* (very sorie for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing frēdly cōstructiōs of this rashly undertaken enmitie, when in comes another (till that time unseene) all armed, with his bever downe, who first looking round about upon the companie, as soone as he spied *Palladius*, he drew his sword, and making no other prologue, let flie at him. But *Palladius* (sorie for so much harm as had alredy happened) sought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his harte he pitied. Which *Clitophon* seeing, stept betweene them, asking the new come knight the cause of his quarrell; who answered him, that he woulde kill that theefe, who had stollen away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that *Palladius* lookt upon him, and sawe that he of the other side had *Palladius*

owne armour upon him: truely (said *Palladius*) if I have stolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you shall not fight with me upon such a quarrell, you shall have this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But *Clitophon* straight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was *Ismenus*, the faithfull & diligent Page of *Amphialus*: and therefore telling him that he was *Clitophon*, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deserved all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kisse *Palladius* hands; desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreame grieffe, which easilie might bring foorth anger. Sweete Gentleman (saide *Palladius*) you shall onely make me this amendes, that you shal cary this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an unknowen knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot cast a greater miste over his glory, thẽ by being unkind to so excellēt a princesse as this Queene is. *Ismenus* promised he would, as soone as he durst find his maister: and with that went to doo his dutie to the Queene, whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardy; but assoone as she saw *Ismenus* (looking to her picture) *Ismenus* (said she) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said *Ismenus*, I haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came unto his eyes) for assoone as the unhappie combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me upō paine of death to follow him.

Yet divers daies I followed his steppes; till lastly I found <sup>14</sup> him, having newly met with an excellent Spaniel, belonging to his dead companion *Philoxenus*. The dog streight fawned on my master for old knowledge: but never was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for loving his maisters murtherer, renewing a fresh his cōplaints, with the dumbe counseller, as if they might cōfort one another in their miseries. But my Lord having spied me, rase up in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, if I would not displease him, I should not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a cōmaundement for me to disobey: I yellected, leaving him onely waited on by his dog, and

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in steed thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight living) armed my selfe therein to play the foole, as evē now I did. Faire *Ismenus* (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to unfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my ende.

- 15 With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where *Palladius* left her to be waited on by *Clitophon*, at *Palladius* earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with *Ismenus* (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he cōtinued his quest for his friend *Daiphantus*.

### ✠CHAP. 12.

<sup>1</sup>*Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie.* <sup>2</sup>*Her habite,* <sup>3</sup>*song,* <sup>4</sup>*and who she was.* <sup>5</sup>*Objections of the one against women, and love of them.* <sup>6</sup>*The answers of the other for them both.* <sup>7</sup>*Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindnesse.*

- 1 **S**O directed he his course to *Laconia*, aswell among the *Helots*, as *Spartans*. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraved in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the universall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the *Élean* province, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious loneliness, esteeming no bodie founde, since *Daiphantus* was lost. Afterward he passed through *Achaia* and *Sicyonia*, to the *Corinthians*, prowde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the streight of that *Isthmus*, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding everie place more dumbe then other to his demaunds, and remembring that it was late-taken love, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months travaile in vaine) to make freshe searche in *Arcadia*; so much the more, as then first he

bethought him selfe of the picture of *Philoclea* (in resembling her he had once loved) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing alreadie past over the greatest part of *Arcadia*, one day comming under the side of the pleasaunt mountaine *Mænalus*, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiveness) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete staves make speedie journeis. And therefore lighting downe, and unbridling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a little wood he sawe thereby. Where lying under the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which perswaded, and obteyned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face; but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceave the hanging of her haire in fairest 2 quãtities, in locks, some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a carelesse care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a paterne, whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearle, and so joyned all over with gold wiers, and covered with feathers of divers colours, that it was not unlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so bravely it was held up frõ the head. Vpon her bodie she ware a doublet of skie colour sattin, covered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with pretious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discern the smal of her leg, which with the foot was dressed in a short paire of crimson velvet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Over all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming under the right arme, and covering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely upon the top of the shoulder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche jewell: the devise wherof (as he after saw) was this: a *Hercules* made in little fourme, but a distaffe set within his hand as he

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

once was by *Omphales* commaundement with a worde in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, *Never more valiant*. On the same side, on her thigh shee ware a sword, which as it witnessed her to be an *Amazon*, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needles weapon, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so lovingly interlaced one the other, that it could resist the strögest violence of eye-sight; but she went into it by a doore she opened; which moved him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her sing this song, with a voice no lesse beautifull to his eares, then her goodlinesse was full of harmonie to his eyes.

- 3     **T***ransformd in shew, but more transformd in minde,  
I cease to strive with double conquest foild:  
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde  
With outward force, and inward treason spoild.*

*For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,  
Whereto mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;  
Both these conspird poore Reasons overthrowe;  
False in my selfe, thus have I lost the field.*

*Thus are my eyes still Captive to one sight:  
Thus all my thoughts are slaves to one thought still:  
Thus Reason to his servants yeelds his right;  
Thus is my power transformed to your will.  
What marvaile then I take a womans hew,  
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?*

- 4     The dittie gave him some suspicion, but the voice gave him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, he perceived in deed that it was *Pyrocles* thus disguised, wherewith not receaving so much joy to have found him, as grieve so to have found him, amazedly looking upon him (as *Apollo* is painted when he saw *Daphne* sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a worde. So that *Pyrocles* (who had as much shame, as *Musidorus* had sorrow) rising to him, would have formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinua-

tion being of blushing, and his division of sighes, his whole oration stood upon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time *Musidorus* had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gastfull countenance upon him (as if he would conjure some strange spirits) he thus spake unto him.

And is it possible, that this is *Pyrocles*, the onely yong Prince 5 in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercise of vertue? or is it indeed some *Amazon* that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vex me? for likelier sure I would have thought it, that any outwarde face might have bene disguised, then that the face of so excellēt a mind coulde have bene thus blemished. O sweete *Pyrocles*, separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke upon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fitt it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not onely expectation, but prooffe, desired of your olde Father, and wanted of your native countrie, now so neere your home, to divert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse; to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to overthrow all the excellent things you have done, which have filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired haven, or like an ill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie. Remember (for I know you know it) that if we wil be men, the reasonable parte of our soule, is to have absolute commaundement; against which if any sensuall weaknes arise, we are to yeelde all our sounde forces to the overthrowing of so unnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an adversary, that in it selfe is nothinge but weakenesse? Nay we are to resolve, that if reason direct it, we must doo it, and if we must doo it, we will doo it; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely every waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this womannish habit (without you frame your behaviour accordingly) is wholly vaine: your behaviour can never come kindly from you, but as the minde is proportioned unto it. So that you must resolve, if you will playe your parte to any purpose, whatsoever peevish affections are in that sexe, soften

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

your hart to receive them, the very first downe-steppe to all wickednes: for doo not deceive your selfe, my deere cosin, there is no man sodainely excellentlie good, or extremely evill, but growes either as hee holdes himselfe up in vertue, or lets himself slide to vitiousnes. And let us see, what power is the aucthor of all these troubles: forsooth love, love, a passion, and the basest and fruitlessest of all passions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: joy openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and so all generally have power towards some good by the direction of right Reason. But this bastarde Love (for in deede the name of Love is most unworthy-lie applied to so hatefull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt lust and idlenes; as the matter it workes upon is nothing, but a certaine base weakenes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adjoynded companions be unquietnes, longings, fond comforts, faint discomforts, hopes, ielousies, ungrounded rages, causlesse yeeldings; so is the hiest ende it aspires unto, a little pleasure with much paine before, and great repentaunce after. But that end how endlesse it runs to infinite evils, were fit inough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with *Kalander* and of friendship with me) it utterly subverts the course of nature, in making reason give place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-upon it first gatte the name of Love: for indeede the true love hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the lover into the thing loved, uniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of love imitate the excellent; for as the love of heaven makes one heavenly, the love of vertue, vertuous; so doth the love of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate love of a woman, doth so womanish a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an *Amazon*; but a launder, a distaff-spinner; or what so ever other vile occupation their idle heads cā imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but loving words) if either you remember what you are, what you have bene, or what you must be: if you cō-



sider what it is, that moved you, or by what kinde of creature you are moved, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungerous, your selfe so unworthie to runne into the one, or to be driuē by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly have occasion rather to praise you for having conquered it, then to give you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in *Pyrocles* this speech wrought no more, but that he, 6 who before he was espied, was afraid; after, being perceived, was ashamed, now being hardly rubd upon, lefte both feare and shame, and was moved to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to *Musidorus* striving with it, he thus, partely to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answere. Cosin, whatsover good disposition nature hath bestowed upon me, or howsoever that disposition hath bene by bringing up cōfirmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wisdome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I have my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, thē I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a womā, & nursed of a womā. And certēly (for this point of your speach doth nearest touch me) it is strāge to see the unman-like cruelty of mākind; who not cōtent with their tyrānous ābition, to have brought the others vertuous patience under them (like to childish maisters) thinke their masterhood nothing, without doing injury to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, even this estate of *Amazons*, (which I now for my greatest honor do seek to counterfaite) doth well. witnes, that if generally the swetnes of their dispositiōs did not make them see the vainnesse of these thinges, which we accōpt glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praisers of men, should remember, that if we have such excellēcies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are: since a Kite never brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it superfluous to use any wordes of such a subject, which is so praised in it selfe, as it needes no praises; so withall I feare lest my conceate (not able to reach unto them) bring forth wordes, which for their unworthines may be a disgrace unto thē I so inwardly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue: &

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

vertue (ye your selves say) is to be loved, & I too truly: but this I willingly cōfesse, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to seeke it in an ill favoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an uncivill guest to *Kalander*, if you could feele what an inward guest my selfe am host unto: ye would thinke it very excuseable, in that I rather performe the duties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendshippe with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truly, I could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me gives me reason to my former dealing. And here *Pyrocles* stayed, as to breath himselfe, having bene transported with a litle vehemency, because it seemed him *Musidorus* had over-bitterly glaunched against the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aswell as out of an unquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Love (said he) deare cosin, is little beholding unto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of the highest power of the mind, which notable mē have attributed unto it; but ye deject it below all other passions, in trueth somewhat strangely; since, if love receive any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter objections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of love) rather touch me, deare *Musidorus*, then love: But I am good witnesse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende my selfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self: for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stir me up as ye did, by remēbrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, thē must ye cōfesse, that love hath his working in a vertuous hart: & so no dout hath it, whatsoever I be: for if we love vertue, in whom shal we love it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should love this word *vertue*, where I see it written in a book. Those troublesome effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of love, but of him that loves; as an unable vessel to beare such a licour: like evill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, soonest overthrowē with best wine. Even that heavenly love you speake of, is accōpanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispaire. And in that heavēly love, since ther are

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

two parts, the one the love it self, th'other the excellency of the thing loved; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is love it self; which whē I have a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womannish, since, I assure you (for all my apparel) there is nothing I desire more, then fully to prove my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for love, and most of all for that divine creature, which hath joyned me and love together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble desire which possesseth me. O Lord (saide *Musidorus*) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Even so (said *Musidorus*) as every base occupation makes one sharp in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered *Pyrocles*) as each excellent thing once well learned, serves for a measure of all other knowledges, And is that become (said *Musidorus*) a measure for other things, which never received measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered *Pyrocles*.) because the workings of it are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted unto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enjoying, answered *Pyrocles*, with a great sigh. O (said *Musidorus*) now set ye foorth the basenes of it: since if it ende in enjoying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered *Pyrocles*) I spake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine dis-enchaut you (said *Musidorus*.) My hart is too farre possessed (said *Pyrocles*.) But the head gives you direction. And the hart gives me life; aunswered *Pyrocles*.

But *Musidorus* was so greeved to see his welbeloved friend 7 obstinat, as he thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words; Well, well, (saide he) you list to abuse your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

painterly glosse of a visage : Confesse the truth ; and ye shall finde, the utmost was but beautie ; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed upon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slave unto in another. For my part I now protest, I have left nothing unsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most entier friendship to you requires of me ; I do now besech you even for the love betwixt us (if this other love have left any in you towards me) and for the remembraunce of your olde careful father (if you can remēber him that forget your self) lastly for *Pyrocles* owne sake (who is now upon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection ; other wise give me leave, to leave of this name of friendsh[i]p, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied *Pyrocles*, though he were very unpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewell of him he loved as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicted, he was the apter to conceive unkindnesse deeply : insomuch, that shaking his head, and delivering some shewe of teares, he thus uttered his griefes. Alas (said he) prince *Musidorus*, how cruelly you deale with me ; if you seeke the victory, take it ; and if ye liste, triumph. Have you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections ; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fethers. But truly you deale with me like a Phisition, that seeing his patient in a pestilent fever, should chide him, in steede of ministring helpe, and bid him be sick no more ; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison ; and loaden with greevous fetters, should will him to shake of his fetters, or he wuld leave him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death ; I am a prisoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am slave. Now if you list to leave him that loves you in the hiest degree : But remember ever to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his love being rubbed

afresh with this new unkindnes, begā (as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but gushing out abundance of teares, and crossing his armes over his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an over-pressing burthen, he suncke downe to the ground, which sodaine traunce went so to the hart of *Musidorus*, that falling down by him & kissing the weping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene over vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a love much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could have received so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his service to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But even this kindnes made *Pyrocles* the more melte in the former unkindnes, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent look upō *Musidorus*, as who should say, And is it possible that *Musidorus* should threaten to leave me? And this strooke *Musidorus* minde and senses so dumbe too, that for grieve being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one upon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of unkindnes to be never aright, but betwixt them that most dearely love.

And thus remayned they a time; till at length, *Musidorus* embrasing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend? It is you that shake me of (saide *Pyrocles*) being for my unperfectnes unworthie of your friendshippe. But this (said *Musidorus*) shewes you more unperfect, to be cruell to him, that submits himselfe unto you; but since you are unperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be governed by us wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take upon me, with three absolute cōmandements: The first, that you increase not your evill with further griefes: the second, that you love her with all the powers of your mind: & the last cōmandemēt shalbe, ye cōmand me to do what service I can, towards the attaining of your desires. *Pyrocles* hart was not so oppressed with the mighty passiōs of love and unkindnes, but that it yeilded to some mirth at this commaundement of *Musidorus*, that he should love: so that something cleering his face from his former shewes of grieve; Wel (said he) deare cousin, I see by the well choosing

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of your commandementes, that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counsellor: and therefore I am resolved to imploy all my endeavour to obey you; with this condition, that the comandementes ye commaund me to lay upon you, shall onely be, that you continue to love me, and looke upon my imperfections, with more affection then judgemēt. Love you? (said he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full of it? But (said he) let us leave of these flowers of newe begun frendship: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assuring your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I will feare to doo for you: nor nothing so small, which I will disdaine to doo for you. Let me therefore receive a cleere understāding, which many times we misse, while those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his congruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene frends, all must be layd open, nothing being superfluous, nor tedious. You shalbe obeyed (said *Pyrocles*) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my selfe; I using it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that respect is born unto it; yet if by chāce any should come, say that you are a servant sent from the Q. of the *Amazons* to seeke me, and then let me alone for the rest. So sate they downe, and *Pyrocles* thus said.

### CHAP. 13.

<sup>1</sup>*How Pyrocles fell in love with Philoclea.* <sup>2</sup>*His counsell and course therein.* <sup>3</sup>*His disguising into Zelmane.* <sup>4</sup>*Her meeting with Damætas,* <sup>5</sup>*Basilus,* <sup>6</sup>*the Queene and her daughters, & their speeches.* <sup>7</sup>*Her abode there over entreated;* <sup>8</sup>*and the place thereof described.*

<sup>1</sup> C Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall overthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in *Kalanders* house, you your selfe delivered unto mee what you had understood of *Philoclea*, who muche résembling (though I must say much surpassing) the Ladie *Zelmane*, whom too well I loved:

there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poison. Yet alas so sweete was it unto me, that I could not be contented, til *Kalander* had made it more and more strong with his declaratiō. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceived of her unworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaved quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passiō which to be definde is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called love. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights; & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But evē this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the *Architecture* of the lodges would have bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be judge, forsooth, of the painters cūning. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of uncertaine wishes, and that the wishes grew to unquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts upō nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with *Philoclea*: when each thing I saw, seemed to figure out some parts of my passions; whē even *Parthenias* faire face became a lecture to me of *Philocleas* imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that me thought it caried the sum of *Philocleas* name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe; & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw upon the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to witnesse the eternall spring of vertue, that I<sup>2</sup> had never read, heard, nor seene any thing; I had never any tast of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted) I must needs confesse, conquered; and that me thought even reason did assure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reverent friend-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

ship I bare unto you. For as it went against my harte to breake any way from you, so did I feare more then anie assault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute, counsaile is tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a respected friēd. This made me determine with my self, (thinking it a lesse fault in friēdship to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this secret course: Which conceit was most builded up in me, the last day of my parting and speaking with you; whē upō your speach with me, & my but naming love, (when els perchaūce I would have gone further) I saw your voice & cōūtenance so chaunge, as it assured me, my revealing it should but purchase your grieve with my cumber: & therfore (deere *Musidorus*) evē ran away frō thy wel knowne chiding: for having writtē a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe jewels with me, while you were in the middest of your sport, I got a time (as I think) unmarked, to steale away, I cared not whether so I might scape you: & so came I to *Ithonia* in the province of *Messenia*; wher lying secret I put this in praētise which before I had devised. For remēbring by *Philanax* his letter, & *Kalāders* speech, how  
 3 obstinately *Basilius* was determined not to mary his daughters, & therfore fearing, lest any publike dealing should rather increase her captivitie, then further my love; Love (the refiner of inventiō) had put in my head thus to disguise my self, that under that maske I might (if it were possible,) get accesse, and what accesse could bring forth, commit to fortune & industry: determining to beare the countenance of an *Amazon*. Therfore in the closest maner I could, naming my selfe *Zelmane*, for that deere Ladies sake, to whose memorie I am so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might make me found by them, whom I sought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could have laide it. For after I had runne over the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gave my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I ever delighted in, so now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to stir up Poeticall fancies, or rather as I thinke, of love; whose scope being pleasure, will not so much as utter his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.



But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeased with 4  
my bad musike) comes master *Dametas* with a hedging bill in  
his hand, chafing, and swearing by the p̃atable of *Pallas*, & such  
other othes as his rusticall bravery could imagine; & whē he  
saw me, I assure you my beauty was no more beholding to him  
thē my harmony; for leaning his hands upon his bil, & his chin  
vpon his hāds, with the voice of one that plaieth *Hercules* in a  
play, but never had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake  
to me, was, am not I *Dametas*? why, am not I *Dametas*? he  
needed not name him selfe: for *Kalanders* description had set  
such a note upō him, as made him very notable unto me, and  
therefore the height of my thoughts would not discend so much  
as to make him any answer, but continued on my inward dis-  
courses: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne unworthines,  
& therefore the apter to thinke him selfe contēned) tooke in so  
hainous manner, that standing upō his tip-toes, and staring as  
though he would have a mote pulled out of his eie, Why (said  
he) thou womā, or boy, or both, what soever thou be, I tell thee  
here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes  
pleasure, I tell thee it is *Dametas* pleasure. I could not choose,  
but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an Ape that had  
newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner,  
spake these wordes to my selfe: O spirite (saide I) of mine, how  
canst thou receave anie mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and  
thou mirth how darest thou enter into a minde so growne of late  
thy professed enemie? Thy spirite (saide *Dametas*) doost thou  
thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am *Basilius* officer, and have  
charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (said I sob-  
bing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the combe-  
case of *Diana* (sware *Dametas*) this woman is mad: oysters, and  
pearles? doost thou thinke I will buie oysters? I tell thee once  
againē get thee packing, and with that lifted up his bill to hit  
me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out  
of my lesson, so that I forgot al *Zelmanes-ship*, and drawing out  
my sworde, the basenesse of the villaine yet made me stay my  
hande, and he (who, as *Kalander* tolde me, from his childehood  
ever feared the blade of a sworde) ran backe, backward (with his  
hands above his head) at lest twentie paces, gaping and staring,  
with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by *Latonas*  
prayers were turned into Frogs. At length staying, finding

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

himselfe without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had passed through the discipline of a Taverne. But seeing me walke up and downe, without marking what he saide, he went his way (as I perceived after) to *Basilus*: for within a while he came unto mee, bearing in deed shewes in his countenance of an honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courtesie, as *Dametas* with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady (saide he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as this should receive solitary persons; but much do I marvaile, how such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a grave majestie upon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be revered. They are never alone (saide I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied *Basilus*) cānot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from suspition in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your selfe. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seeke no better warraunt (saide I) then my owne conscience, nor no greater pleasures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seekes to satisfie others, (saide *Basilus*.) Those that be good (saide I,) and they will be satisfied as long as they see no evill. Yet will the best in this country, (said *Basilus*) suspect so excellent a beauty being so weakely garded. Then are the best but starke nought, (aunswered I) for open suspecting others, comes of secrete condemning themselves; But in my countrie (whose manners I am in all places to maintaine and reverence) the generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes every one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the assured foundation in themselves. Excellent Ladie (said he) you praise so greatly, (and yet so wisely) your coūtry, that I must needes desire to know what the nest is, out of which such Byrds doo flye. You must first deserve it (said I) before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (saide *Basilus*) shall I deserve to know your estate? By letting me first knowe yours (aunswered I.) To obey you (said he) I will doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be knowen first, as you doo deserve in all points to be preferd. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is *Basilus*, unworthily Lord of this coūtry: the rest, either fame hath brought to your

eaes, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall understand of me. I that from the beginning assured my selfe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my gravitie the better, making a peece of reverēce unto him, Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serve for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little reverence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my coūtry, wh[i]ch is the invincible Lande of the *Amazons*; My selfe neece to *Senicia*, Queene thereof, lineally descended of the famous *Penthesilea*, slaine by the bloody hand of *Pyrrhus*. I having in this my youth determind to make the worlde see the *Amazons* excellencies, aswell in private, as in publicke vertue, have passed some daungerous adventures in divers coūtries: till the unmercifull Sea deprived me of my company: so that shipwrack casting me not far hence, uncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But *Basilus* (who now began to tast that, which since he hath swallowed up, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would use to well paying passingers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires; yet had I learned alredy so much, that it was aganst my womanhoode to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to prove whither intercessions in fitter mouths might better prevaile) commaunded *Dametas* to bring forth-with his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of divers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in grave Matronlike attire, with countenance and 6 gesture sutable, and of such fairnes (being in the strength of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with just price have purchased admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the most dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children. The faire *Pamela*, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdaine, that the trust of her vertue is reposed in such a louts hands as *Dametas*, had yet to shew an obedience, taken on a shepeardish apparell, which was but of Russet cloth cut after their fashion, with a straight body, open brested, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide sleeves: but beleeve me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiousnes of her body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to see how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

sweetly rase up like two faire Mountainets in the pleasaunt valley of *Tempe*) there honge a very riche *Diamond* set but in a blacke horne, the worde I have since read is this; *yet still my selfe*. And thus particularly have I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not so partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heaven, the Triumphe of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of Love, yoũg *Philoclea* appeared in her Nimphe-like apparell, so neare nakednes, as one might well discerne part of her perfections; & yet so apparelled, as did shew she kept best store of her beuty to her self: her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call thẽ her beames) drawẽ up into a net, able to take *Jupiter* when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body) covered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, inough to have made your restraind imaginatiõ have thought what was under it: with the cast of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wõderfull shining, or that she, (goddesse like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in giving blacknes the price above all beauty. Then (I say) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for envie, the roses me thought blushed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe frõ the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast; Then the cloudes gave place, that the heavẽs might more freshly smile upõ her; at the lest the cloudes of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and forcible then ever) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to have stayed long time, but that *Gynecia* stepping betweene my sight and the onely *Philoclea*, the chaunge of object made mee recover my senses: so that I coulde with reasonable good manner receive the salutation of her, and of the Princesse *Pamela*, doing thẽ yet no further reverẽce then one Prince useth to another. But when I came to the never-inough praised *Philoclea*, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse) with more then womanly ardency, Divine Lady, (saide I) let not the worlde, nor these great princes marvaile, to se me (contrary to my manner) do this especiall honor unto you,

since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But she blushing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise, Noble Lady, (saide she) it is no marvaile to see your judgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne with so great an errour, as to do more honour unto me then to them, whom I my selfe owe all service. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenance) that shewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do such an errour, if it were an errour. You are so well acquainted (saide she sweetely, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne beautie, that it makes you easilie fall into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in me? (said I truely sighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted unto them.

But then (as I thinke) *Basilus* willing her so do, Well 7 (saide she) I must needs confesse I have heard that it is a great happines to be praised of them that are most praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an invincible *Amazon*, since you will overcome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine some while in this cōpanie, to ease your owne travail, and our solitarines. First let me dye (said I) before any word spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleasantnes, not unfitte to flatter solitarinesse; for it being set upon such an unsensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a prety height before almost you perceive that you ascend, it gives the eye lordship over a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coūtry, being diversified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with lovely lightsomnes and artificiall shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre; having round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each aunswering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gracious *Pamela* liveth: so that the Lodge seemeth not unlike a faire *Comete*, whose taile stretcheth it selfe to a starre of lesse greatnes.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 14.

<sup>1</sup> *The devises of the first banquet to Zelmane.* <sup>2</sup> *Her crosses in love,*  
<sup>3</sup> *by the love of Basilus* <sup>4</sup> *and Gynecia* <sup>5</sup> *The conclusion between*  
*Musidorus and Zelmane.*

I SO Gynecia her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was invited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inventions: wherein is a banquetting house among certaine pleasant trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shining of the Sunne upon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasant to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heavenly *Iris*. There were birds also made so finely, that they did not onely deceive the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the watrie instruments did make their gorge deliver. The table at which we sate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we sate, and that devided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which *Basilus* at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne under, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make divers times the full circle round about, since *Philoclea* (being also set) was carried still in equall distance from me, and that onely my eyes did overtake her; which when the table was stayed, and wee beganne to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And so was my common sense deceived (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall stale a looke on her, me seemed I tasted her deliciousnesse. But alas, the one thirste was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselves open to receive all the dartes she did throwe, somtimes cloze up with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they woulde preserve the riches of that sight they had gotten, or cast my lidde as curtaines over the image of beautie, her

presence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reason (now growen a servant to passion) did yet often tel his master, that he should more moderatly use his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, disdayned almost to allow him the place of a Counsellor: so that my senses delights being too strögg for any other resolution, I did even loose the raines unto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would passe, either unmarked, or unsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my first acte, <sup>2</sup> assuring my selfe, that under that disguisment, I should find opportunitie to reveal my self to the owner of my harte. But who would thinke it possible (though I feele it true) that in almost eight weekes space, I have lived here (having no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a lover) yet could never finde opportunitie to have one minutes leasure of privie conference: the cause whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miserable. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that *Basilus* had of me (I think *Cupid* <sup>3</sup> having headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was stricken (taking me to be such as I professe) with great affectiö towards me, which since is growen to such a doting love, that (till I was faine to gette this place, sometimes to retire unto freely) I was even choaked with his tediousnes. You never saw fourscore yeares daunce up and downe more lively in a young Lover: now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in love with a cloake; and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted Lover in *Arcadia*. Doo you not think that this is a sallet of woormwood, while mine eyes feede upon the *Ambrosia* of *Philocleas* beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he (good man) were easy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke) Love and mischeefe having made a wager, which should have most power in me, have set *Gynecia* also on such a fire towardes me, as will never (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being a woman of excellent witte, and of strong working thoughts) whether she suspected me by my over-vehement shoves of affection to *Philoclea* (which love forced me unwisely to utter, while hope of my maske foolishly incouraged me) or that she hath takē some other marke of me, that I am not a woman:

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

or what devil it is hath revealed it unto her, I know not ; but so it is, that al her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable portraitures of a desperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that these avoydings of companie, doo but make the passions more violent, when they meete with fitte subjects. Truly it were a notable dumb shew of *Cupids* kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with over-vehement longing) direct themselves to *Philoclea* : & *Basilius* as busie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cumbersome ; making such suits to me, who nether could if I would ; nor would if I could, helpe him : while the terrible witte of *Gynecia*, carried with the beere of violent love, runnes thorow us all. And so jelious is she of my love to her daughter, that I could never yet beginne to open my mouth to the unevitable *Philoclea*, but that her unwished presence gave my tale a cōclusion, before it had a beginning.

And surely if I be not deceived, I see such shewes of liking, and (if I bee acquainted with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heavenly *Philoclea*, towards me, that I may hope her cares would not abhorre my discourse. And for good *Basilius*, he thought it best to have lodged us together, but that the eternall hatefulness of my destinie, made *Gynecias* jelousie stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confesse, that one way her love doth me pleasure : for since it was my foolish fortune, or unfortunate follie, to be knowen by her, that keepes her from bewraying me to *Basilius*. And thus (my *Musidorus*) you have my Tragedie played unto you by my selfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede proove a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie sigh.

- 5 *Musidorus* recōmended to his best discourse, all which *Pyrocles* had told him. But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out of the maze ; yet perceiving his affection so grouded, that striving against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendship in question, then give place to any friendly counsell. Well (said he) deare cosin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of love, yet happie it is, that your love is imployed upon so rare a woman : for certainly, {a noble cause dooth ease much a grievous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cānot see wherein I can be servisable unto you. I desire no greater



service of you (answered *Pyrocles*) thẽ that you remayn secretly in this country, & some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you shal have my key to ẽter, bicause as my fortune, eyther amendes or empaires. I may declare it unto you, and have your counsell and further-aunce: & hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayse, and yet the staine of all womankinde, that you may have so good a view, as to allowe my judgement: and as I can get the most convenient time, I will come unto you; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (said she) it is time for me to leave you, and towards evening wee will walke out of purpose hetherward, therefore keepe your selfe close in that time. But *Musidorus* bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse in some sorte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which *Pyrocles* very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (said he) from me, no more *Pyrocles*, nor *Daiphantus* now, but *Zelmane*: *Zelmane* is my name, *Zelmane* is my title, *Zelmane* is the onely hope of my advancement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, *Zelmane* dismissed *Musidorus*, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to dissuade him.

CHAP. 15.

<sup>1</sup> *The Labyrinth of Zelmanes love.* <sup>2</sup> *The Ladies exercises.* <sup>3</sup> *The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Artexias beautie.* <sup>4</sup> *The description of their persons and affections:* <sup>5</sup> *and occasion of this challenge.* <sup>6</sup> *The successe thereof abroad.*

**Z** *Elmane* returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by *Philoclea*,<sup>1</sup> watched by *Gynecia*, and tired by *Basilus*) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserable spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: *Zelmane* sought occasion to speake with *Philoclea*; *Basilus* with *Zelmane*; and *Gynecia* hindered them all. If *Philoclea* hapned to sigh (and sigh she

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, *Zelmane* sighed also; whereto *Basilus* and *Gynecia* soone made up foure parts of sorow. Their affection increased their conversation; and their conversation increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. *Zelmanes* eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing governors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long unto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

2 But *Zelmane* fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend *Musidorus* (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might have full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little River neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed upon rootes of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betweene *Pamela* and *Philoclea*, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while *Zelmane* protested, that the fitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken, that she had forgotten taking. *Basilus* in the meane time would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & *Gynecia* sit stil, but with no stil pensifnesse. Now she brought them to see a seeled Dove, who the blinder she was, the higher she strave. Another time a Kite, which having a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flie, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceaved) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

3 But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one evening as *Basilus* returned from having forced his thoughts to please themselves in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentleman desired leave to do a message from his Lord unto him. *Basilus* granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies observed, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from *Phalātus* of *Corinth*, to crave licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence defie all *Arcadian* Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be pre-

sent, to give evident prooffe what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of *Artesia* (so was the mistresse of *Phalantus* named) who in six courses should have better of the other, in the judgement of *Basilus*, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. *Basilus* (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to avoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would entertaine *Zelmane*, (that she might not think the time so gainefull to him, losse to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what *Arcadian* Knight (for none els but upon his perill was licensed to come) would defende what he honored against *Phalantus*, should have the like freedome of accesse and returne.

This obteyned and published, *Zelmane* being desirous to 4  
learne what this *Phalantus* was, having never knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, *Basilus* told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*, and deerly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorable courteous, and wronglesly valiaunt, considerably pleasant in conversation, & an excellent courtier without unfaithfulnes; who (finding his sisters unperswadeable melancholy, thorow the love of *Amphialus*) had for a time left her court, and gone into *Laconia*: where in the warre against the *Helots*, he had gottẽ the reputatiõ of one, that both durst & knew. But as it was rather choise thẽ nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable delightes, being beloved in all cõpanies for his lovely qualities, & (as a mã may terme it) cunning cherefulnes, wherby to the Prince & Court of *Laconia*, none was more agreeable thẽ *Phalantus*: and he not given greatly to struggle with his owne disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, having a fortune sufficient to content, & he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe, and was acquainted with this *Artesia*, whose beautie he now defendes, became her servant, said him selfe, and perchaunce thought

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

him selfe her lover. But certainly, (said *Basilius*) many times it falles out, that these young companiōs make themselves beleeve they love at the first liking of a likely beautie; loving, because they will love for want of other businesse, not because they feele indeed that divine power, which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and so (God knowes) as inconstantly leane upon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking love uppon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie *Artesia*, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For she thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not prowde of it, called her disdaine of him chastitie, and placed her honour in little setting by his honouring her: determining never to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthinesse were harboured. And to this concept not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing up she receaved at my sister in lawe *Cecropia*, had confirmed her: who having in her widowhood taken this young *Artesia* into her charge; because her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke that there is no wisdome but in including heaven & earth in ones self: and that love, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones selfe: And so good discipline she found of her, that liking the fruits of her owne planting, she was cōtent (if so her sonne could have liked of it) to have wished her in marriage to my Nephew *Amphialus*. But I thinke that desire hath lost some of his heate, since she hath knowne, that such a Queene as *Helen* is, doth offer so great a price as a kingdome, to buie his favour; for if I be not deceived in my good sister *Cecropia*, shee thinks no face so beautifull, as that which lookes under a crowne. But *Artesia* indeede liked well of my Nephew *Amphialus*; for I cā never deeme that love, which in hauty harts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and as it were, peacock-<sup>U</sup> themselves; but yet she hath shewed vehemencie of desire that way, I thinke, because all her desires be vehemēt, in so much that she hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called *Ismenus*) to be his squire, and her selfe is content to waite upon my sister, till she may see the uttermost what she may worke in *Amphialus*: who being of a melancholie (though I must needes saye courteous and noble) mind, seems to love nothing lesse then

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

Love : & of late having through some adventure, or inward discontentment, withdrawne him selfe frō any bodies knowledge, where he is : *Artesia* the easier condescended to goe to the court of *Laconia*, whether she was sent for by the Kinges wife, to whome she is somewhat allied.

And there after the war of the *Helots*, this Knight *Phalantus*, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her servaunt, and she so little caring, as not to shewe mislike thereof, was content onely to be noted to have a notable servaunt. For truly one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me a pleasaunt description of their love, while he with cheerefull lookes would speake sorowfull words, using the phrase of his affection in so high a stile, that *Mercurie* would not have wooed *Venus* with more magnificent Eloquence : but els neyther in behaviour, nor action, accusing in him selfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he sped or no. And she of the other side, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolish wittnesse, to speake more then one thinkes.

For she made earnest benefite of his jest, forcing him in 5 respect of his promise, to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly unto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) having in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to *Amphialus*, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that have delightfull meate before them, and have no stomacke to it, before other folkes prayse it) she tooke the advauntage one daye uppon *Phalantus* unconscionable praysinges of her, and certaine cast-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her sake, to arrest his woord assoone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of *Greece*, & with the chalenge now made, to give her beauty the principality over all other. *Phalantus* was entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confest to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for indeede he had litle cause, being accounted, with his Launce especially (whereupon the chalenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that *Greece* knoweth ; but because he feared to offend his sister

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Helen*, and with all (as he said) he could not so much beleewe his love, but that he might thinke in his hart (whatsoever his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters, and the faire *Parthenia* (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my wives neere kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for that prerogative. But his promise had bound him prentice, and therefore it was now better with willingnes to purchase thanks, then with a discontented doing to have the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then love, did lead him.

- 6 And now hath he already passed the courts of *Laconia*, *Elis*, *Argos* and *Corinth*: and (as many times it happēs) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to prevaile; so hath his Lawnce brought captives to the triumph of *Artesias* beauty, such, as though *Artesia* be among the fairest, yet in that company were to have the preheminance: for in those courts many knights (that had bene in other far countries) defēded such as they had seene, and liked in their travaile: but their defence had bene such; as they had forfayted the picture of their Ladies, to give a forced false testimonie to *Artesias* excellencie. And now lastly is he come hether, where he hath leave to trye his fortune. But I assure you, if I thought it not in dew & true cōsideratiō an injurious service & churlish curtesie, to put the danger of so noble a title in the deciding of such a dāgerles cōbat, I would make yong master *Phalantus* know, that your eyes can sharpē a blūt Launce, and that age, which my graye haire (onely gotten by the loving care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath not diminished in me the power to protect an undeniable verity. With that he bustled up himselfe, as though his harte would faine have walked abroad. *Zelmane* with an inwarde smiling gave him outward thanks, desiring him to reserve his force for worthier causes.

## CHAP. 16.

<sup>1</sup> *Phalantus and Artesias pompous entraunce.* <sup>2</sup> *The painted muster of an eleven conquered beauties.*

SO passing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the cōming of *Phalantus*, who the next morning having alredy caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had upon the tree made a shield to bee hanged up, which the defendant should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challenge. The *Impresa* in the shield; was a heaven full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was *the beauty which gave it the praise.*

Himselſe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatiō velvet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein *Artesia* sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if she had newly borrowed them of *Phæbus*. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footemē pleasantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another of them that by *Phalantus* well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at every pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leasurely, that with perfect judgement they might be discerned.

The first that came in (folowing the order of the time wherein they had bene wonne) was the picture of *Andromana*, Queene of *Iberia*; whom a *Laconian* Knight having sometime (and with speciall favour) served, (though some yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulness then good fortune defended. But therein *Fortune* had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not cōparable to *Artesia*; not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impoverish her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions) disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princesse of *Elis*, a Lady that taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as lyking is, not alwaies the child of

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

beauty, so whatsoever liketh; is beautyfull; for in that visage there was nether Majestie, grace, favour, nor fairenesse; yet she wanted not a servaunt that woulde have made her fairer then the faire *Artesia*. But he wrote her praises with his helmet in the dust, and left her picture to be as true a witnes of his overthrow, as his running was of her beauty.

3 After her was the goodly *Artaxia*, great Q. of *Armenia*, a Lady upon whom nature bestowed, & wel placed her delightful colours; & withal, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be discovered by the senses, yet altogether seemed not to make up that harmony, that *Cupid* delights in; the reaso wherof might seem a mannish countenance, which overthrew that lovely sweetnes, the noblest power of womankind, farre fitter to prevaile by parley, then by battell.

4 Of a farre contrary consideratiō was the representation of her that next followed, which was *Erona* Queene of *Licia*, who though of so browne a haire, as no man should have injured it to have called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so much overcome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte *Symmetrians* perhaps would allow; yet love plaid his part so well, in everie part, that it caught holde of the judgement, before it could judge, making it first love, & after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered; & with a pitiful looke made one find cause to crave helpe himselfe.

5 After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named *Baccha*, who though very faire, and of a fatnes rather to allure, then to mislike, yet her breasts over-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her mouth, betweene simpring & smyling, her head bowed somewhat down, seemed to lāguish with over-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast upward, disswading with too much perswading, while hope might seem to overcome desire.

6 The other (whose name was written *Leucippe*) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a sober simplicitie; like one that could do much good, & ment no hurt, her eyes having in them such a cheerefulnes, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed that pretty demurenes which the more one markes, the more one woulde



## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

judge the poore soule apt to beleve; & therfore the more pitie to deceive her.

Next came the *Queene of Laconia*, one that seemed borne 7 in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineamēts were neither perfect possessions thereof, nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a *Queene*, and therefore beautyfull.

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being 8 conquered; & might well have made all the beholders waite upō her triumph, while her selfe were led captive. It was the excellētly-faire *Queene Helen*, whose *Iacynth* haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through goldē sāds) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giving & receiving riches. In her face so much beautie & favour expressed, as if *Helen* had not bene knowē, some would rather have judged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, thē cōūterfaiting of any living patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could have fōūd, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of love. For every thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wāted any thing in majestie, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it ravished with delight. And no indifferēt soule there was, which if it could resist frō subjecting it self to make it his princesse, that would not lōg to have such a playfelow. As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sadnes thē it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she used those ornamēts, not for her self, but to prevaile with another, so she feared, that all would not serve.

Of a farre differing (though esteemed equall) beautie, was 9 the faire *Parthenia*, who next wayted on *Artesias* triumph, though farre better she might have sitte in the throne. For in her every thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forehead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

not to deserve, or not to need any exquisite decking, having no adorning but cleanliness; and so farre from all arte, that it was full of carelesnesse: unlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But *Basilus* could not abstaine from praising *Parthenia*, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wively faithfulness: telling withall *Zelmane*, how he had understoode, that when in the court of *Laconia*, her picture (maintained by a certaine *Sycionian* Knight) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then justice: her husband (the famous *Argalus*) would in a chafe have gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her undeserved champion) tolde her husbände, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as evill as ever it was, then that it should be a cause to make *Argalus* put on armour. Then would *Basilus* have tolde *Zelmane*, that which she alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth give place to their eyes.

IO It was of a young mayd, which sate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so attentive uppon it, as if that little foote coulde have bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a shephooke lying by her with a bottle upon it. But with al that povertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greatest *Queene* there did. Her beautie and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire shepheardesse, *Urania*, whom a rich knight called *Lacemon*, farre in love with her, had unluckely defended.

II The last of all in place, because last in the time of her being captive, was *Zelmane*, daughter to the King *Plexirtus*: who at the first sight seemed to have some resembling of *Philoclea*, but with more marking (cōparing it to the present *Philoclea*, who indeed had no paragon but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenesse, as an unperfect glasse doth give; aunswerable enough in some feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But *Zelmane* sighing, turning to *Basilus*, Alas sir (said she) here be some pictures which might better become the tōbes of their Mistresses, then the triumphe of *Artesia*. It is true sweetest Lady (saide *Basilus*) some of them be dead, and some other captive: But that hath happened so late, as it may

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

be the Knightes that defended their beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe could not blot out the image which love hath engravē in thē. But divers besides these (said *Basilius*) hath *Phalantus* woon, but he leaves the rest, carying onely such, who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may justly glorifie the glory of *Artesias* triumph.

### CHAP. 17.

<sup>1</sup> *The overthrow of five Arcadian knights.* <sup>2</sup> *The young shepheards prettie challenge.* <sup>3</sup> *What passions the sixth knights foyle bredde in Zelmane.* <sup>4</sup> *Clitophon hardly overmatched by Phalantus.* <sup>5</sup> *The ill arayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie against Phalantus.* <sup>6</sup> *The halting knights complaint against the black knight.* <sup>7</sup> *Phalantus fall by the ill furnisht knight.* <sup>8</sup> *The crosse-parting of Phalantus with Artesia,* <sup>9</sup> *and who the victor was.*

THus talked *Basilius* with *Zelmane*, glad to make any matter <sup>1</sup> subject to speake of, with his mistresse, while *Phalantus* in this pompous manner, brought *Artesia* with her gētlewomē, into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would first strike upon the shielde, while *Basilius* the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For *Phalantus* was all in white, having in his bases, and caparison imbroidered a waving water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast over, in which were divers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to strive, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name *Nestor*, by birth an *Arcadian*, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both upō his armour, and horse. His *impresa* in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, *More*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*easie, and more sweete.* But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he received of *Phalantus*, leaving his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilessly chafing at his rebuke. The next was *Polycetes*, greatly esteemed in *Arcadia*, for deedes he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable love he had long borne to *Gynecia*; which *Basilus* himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his love no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from overthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of *Artesias* victories: a thing *Gynecias* vertues would little have recked at another time, nor then, if *Zelmane* had not seene it. But her champion went away asmuch discomfited, as discomfited. Then *Telamon* for *Polixena*, & *Eurimelō* for *Elpine*, and *Leon* for *Zoana*; all brave Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted up the ballance of his praise for activitie, and hers for fairenes.

- 2 Upon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a mā) brown of cōplexiō (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very lovely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who slubber up matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be judged; for he had nothing upon him but a paire of sloppes, and upon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which he cast over his shoulder, doing all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance could not make him do amisse, because he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so cōming with a looke ful of amiable fierceness, as in whom choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came towards the king, and making a reverence (which in him was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (said he) I pray you heare a few words; for my hart wil break if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of *Urania*, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men when they fall downe, they say is not so faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may never see my olde mother alive, if I think she be any more match to

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

*Urania*, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepes our flock at home, is like your white Greihounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.

And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be, and my hart gives me, I shall tumble him on the earth: for indeede he might aswell say, that a Couslip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall see what I can doo to him. ✓  
*Basilus* sawe it was the fine shepheard *Lalus*, whom once he had afore him in Pastorall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of prety simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earnestnesse, he bad him be content, since he sawe the pictures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But *Lalus* (even weeping ripe) went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would revenge *Uranias* wronge; and praying hartely for every bodie that ran against *Phalantus*, then began to feeble poverty, that he could not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, even when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to shew his greatest countenance in his lowest estate, there came in a Knight, called *Phebilus*, a Gentleman of that coutry, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Love, to make him miserable by the sight of *Philoclea*. For he had even from her infancie loved her, and was stricken by her, before she was able to knowe what quiver of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loved and dispaired; and the more he dispaired, the more he loved. He sawe his owne unworthines, and thereby made her excellencie have more terrible aspect upon him: he was so secrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he ever spake of it, but his hart made such silent complaints within it selfe, that while all his senses were attentive thereto, cunning judges might perceave his minde: so that he was knowne to love though he denied, or rather was the better knowne, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couler, his *Impresa*, the fishe called *Sepia*, which being in the nette castes a blacke inke about it selfe, that in the darkenesse thereof it may escape: his worde was, *Not so*. *Philocleas* picture with almost an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But streight jelousie was a harbinger for disdaine in *Zelmanes* harte, when she sawe any (but her selfe) should be avowed a champion for *Philoclea*: in somuch

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

that she wisht his shame, till she sawe him shamed: for at the second course he was stricken quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the sworde have revenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, *Basilus* would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leaving *Zelmane* no lesse angry with his los, thẽ she would have beene with his victory. For if she thought before a rivals prayse would have angred her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in *Philocleas* cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commaunded truce for those sportes, & *Phalantus* (though intreated) would not leave *Artesia*, who in no case would come into the house, having (as it were) suckte of *Cecropias* breath a mortall mislike against *Basilus*.

- 4 But the night measured by the short ell of sleepe, was soone past over, and the next morning had given the watchful stars leave to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned *Basilus* to play his judges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; *Zelmane* having lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fiele, readie to prove *Helen* of *Corinth* had receaved great injury, both by the erring judgement of the challenger, and the unlucky weakenesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be *Clitophon* (*Kalāders* sonne of *Basilus*-his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well hādled, that it shewed like a glittering sande and gravell, interlaced with silver rivers: his device he had put in the picture of *Helen* which hee defended. It was the *Ermion*, with a speach that signified, *Rather dead then spotted*. But in that armour since he had parted frō *Helen* (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) he had performed so honourable actiōs, (stil seeking for his two friends by the names of *Palladius* and *Daiphātus*,) that though his face were covered, his being was discovered, which yet *Basilus* (which had brought him up in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to sound; to which the two brave Knights obeying, they performed their

courses, breaking their six staves, with so good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner, that it bred some difficulty in the judgement. But *Basilius* in the ende gave sentence against *Clitophon*, because *Phalantus* had broken more staves upō the head, & that once *Clitophon* had received such a blowe, that he had lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the horse. But *Clitophon* was so angry with the judgemēt, (wherin he thought he had received wrōg) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, & uncle; and sodainly went his way, still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by seeking: & so yeelded the field to the next commmer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no lesse 5 marked then al the rest before, because he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither piçture, nor device, his armour of as old a fashion (besides the rustie poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his graundfathe[r]s courage: about his middle he had in steede of bases, a long cloake of silke, which as unhandsomely, as it needes must, became the wearer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on the earth alreadie, since he had to meete one who had bene victorious of so many gallants. But he went on towards the shielde, and with a sober grace strake it; but as he let his sworde fall upon it, another Knight, all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield almost assoone as he, and so strongly, that he brake the shield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for so the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted,) insolent injurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound blowe, that they that looked on saide, it well became a rude arme. The other aunswered him againe in the same case, so that Launces were put to silence, the swordes were so busie.

But *Phalantus* angry of this defacing his shield, came upon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his sworde set fire to his eyes, which presently was revenged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill apparelled Knight, who disdained another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who ever sawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, everie one had adversaries, striking him, who strooke the third, and revenging perhaps that of him, which he had received of the other. But *Basilius* rising himselfe to parte them, the sticklers authoritie

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

scarslie able to perswade cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

6 But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to *Basilus*, demanding justice on the blacke Knight, for having by force taken away the picture of *Pamela* from him, whiche in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and covered with silke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with *Artesias* length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weakenesse of the other: as the smallest starre dothe thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The injurie seemed grievous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defend *Pamelas* divine beautie against *Artesias*, with a prowde jollitie commaunded him to leave that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such cōmandements, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his picture. This understood by *Basilus*, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him away to learn of *Æsculapius* that he was not fit for *Venus*.

5 But then the question arising who should be the former against *Phalantus*, of the blacke, or the ill appavelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe) of the one side, was alleged the having a picture which the other wanted: of the other side, the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill appavelled Knight should have the precedence, if he delivered the figure of his mistresse to *Phalantus*; who asking him for it, Certainly (said he) her liveliest picture, (if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best cōparison I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the heavenly beauties. But because perhappes all eyes cannot taste the Divinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clouded by some meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image *Phebilus* so feebly lost yesternight, and in steede of an other (if you overcome mee) you



shall have me your slave to carrie that image in your mistresse triumphe. *Phalantus* easilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight 7 choosing out the greatest staves in all the store, at the first course gave his head such a remembraunce, that he lost almost his remembraunce, he him selfe receyving the incounter of *Phalantus* without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gave him such a counterbuffe, that because *Phalantus* was so perfite a horseman, as not to be driven from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driven from the horse: *Phalantus* remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprise, that disgrace befell him, which he had never before knowne.

But the victorie being by the judges given, and the trumpets 8 witnessed to the ill apparelled Knight; *Phalantus* disgrace was ingrieved in lieu of comforte by *Artesia*; who telling him she never lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing himselfe, and turning over the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you have lost me.

Nay truely Madame (saide *Phalantus*) it shall not be so: for I thinke the losse of such a Mistresse will proove a great gaine: and so concluded; to the sporte of *Basilius*, to see young folkes love, that came in maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little constancie. But *Phalantus* first professing great service to *Basilius* for his curteous intermitting his solitary course for his sake, would yet conduct *Artesia* to the castle of Cecropia, whether she desired to goe: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-love, should ever any more intangle him. And with that resolution he left the company. Castle

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black knight 9 wēt away repyning at his luck, that had kept him frō winning the honor, as he knew he shuld have don, to the picture of *Pamela*) the ill apparelled knight (who was only desired to stay, because *Basilius* meant to shew him to *Zelmane*) puld of his Helmet, & then was knowē himselfe to be *Zelmane*: who that morning (as she told) while the others were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile of frō the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was *Basilius* pleasure she

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come upon the spur to redeem *Philocleas* picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wilderness-company) should be in captivitie, if the cunning she had learned in her coũtrye of the noble *Amazons*, could withstād it: & under that pretext faine she would have givē a secret pasport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant rednesse in *Philocleas* face, and palenesse in *Gynecias*, but broght forth no other coũtenāces but of admiratiō, no speches but of cōmēdatiōs: al these few (besides love) thinking they honoured them selves, in honouring so accomplished a person as *Zelmane*: whom dayly they sought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose *Basilus* had in a house not farre of, servaunts, who though they came not uncalled, yet at call were redye.

### CHAP. 18.

<sup>1</sup> *Musidorus disguised.*   <sup>2</sup> *His song.*   <sup>3</sup> *His love,*   <sup>4</sup> *the cause thereof.*  
<sup>5</sup> *His course therein.*

AND so many daies were spent, and many waies used, while *Zelmane* was like one that stode in a tree waiting a good occasiō to shoot, & *Gynecia* a blancher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an apointed course, the sheapheards were to assēble, & make their pastorall sports afore *Basilus*: *Zelmane* (fearing, lest many eyes, and comming divers waies, might hap to spy *Musidorus*) went out to warne him thereof.

<sup>1</sup> But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her-ward, a man in sheapperdish apparel who being in the sight of the Lodge it might seeme he was allowed there. A lōg cloke he had on, but that cast under his right arme, wherein he held a shephooke, so finely wrought, that it gave a bravery to poverty; & his rayments, though they were meane, yet received they hansomnes by the grace of the wearer; though he himselfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eies somewhat cast up to heaven, as though his fancies strave to mount higher; sometimes throwne downe to the

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthens of his sorrowes; at length, with a lamẽtable tune, he songe these fewe verses.

*Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde :* 2  
*Yeld outward shew, what inward chance he tryes :*  
*Nor be abasht, since such a guest you finde,*  
*Whose strongest hope in your weake comfort lyes.*

*Come shepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes :*  
*Disuse your selves from sweete Menalcas voice :*  
*For other be those tunes which sorrow tyes,*  
*From those cleere notes which freely may rejoyce.*  
*Then power out plaint, and in one word say this :*  
*Helpes his plaint, who spoyles himselfe of blisse.*

And having ended, he strake himselfe on the brest; saying, O miserable wretch, whether do thy destenies guide thee? The voice made *Zelmane* hasten her pace to overtake him: which having done, she plainly perceaved that it was her deare friend *Musidorus*, whereat marvailing not a little, she demaunded of him, whether the Goddesses of those woods had such a powre to trãsforme every body, or whether, as in all enterprises else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

Alas, (said *Musidorus*) what shall I say, who am loth to say, 3  
and yet faine would have said? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wisdome, which wants experience. I now (woe is me) do try what love can doo. O *Zelmane*, who will resist it, must either have no witte, or put out his eyes? can any man resist his creation? certainly by love we are made, and to love we are made. Beasts onely cannot discerne beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that doo not honor it. The perfect friendship *Zelmane* bare him, and the great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, coulde not keepe her from smiling at him, remembring how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of lovers. And therefore a litle to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you that were last day so hie in Pulpit against lovers, are you now become so meane an auditor? Remember that love is a passion; and that a woorthie

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

mans reason must ever have the masterhood. I recant, I recant (cried *Musidorus*,) and withall falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of Love, or what other heavēly or hellish title thou list to have (for effects of both I finde in my selfe) have compassion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no saide *Zelmane*, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me see the deformitie of my passions: but take heede, that this jest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (saide *Musidorus* taking her fast by the hand) even for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an unhappy man) thou hast some remembraunce, & by those sacred flames which (I know) have likewise neerely touched thee; make no jest of that, which hath so earnestly pearced me thorow, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me so burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. *Musidorus* both in words & behaviour, did so lively deliver out his inward grief, that *Zelmane* found indeede, he was thorowly woūded: but there rose a new jealousy in her minde, lest it might be with *Philoclea*, by whom, as *Zelmane* thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleered of that doubt, *Musidorus* shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case unto her.

- 4 The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way of) guided me to a young shepherds house, by name *Menalcas*, who seing me to be a straying strāger, with the right honest hospitality which seemes to be harboured in the *Arcadian* breasts, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and having by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, something more in particular, then I had by *Kalanders* report, I agreed to sojourne with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to observe. And so hether to your arbour divers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had never bene so, nay, O that it might ever be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compasse

can set forth infinite beauty. All this while *Zelmane* was racked with jealousy. But he went on, For (saide he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe, O sweet *Pyrocles*, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the use of thy reason? how much am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet know I, that all the heavens cannot bring me to such thralldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came foorth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to strike my soule; at least, an unmeasurable sting I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight? said *Zelmane*, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd *Musidorus*) I know your suspition; No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it is, and must be *Pamela*. Then all is safe (sayd *Zelmane*) proceede, deare *Musidorus*. I will not (said he) impute it to my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the consideratiō of love into my mind, which before I ever neglected) nor to the exaltation of *Venus*; nor revenge of *Cupid*; but even to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddess, against which, the onely shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was presently stricken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, wil strike himselfe again upon it) would needs looke againe; as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceived. But alas, well have I found, that Love to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had planted in the ground of my harte, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my love, which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of heaven? Let this word suffice, I love.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in 5  
black armour to defende her picture, where I was both prevented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waited here to do you service, have now my self most need of succor. But wherupon got you your self this apparel? said *Zelmane*. I had forgotten to tel you (said *Musidorus*) though that were one principall matter of my speech; so much am I now master of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to *Menalcas* house, full of tormenting desire, after a while faynting

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

under the weight, my courage stird up my wit to seeke for some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At last this came into my head, that very evening, that I had to no purpose last used my horse and armour. I tolde *Menalcas*, that I was a *Thessalian* Gentle-man, who by mischaunce having killed a great favorit of the Prince of that coütry, was pursued so cruelly, that in no place, but either by favour, or corruption, they would obtaine my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my persecutions might be asswaged) to disguise my selfe among the shephards of *Arcadia*, & (if it were possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes presence; Because if the woorst should fall, that I were discovered, yet having gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to move his hart to protect me. *Menalcas* (being of an honest dispositiō) pittied my case, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and so (I giving him largely for it) let me have this rayment, instructing me in all the particularities, touching himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, upon it, I hired him to goe into *Thessalia* to a friend of mine, & to deliver him a letter frō me; conjuring him to bring me as speedy an answeere as he could, because it imported me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friendes did yet possesse any favour, whose intercessiōs I might use for my restitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well sealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my trustie servant *Calodoulus* (whom you know) that assoone as he had delivered the letter, he should keep him prisoner in his house, not suffering him to have conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure: in all other respects that he should use him as my brother. And thus is *Menalcas* gone, and I here a poore shepheard; more proud of this estate, thē of any kingdom: so manifest it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one unto, is the contentmēt of the mind: with which, no estate; without which, all estates be miserable. Now have I chosen this day, because (as *Menalcas* tolde me) the other shepheards are called to make their sports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde meanes to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (answered *Zelmane*) but that I will be your good mistresse:

## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

marrie the best way of dealing must be by *Dametas*, who since his blunt braine hath perceived some favour the Prince dooth beare unto me (as without doubt the most servile flatterie is lodged most easilie in the grossest capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their greater, and then have they not witte to learne the right degrees of duetie) is much more serviceable unto me, then I can finde any cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for every present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are masters of his sillie mind; onely reverence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him. O heaven and earth (said *Musidorus*) to what a passe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts? But ô Love, it is thou that doost it: thou changest name upō name; thou disguisest our bodies, and disfigurest our mindes. But in deed thou hast reason, for though the wayes be foule, the journeyes end is most faire and honourable.

### CHAP. 19.

<sup>1</sup> *The meanes of Musidorus his apprenticeship unto Dametas.* <sup>2</sup> *The preparation and place of the Pastorals.* <sup>3</sup> *The Lyons assault on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane.* <sup>4</sup> *The shee beares on Pamela, and death by Dorus.* <sup>5</sup> *The Io Pæan of Dametas,* <sup>6</sup> *and his scape from the beare.* <sup>7</sup> *The victors praises.* <sup>8</sup> *Whence those beasts were sent.*

NO more sweete *Musidorus* (said *Zelmane*) of these philosophies; for here comes the very person of *Dametas*. And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forrest-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife under his girdle: in which provided sorte he had ever gone, since the feare *Zelmane* had put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reverence afore her; inough to have made any man forswear all courtesie. And then in *Basilus* name, he did invite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to have the Pastoralles.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

But when he spied *Musidorus* to be none of the shepherds allowed in that place, he would faine have perswaded himselfe to utter some anger, but that he durste not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gave occasion to *Musidorus* to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard *Menalcas*, by name *Dorus*, sent by his father in his tender age to *Athens*, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother *Menalcas* (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (upon his death) he had charged him to seek the service of *Dametas*, and to be wholly, and ever guyded by him; as one in whose judgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gave to *Dametas* a good summe of golde in redy coine, which *Menalcas* had bequeathed unto him, upon condition he should receive this poore *Dorus* into his service, that his mind and manner might grow the better by his dayly example. *Dametas*, that of all manners of stile could best conceive of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by *Musidorus* prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slave to that, which he, that shewed to be his servant, offered to give him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed very squeimish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse *Pamela*. But such was the secrete operation of the golde, helped with the perswasion of the Amazon *Zelmane*, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaved himselfe so to the lyking of *Basilius*, as he might be cōtented) that then he would receive him into his service.

- 2 And thus went they to the Lodge, where they foūd *Gynecia* and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselves there a while, untill the shepherds comming: whether also taking *Zelmane* with them, as they went, *Dametas* told them of *Dorus*, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in steed of his brother *Menalcas*. As for *Basilius*, he staid behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to cōfer, to breed the better *Zelmanes* liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish pastimes. ! It was indeed a place of delight;



for thorow the middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seeke to close the eie with the purling noise it made upon the pibble stones it ran over: the field it self being set in some places with roses, & in al the rest constantly preserving a flourishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew unto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a *Theater*) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of growth, continuall greennes, or poetically fancies have made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gave a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholericke looke of *Phæbus*. Samm

In this place while *Gynecia* walked hard by them, carying 3 many unquiet cōtentions about her, the Ladies sate them downe, inquiring many questiōs of the shepheard *Dorus*; who (keeping his eie still upon *Pamela*) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed cōūtenance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenanced with unwoonted presence. But *Zelma* that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hande of *Philoclea*, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. | O Love, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so constāt in their torments? when sodainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a she Beare not far from him, of litle lesse fiercenes, which (as they ghest) having bene hūted in Forests far of, were by chaūce come thether, where before such beastes had never bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered some thing the cōūtenances of the two Lovers, but so, as any man might perceive, was rather an assembling of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. *Philoclea* no sooner espied the Liō, but that obeying the cōmandement of feare, she lept up, & ran to the lodgeward, as fast as her delicate legs could carrie her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is evē ready to seaze. But 7

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the Lion (seing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to seaze him selfe on the pray, when *Zelmane* (to whome daunger then was a cause of dreadlesnes, all the cōpositions of her elemēts being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow upon his chine, that she opened al his body: wherwith the valiant beast turning upō her with open jawes, she gave him such a thrust thorow his brest, that al the Liō could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and sleeve of *Zelmane*, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow having takē away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gave *Zelmane* leasure to take of his head, to carrie it for a present to her Ladie *Philoclea*: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like *Arethusa* when she ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being carried up with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time have willingly hidden, was present to the sight of the twise wounded *Zelmane*. Which made *Zelmane* not folow her over hastily, lest she should too soone deprive her selfe of that pleasure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully overtake her, till they came to the presence of *Basilius*. Nether were they lōg there, but that *Gynecia* came thether also: who had bene in such a traunce of musing, that *Zelmane* was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lions cōming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preventing all extremitie of feare, she marked *Zelmanes* fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as *Zelmane* ran after *Philoclea*, so she could not find in her hart but run after *Zelmane*: so that it was a new sight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: *Philoclea* with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth: *Zelmane* with an eager and impatient delight, *Gynecia* with wings of Love, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before *Basilius* amazed with this sight, and feare having such possessiō in the faire *Philoclea*, that her bloud durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of palenesse from her most pure whitenes, *Zelmane* kneeled down, and presented the Lions head unto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the

punishment of that unnatural beast, which cōtrary to her owne kind wold have wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traiterous eies, as durst rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answered the sweete *Philoclea* then blushing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent *Amazon*, were there to teach him good manners. And even thanks to that beautie (answered *Zelmane*) which can give an edge to the bluntest swordes? There *Philoclea* told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to *Zelmane*, she perceived some bloud upō *Zelmanes* shoulder, so that starting with the lovely grace of pittie, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with over-much kissing may forget to give the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praysing *Zelmane*, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both unto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though *Zelmane* assured them, it was nothing) would needes see it; *Gynecia* having skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it served to vertuous courage, which evē Ladies would (evē with the contēpt of courage) seeme to cherish. But looking upon it (which gave more inward bleeding woūds to *Zelmane*, for she might sometimes feele *Philocleas* touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied she a pretious baulme unto it, of power to heale a greater grieve.

But even then, & not before, they remēbred *Pamela*, & 4 therefore *Zelmane* (thinking of her friend *Dorus*) was running back to be satisfied, whē they might all see *Pamela* cōming between *Dorus* & *Dametas*, having in her hād the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard *Dorus* had newly presented unto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deserved death for her presumption, yet was her will to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. *Dametas* for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish. But whē he came so neere, as he might be heard of *Basilus*, he would needes breake thorow his eares with this joyfull song of their good successe.

5        **N**ow thanked be the great God Pan,  
               *which thus preserves my loved life:*  
 Thanked be I that keepe a man,  
               *who ended hath this fearefull strife:*  
 For if my man must praises have,  
               *what then must I that keepe the knave?*

*For as the Moone the eies doth please,*  
*with gentle beames not hurting sight:*  
 Yet hath sir Sunne the greatest praise,  
               *because from him doth come her light:*  
 So if my man must praises have,  
               *what then must I that keepe the knave?*

4        Being al now come together, & all desirous to know each others advētures, *Pamelas* noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valiāt mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this māner. As soone (saide she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safetie, there came out of the same woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing belike to deale while the Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, and this young shepherd left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisdom, which since they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but evē pure feare bringing forth that effect of wisdom) fell downe flat of my face, needing not cōterfait being dead, for indeed I was litle better. But this shepherd having no other weapon, but that knife you see, standing before the place where I lay, so behaved him selfe, that the first sight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer *Charons* ferry,) was the shepherd shewing me his bloody knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide *Zelmane*, speaking to *Dorus*, whose valour she was carefull to have manifested) in what sorte, so ill weaponed, could you atchive this enterprise? Noble Ladie (saide *Dorus*) the manner of these beastes fighting with any man, is to stande up upon their hinder feete: and so this did, & being ready to give me a shrewd imbracement, I thinke, the God *Pan*, (ever carefull of the chiefe blessings of *Arcadia*) guided my hand so just to the hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch

me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy remēbrāce) breed any dāger to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather (withall subjected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies, since the duety thereunto gave me harte to save my selfe, then to receive thanks for a deede, which was her onely inspiring. And this *Dorus* spake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from cōming into his eyes and gestures. But *Zelmane* (that had the same Character in her heart) could easily discerne it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speech, desired to understand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest *Dametas* was escaped.

Nay (said *Pamela*) none shall take that office from my selfe, 6 being so much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (scorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on? When (said she) *Dorus* made me assuredly perceive, that all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to finde my selfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both perceived the gentle *Dametas*, lying with his breast and head as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing up his legges as close unto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was full resolved not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that *Dorus* was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shew him the beast, as deade as he could wish it: which you may beleeeve me, was a very joyful sight unto him. But then he forgate al curtesie, for he fel upon the beast, giving it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beasts shuld be suffered in a cōmō welth. And then my governour, as full of joy, as before of feare, came dauncing and singing before us as even now you saw him. Well wel (said *Basilius*) I have not chosen *Dametas* for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie, and therein I know he will not deceave me.

But then he told *Pamela* (not so much because she should 7 know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act *Zelmane* had perfourmed, which *Gynecia* likewise spake off, both in such extremitie of praising, as was easie to be seene, the constructions

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. *Basilius* told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another *Pallas* with the spoiles of *Gorgon*. *Gynecia* sware, shee sawe the face of the young *Hercules* killing the *Nemean* Lion, & all with a grateful assent confirmed the same praises: onely poore *Dorus* (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should have bene left forgotten, had not *Zelmane* againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in *Arcadia*, that shepherds should performe such valorous enterprises. This *Basilius* (having the quicke sense of a lover) tooke, as though his Mistres had given a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to *Dorus*; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his estate, adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in souldierie, he would commit some charge unto him under his Lieutenant *Philanax*. But *Dorus* (whose ambition clymed by another stayre) having first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard *Menalcas*; who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, & excused his going to souldierie, by the unaptnesse he found in himselfe that way: he told *Basilius*, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serve *Dametas*; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his service greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to live in the sight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen vocation. *Basilius* (liking well his goodly shape and handsome manner) charged *Dametas* to receive him like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, and *Dametas* truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischiefs, as (he sticked not to say) were threatned to his daughter *Pamela*.

2 *Dametas*, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fal into then his owne) accepted *Dorus*: and with all, telling *Basilius*, that some of the shepherds were come; demaunded in what place he would see their sports: who first curious to know whether it were not more requisite for *Zelma*nes hurt to rest, then sit up at those pastimes; and she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to have Pastorals, *Basilius* commanded it should be at

the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made *Zelmane* sit betweene him & his wife therin, who thought her selfe betweene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to bee delighted by the shepheards.

But before al of them were assembled to begin their sports, 8 there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastines told *Basilus*, that his Mistres, the Lady *Cecropia*, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beastes ranging in that dāgerous sort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himself able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceived: whom yet (if *Basilus* would punish for it) she was readie to deliver. *Basilus* made no other answere, but that his Mistres if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be killed: and then he told his wife & *Zelmane* of it, because they should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such beasts, where the like had never bene seene. But *Gynecia* tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting *Cecropia*, because shee had heard much of the divellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularly she did her best to bring up her sonne *Amphialus* (being brothers sonne to *Basilus*) to aspire to the crowne, as next heire male after *Basilus*; and therefore saw no reason, but that she might conjecture, it proceeded rather of some mischievous practise, than of misfortune. Yet did she onely utter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, shee would attend a further occasion, least over much haste might seeme to proceede of the ordinarie mislike betweene sisters in Lawe: onely they marvelled, that *Basilus* locked no further into it; who (good man) thought so much of his late conceived common wealth, that all other matters were but digressions unto him. But the shepheards were ready, and with wel handling themselves, called their senses to attend their pastimes.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## The first Eclogues.

**B**ASILIVS, because *Zelmae* so would have it, used the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their invē-tions could minister. And yet because many more shepherds were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner chastise the cowardise of the fugitive shepherds: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of speech and behaviour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while they prepared to do, *Dametas*, who much disdained (since his late authority) all his old companions, brought his servant *Dorus* in good acquaintance and allowance of thē; & himselfe stood like a directer over thē, with nodding, gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or mislike those things he did not understand. The first sports the shepherds shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, even as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god *Pan*, and his companions the *Satyres*. Then would they cast away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would use in singing some short coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answer. As the one halfe saying,

*We love, and have our loves rewarded.*

The others would aunswere.

*We love, and are no whit regarded.*

The first againe.

*We finde most sweete affections snare,*

With like tune it should be as in quire sent back againe.

*That sweete, but sower despairefull care.*

A third time likewise thus:

*Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare?*

The aunswere.

*And who can hope, that feesles despaire?*



## ARCADIA. LIB. I.

Then all joyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure, they would conclude with some such words:

*As without breath, no pipe doth move,  
No musike kindly without love.*

Having thus varied both their songs and daunces into divers sorts of inventions; their last sport was one of them to provoke another to a more large expressing of his passions: which *Lalus* (accounted one of the best singers amongst them) having marked in *Dorus* dauncing, no lesse good grace & handsome behaviour, then extreame tokens of a travelled minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to challenge *Dorus*, and was by him answered in the underwritten sort.

Lalus and Dorus.

**C**ome Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie:  
And if for want of use thy minde ashamed is,  
That verie shame with Loves high title dignifie.

Lalus.

No stile is held for base, where Love well named is:  
Ech eare suckes up the words, a true love scattereth,  
And plaine speach oft, then quaint phrase, better framed is.

Nightingales seldome sing, the Pie still chattereth:  
The wood cries most, before it thoroughly kindled be,  
Deadly wounds inward bleed, ech sleight sore mattereth.

Dorus.

Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.  
Shallow brookes murmure most, deep silent slide away;  
Nor true love loves those loves with others mingled be.

If thou wilt not be seene, thy face goe hide away,  
Be none of us, or els maintaine our fashion:  
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better bide away.

Lalus.

But if thou hast a Love, in that Loves passion,  
I challenge thee by shew of her perfection,  
Which of us two deserveth most compassion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:  
Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)  
Thy health too meane a match for my infection.

Dorus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*No, though the heav'ns for high attempts have blamed me,  
Yet high is my attempt, O Muse historicke  
Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.*

Lalus. *Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan, glorifie  
My Kalas giftes: who with all good gifts filled is.  
Thy pipe, ô Pan, shall helpe, though I sing sorilie.  
A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;  
Who though she be no Bee, yet full of honie is:  
A Lillie field, with plowe of Rose which tilled is.  
Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is;  
Her eyes my eyesight is, her conversation  
More gladd to me, then to a miser monie is.  
What coye account she makes of estimation?  
How nice to touch, how all her speeches peized be?  
A Nymph thus turnde, but mended in translation.*

Dorus. *Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies rayzed be  
In one, whose name to name were high presumption,  
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleased be.  
O happie Gods, which by inward assumption  
Enjoy her soule, in bodies faire possession,  
And keep it joynde, fearing your seates consumption.  
How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,  
Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection  
From heav'nly throne to her heav'n use digression?  
Of best things then what world can yeeld confection  
To liken her? Decke yours with your comparison:  
She is her selfe, of best things the collection.*

Lalus. *How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne  
When first he spied my love? how oft he said to me,  
Thou art no souldier fitte for Cupids garrison?  
My sonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:  
Love well thine owne: me thinkes, woollles whitenes passeth all:  
I never found long love such wealth hath paid to me.  
This winde he spent: but when my Kala glasseth all  
My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,  
Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.  
Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my selfe?  
Want I white wooll, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?  
Till I get her, shall I to keepe enure my selfe?*

*How oft, when reason saw, love of her harnised  
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,  
To set a pearle in steele so meanelly varnished?*

Dorus

*Looke to thy selfe; reach not beyond humanitie:  
Her minde, beames, state farre from thy weake wings banished:  
And Love, which lover hurts is inhumanitie.*

*Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;  
Her eyes so maistering me, that such objection  
Seemde but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.*

*Her peereles height my minde to high erection  
Drawes up; and if hope-fayling ende lives pleasure,  
Of fayrer death how can I make election?*

*Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,  
With sleeves turnde up, loose haire, and brest enlarged,  
Her fathers corne (moving her faire limmes) measure.*

Lalus.

*O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:  
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling  
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.*

*Thy father bids thee save, and chides for spilling.  
Save then my soule, spill not my thoughts well heaped,  
No lovely praise was ever got by killing.*

*These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,  
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,  
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.*

*Once, ô sweete once, I saw with dread oppressed  
Her whom I dread; so that with prostrate lying  
Her length the earth in Loves chiefe clothing dressed.*

Dorus.

*I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;  
Let not dead earth enjoy so deare a cover,  
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.*

*Lay all your feare upon your fearefull lover:  
Shine eyes on me, that both our lives be guarded;  
So I your sight, you shall your selves recover.*

*I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:  
But straight they fledde, summond by cruell honor,  
Honor, the cause, desart is not regarded.*

*This mayde, thus made for joyes, ô Pan bemone her,  
That without love she spends her yeares of love:  
So faire a field would well become an owner.*

Lalus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

And if enchantment can a harde hart move,  
Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,  
Affections charmes in my behalfe to prove.  
The circle is my (round about her) sight :  
The power I will invoke dwelles in her eyes :  
My charme should be, she haunt me day and night.

Dorus. Farre other care, ô Muse, my sorrow tries,  
Bent to such one, in whom, my selfe must say,  
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.  
What circle then in so rare force beares swaye?  
Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damne, or save :  
No charme holdes her, but well possesse she may ;  
Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slave :  
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.  
No thrallles like them that inward bondage have.

Lalus. Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte :  
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire.  
Who is an heire of many hundred sheep  
Doth beauties keep, which never Sunne can burne,  
Nor stormes doo turne : fairenes serves oft to wealth.  
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.  
Which if you will (ô doo) bestow on me,  
Such as you see, such still you shall me finde.  
Constant and kind : my sheep your foode shall breed,  
Their wooll your weede, I will you Musique yeeld  
In flowrie felde ; and as the day begins  
With twenty ginnes we will the small birds take,  
And pastimes make, as Nature things bath made.  
But when in shade we meet of mirtle bowes,  
Then Love allowes, our pleasures to enrich,  
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.

Dorus. Lady your selfe, whom nether name I dare,  
And titles are but spots to such a worthe,  
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.  
The noblest kinde rejects not others woes.  
I have no shewes of wealth : my wealth is you,  
My beauties bewe your beames, my health your deeds ;  
My minde for weeds your vertues liverie weares.

# ARCADIA. LIB. I.

*My foode is teares ; my tunes waymenting yeeld :  
 Despaire my felde ; the flowers spirits warrs :  
 My day newe cares ; my ginnes my daily sight,  
 In which do light small birds of thoughts orethrowne :  
 My pastimes none : time passeth on my fall :  
 Nature made all, but me of dolours made :  
 I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burne :  
 No place to turne ; without, within it fryes :  
 Nor helpe by life or death who living dyes.*

*But if my Kala this my suite denies,  
 Which so much reason beares,  
 Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much :  
 If still her minde be such,  
 My earthy moulde will melte in watrie teares.*

Lalus.

*My earthy moulde doth melte in watrie teares,  
 And they againe resolve  
 To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,  
 Which doth to ashes burne :  
 So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,*

Dorus.

*So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,  
 That I am like a flower  
 New plucked from the place where it did breed,  
 Life showing, dead indeed :  
 Such force hath Love above poore Natures power.*

Lalus.

*Such force hath Love above poore Natures power,  
 That I growe like a shade,  
 Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,  
 While that one body shine.  
 Oh he is mard that is for others made.*

Dorus.

*Oh he is mard that is for others made.  
 Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,  
 Thinking how it hath mard my shepheards trade.*

Lalus.

*Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,  
 And others long to tell their loves condition :  
 Of singing take to thee the reputation.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Dorus. *Of singing take to thee the reputation  
New friend of mine; I yeeld to thy habilitie :  
My soule doth seeke another estimation.  
But ah my Muse I would thou hadst agilitie,  
To worke my Goddess so by thy invention,  
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.  
Seen, and unknowne; heard, but without attention.*

THIS Eclogue betwixt *Lalus* & *Dorus*, of every one of the beholders received great commendations. When *Basilus* called to a yong shepheard, who nether had daunced nor song with thē, but layne al this while upō the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loved, to be in prison in his body : & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepheards, according to the accustomed guise : or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, unknowne to him; as being a straunger in that cōūtry. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too joyfull to suffer the rehersall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy *Basilus* some way, he sange this songe, he had learned before he had subjected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

AS I my little flocke on Ister banke  
(A little flocke; but well my pipe they couth)  
Did piping leade, the Sunne already sanke  
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boothe  
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scothe;  
Saving the glowe worme, which would curteous be  
Of that small light oft watching shepheards see.

The welkin had full niggardly enclosed  
In cofer of dimme clowdes his silver groates,  
Icleped starres; each thing to rest disposed:  
The caves were full, the mountaines voide of goates:  
The birds eyes closde closed their chirping notes.  
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,  
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.

## ARCADIA, LIB. I.

*Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare  
 Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared sore;  
 Then fonde I which thing is a charge to beare  
 As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more  
 Then ever for my selfe since I was bore :  
 I sate me downe : for see to goe ne could,  
 And sange unto my sheepe lest stray they should.*

*The songe I sange old Lanquet had me taught,  
 Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knewe,  
 For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,  
 For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true :  
 With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,  
 To have a feeling tast of him that sitts  
 Beyond the heaven, far more beyond your witts.*

*He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleasd  
 Was jumpe concorde betweene our wit and will :  
 Where highest notes to godlines are raisd,  
 And lowest sinke not downe to jote of ill :  
 With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,  
 How shepheards did of yore, how now they thrive,  
 Spoiling their flock, or while twixt thē they strive.*

*He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth :  
 His good strong staffe my slippry yeares upbore :  
 He still hop'd well, because he loved truth ;  
 Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes even sore,  
 To worthy Coriden he gave me ore.  
 But thus in okes true shade recounted he  
 Which now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.*

*Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)  
 When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours  
 Was onely won'd with such as beastes begot :  
 Unknowne as then were they that builded towers :  
 The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers  
 Might freely rome, or rest, as seemed them :  
 Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*The beastes had sure some beastly pollicie :  
For nothing can endure where order n'is.  
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie ;  
The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse :  
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.  
This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad  
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.*

*At which whether the others did repine,  
(For envie barbreth most in feeblest hartes)  
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,  
(As even in beasts their dāmes leave chaunging parts)  
The multitude to Jove a suite empartes,  
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,  
Roring, and howling for to have a King.*

*A King, in language theirs they said they would :  
(For then their language was a perfect speech)  
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could  
Cackling, and chattring, that of Jove beseech.  
Onely the owle still warnde them not to seech  
So hastily that which they would repent :  
But sawe they would, and he to deserts went.*

*Jove wisely said (for wisdom wisely sayes)  
O beasts, take heed what you of me desire.  
Rulers will thinke all things made them to please,  
And soone forget the swincke due to their hire.  
But since you will, part of my heav'nly fire  
I will you lende ; the rest your selves must give,  
That it both seene and felte may with you live.*

*Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,  
Which streight the Earth yclothed in his claye :  
The Lion, harte ; the Ounce gave active might ;  
The Horse, good shape ; the Sparrow, lust to playe ;  
Nightingale, voice, entising songes to saye.  
Elephant gave a perfect memorie :  
And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.*



*The Foxe gave crafte; the Dog gave flatterie;  
 Asse, pacience; the Mole, a working thought;  
 Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secrete crueltie;  
 Monkie, sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;  
 The Ermion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;  
 The sheep, mild-seeming face; climbing, the Beare;  
 The Stagge did give the harme eschewing feare.*

*The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholie;  
 Ante, industrie; and Connie, skill to builde;  
 Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;  
 Camæleon, ease to chaunge; Ducke, ease to yelde;  
 Crocodile, teares, which might be falsely spilde:  
 Ape great thing gave, though he did mowing stand,  
 The instrument of instruments, the hand.*

*Ech other beast likewise his present brings:  
 And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)  
 They all consented were to give him wings:  
 And aye more awe towards him for to plant,  
 To their owne worke this priviledge they graunt,  
 That from thenceforth to all eternitie,  
 No beast should freely speake, but onely he.*

*Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:  
 Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,  
 He did to beastes best use his cunning frame;  
 With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,  
 And fellow-like let his dominion slide;  
 Not in his sayings saying I, but we:  
 As if he meant his lordship common be.*

*But when his seate so rooted he had found,  
 That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;  
 Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,  
 Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,  
 To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.  
 But yet the common Damme none did bemone;  
 Because (though hurt) they never heard her grone.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Then gan the factions in the beastes to breed ;  
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beastes,  
(As Tygers, leopards, beares, and Lions seed)  
Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes ;  
Where famine ravine taught their hungrie chestes,  
That craftily he forst them to do ill,  
Which being done he afterwards would kill.*

*For murthers done, which never erst was seene,  
By those great beastes, as for the weakers good,  
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,  
Gainst those of might, of whom in feare they stood,  
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood :  
Blith were the commons cattell of the fiede,  
Tho when they saw their foen of greatnes kilde.*

*But they or spent, or made of slender might,  
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,  
The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light :  
For by and by the horse faire bitts did binde :  
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.  
As for the gentle birds like case might rewe  
When falcon they, and gossehauke saw in mew.*

*Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,  
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he used.  
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard :  
And when they were well us'de to be abused,  
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brused :  
At length for glutton taste he did them kill :  
At last for sport their sillie lives did spill.*

*But yet ô man, rage not beyond thy neede :  
Deeme it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.  
Thou art of blood ; joy not to see things bleede :  
Thou fearest death ; thinke they are loth to die.  
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.  
And you poore beastes, in patience bide your hell,  
Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.*

*Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houres  
 To sheepe, whom love, not knowledge, made to heare,  
 Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull stowers :  
 But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare :  
 For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'apppeare  
 The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,  
 Sure shepherds signe, that morne should soone fetch day.*

According to the nature of diverse eares, diverse judgements streight followed : some praising his voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, others the strangenes of the tale, and scanning what he shuld meane by it. But old *Geron* (who had borne him a grudge ever since in one of their *Eclogues* he had taken him up over-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to make his revenge, and said, He never saw thing worse proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beastes at such a sport-meeting, when rather some song of love, or matter for joyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, said he, This is the right concept of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiseliest, when they cannot understand themselves. But little did the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraises, or the others praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there ; where he was most despised. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensivenesse, *Geron* invited *Histor* to answer him in *Eclogue*-wise ; who indeed having bene long in love with the faire *Kala*, and now by *Lalus* overgone ; was growne into a detestation of marriage. But thus it was.

*Geron. Histor.*

*I*N faith, good *Histor*, long is your delay,  
 From holy marriage sweete and surest meane :  
 Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.

*Geron.*

*I pray thee doo to Lalus sample leane :  
 Thou seest, how friske, and jolly now he is,  
 That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.  
 Beleeve me man, there is no greater blisse,  
 Then is the quiet joy of loving wife ;  
 Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Friend without change, playfellow without strife,  
Foode without fulnes, counsaile without pride,  
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.*

**Histor.** *No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,  
As for to finde a pasture strawed with golde,  
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.*

*Who would not have a Phoenix if he could?  
The humming Waspe, if it had not a sting,  
Before all flies the Waspe accept I would.*

*But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,  
Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions have :  
The Waspe seemes gay, but is a combrous thing.*

*If many Kalaes our Arcadia gave,  
Lalus example I would soone ensue,  
And thinke, I did my selfe from sorrow save.*

*But of such wives we finde a slender crew ;  
Shrewdnes so stirres, pride so puffes up the hart,  
They seldome ponder what to them is due.*

*With meager lookes, as if they still did smart ;  
Puiling, and whimpring, or else scolding flat,  
Make home more paine then following of the cart.*

*Ether dull silence, or eternall chat ;  
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes ;  
If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.*

*Austere she is, when he would honest playes ;  
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe ;  
She bids him goe, and yet from jorney stayes.*

*She warre doth ever with his kinsfolke keepe,  
And makes them fremb'd, who frinds by nature are,  
Envyng shallow toyes with malice deepe.*

*And if forsooth there come some new found ware,  
The little coine his sweating browes have got,  
Must goe for that, if for her lowres he care :*

*Or els ; Nay faith, mine is the lucklest lot,  
That ever fell to honest woman yet :  
No wife but I hath such a man, God wot.*

*Such is their speech, who be of sober wit ;  
But who doo let their tongues shew well their rage,  
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they spit ?*

*The house is made a very lothsome cage,  
Wherein the birde doth never sing but cry;  
With such a will as nothing can asswage.*

*Dearely the servants doo their wages buy,  
Revil'd for ech small fault, sometimes for none:  
They better live that in a gaile doo lie.*

*Let other fowler spots away be blowne;  
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinkes,  
A better life it is to lye alone.*

*Who for ech fickle feare from vertue shrinkes,  
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:  
No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinkes.*

*The heav'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring,  
But let us pike our good from out much bad:  
That still our little world may know his king.*

*But certainly so long we may be glad,  
While that we doo what nature doth require,  
And for th'euent we never ought be sad.*

*Man oft is plag'de with aire, is burnt with fire,  
In water dround, in earth his buriall is;  
And shall we not therefore their use desire?*

*Nature above all things requireth this,  
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;  
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse.*

*Thy father justly may of thee complaine,  
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,  
In granting unto him a grandsires gaine.*

*Thy common-wealth may rightly griev'd be,  
Which must by this immortall be preserved,  
If thus thou murther thy posteritie.*

*His very being he hath not deserved,  
Who for a selfe-conceipt will that forbear,  
Whereby that being aye must be conserved.*

*And God forbid, women such cattell were,  
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,  
No man doth speake aright, who speakes in feare.*

*Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.  
These fiftie winters married have I beene;  
And yet finde no such faults in womankind.*

Geron.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*I have a wife worthie to be a Queene,  
So well she can command, and yet obey;  
In ruling of a house so well shee's seene.*

*And yet in all this time, betwixt us tway,  
We beare our double yoke with such consent,  
That never past foule word, I dare well say.*

*But these be your love-toyes, which still are spent  
In lawlesse games, and love not as you should,  
But with much studie learne late to repent.*

*How well last day before our Prince you could  
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?  
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.*

*Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie  
To that where thou thy Cupid maist avowe,  
And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.*

*Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdom bowe  
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,  
And are not forst fonde thraldome to allow.*

*As we to get are fram'd, so they to spare:  
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:  
We care abroad, and they of home have care.*

*O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:  
Thy house by thee must live, or els be gone:  
And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?*

*Riches of children passe a Princes throne;  
Which touch the fathers hart with secret joy,  
When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.*

*Marrie therefore; for marriage will destroy  
Those passions which to youthfull head doo clime  
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.*

ALL the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fellowe, and easilie perceived in *Histor*, he liked *Lalus* fortune better, then he loved his person. But *Basilus* to entermixe with these light notes of libertie, some sadder tune, set to the key of his own passion, not seeing there *Strephon* or *Klaius*, (who called thence by *Uranias* letter, were both gone to continue their suite, like two true runners, both employing their best speed, but not one hindring the other) he called to one *Lamō* of their acquaint-

ance, and willed him to sing some one of their songs; which he redily performed in this doble Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

**Y**ou Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines,  
 You Nymphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies,  
 You Satyrs joyde with free and quiet forrests,  
 Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,  
 Which to my woes gives still an early morning:  
 And drawes the dolor on till wery evening.

Strephon.

**O** Mercurie, foregoer to the evening,  
 O heavenlie huntresse of the savage mountaines,  
 O lovelie starre, entitled of the morning,  
 While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,  
 Vouchsafe your silent eares to plaining musique,  
 Which oft hath Echo tir'd in secrete forrests.

Klaius.

**I** that was once free-burges of the forrests,  
 Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at evening,  
 I that was once esteem'd for pleasant musique,  
 Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines  
 Of huge despaire, and foule afflictions vallies,  
 Am growne a shrich-owle to my selfe each morning.

Strephon.

**I** that was once delighted every morning,  
 Hunting the wilde inhabitants of forrests,  
 I that was once the musique of these vallies,  
 So darkened am, that all my day is evening,  
 Hart-broken so, that molehilles seeme high mountaines,  
 And fill the vales with cries in steed of musique.

Klaius.

**Long** since alas, my deadly Swannish musique  
 Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,  
 And hath with wailing strêgth clim'd highest mountaines:  
 Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:  
 Long since I see my joyes come to their evening,  
 And state throwen downe to over-troden vallies.

Strephon

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

- Klaius. *Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,  
Have praide me leave my strange exclaiming musique,  
Which troubles their dayes worke, and joyes of evening :  
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning :  
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,  
And make me wish my selfe layd under mountaines.*
- Strephon. *Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,  
Transforme themselves to lowe dejected vallies :  
Me seemes I heare in these ill-changed forrests,  
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their musique :  
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning  
Turnde to the mortall serene of an evening.*
- Klaius. *Me seemes I see a filthie clowdie evening,  
As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines :  
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning  
When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies :  
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,  
The dreadfull cries of muredred men in forrests.*
- Strephon. *I wish to fire the trees of all these forrests ;  
I give the Sunne a last farewell each evening ;  
I curse the fiddling finders out of Musicke :  
With envie I doo hate the loftie mountaines ;  
And with despite despise the humble vallies :  
I doo detest night, evening, day, and morning.*
- Klaius. *Curse to my selfe my prayer is, the morning :  
My fire is more, then can be made with forrests ;  
My state more base, then are the basest vallies :  
I wish no evenings more to see, each evening ;  
Shamed I have my selfe in sight of mountaines,  
And stoppe mine eares, lest I growe mad with Musicke.*
- Strephon. *For she, whose parts maintaine a perfect musique,  
Whose beautie shin'de more then the blushing morning,  
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,  
In straightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,  
Hath cast me wretch into eternall evening,  
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.*



*For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,  
She, whose lest word brings from the spheares their musique,  
At whose approach the Sunne rose in the evening,  
Who, where she went, bare in her forehead morning,  
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyled forrests,  
Turning to desarts our best pastur'd mountaines.*

Klaius.

*These mountaines witnesse shall, so shall these vallies,  
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,  
Our morning hymne is this, and song at evening.*

Strephon.

Klaius.

**Z**Elmane seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but *Philocleas* eares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sange these *Sapphiques*, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

*I F mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,  
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to judge of,  
So that eyes message be of her receaved,  
Hope we do live yet.*

*But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,  
Or if eyes language be not unto her knowne,  
So that eyes message doo returne rejeſted,  
Hope we doo both dye.*

*Yet dying, and dead, doo we sing her honour;  
So become our tombes monuments of her praise;  
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne;  
Hers be the glory.*

*If the spheares senselesse doo yet hold a musique,  
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,  
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,  
Yeldeth a lutes tune.*

*Are then humane mindes priviledg'd so meanly,  
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre,  
With the vowe of truth to recorde to all worldes,  
That we be her spoiles?*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Thus not ending, endes the due praise of her praise;  
Fleshly vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,  
Which is helde in love, love it is, that hath joynde  
• Life to this our soule.*

*But if eyes can speake to doo harty errande,  
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to judge of,  
So that eyes message be of her receaved,  
Hope we doo live yet.*

W<sup>H</sup>at exclaiming praises *Basilius* gave to *Zelmanes* songe,  
any man may ghesse, that knowes love is better then a  
paire of spectacles to make every thing seeme greater, which is  
seene through it: and then is it never tongue-tied, where fit  
commendation (whereof womankind is so licorous) is offered  
unto it. Yea; he fel prostrate on the ground, and thanked the  
Gods, they had preserved his life so long, as to heare the very  
musique they themselves used, in an earthly body. But the  
wasting of the torches served as a watch unto them, to make  
them see the time waste; and therefore the King (though un-  
willing) rose from the seate, which he thought excellently settled  
on the one side: and considering *Zelmanes* late hurte, perswaded  
her to take that farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides  
they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of  
death.

*The end of the first Booke.*

# THE SECOND BOOKE

## OF THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

### CHAP. I.

*The love-complaintes <sup>1</sup>of Gynecia, <sup>2</sup>Zelmane, <sup>3</sup>and Basilius.  
<sup>4</sup>Her, <sup>5</sup>and his wooing of Zelmane, and her shifting of  
both, <sup>6</sup>to bemoane her selfe.*

**I**N these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the cup of poison (which was deeply tasted of this noble companie) had left no sinewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet never manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angerly, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of lovers) had no sooner given place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames upon the tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull *Gynecia* (to whom rest was no ease) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places those deserts were full of, going up and downe with such unquiet motions, as a grieved & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered unto the eies of her judgement the evils she was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting upon them: she felt the terrou[r]s of her owne conscience: she was guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The uttermost of the good she could aspire unto, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her evils was, that she was wise to see her evils. In so much, that having a great while throwne her coütenaunce ghastly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting up her watrie eyes to heaven, O Sunne (said she) whose unspotted light directs the steps of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy presence to such a dust-creeping worme as I am? O you heavens (which continually keepe the course allotted unto you) can none of

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

your influences prevaile so much upon the miserable *Gynecia*, as to make her preserve a course so lög embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my hart can people you with wild ravenous beastes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart never but a vaine name, and no essentiall thing, which hast thus left thy professed servant, when she had most need of thy lovely presence? O imperfect proportiō of reason, which cā too much forsee, & too little prevent. Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, & my evill deserving doth exceed my evill fortune. For nothing els did my husband take this straunge resolutiō to live so solitarily: for nothing els have the winds delivered this straunge guest to my country: for nothing els have the destinies reserved my life to this time, but that only I (most wretched I) should become a plague to my selfe, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my desire (how unjust so ever it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths folowed it, and every death were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not my sepulcher receive me without some contentment. But alas, though sure I am, that *Zelmane* is such as can answere my love; yet as sure I am, that this disguising must needs come for some foretakē cōcept. And then, wretched *Gynecia*, where cāst thou find any smal groūd-plot for hope to dwel upon? No, no, it is *Philoclea* his hart is set upon: it is my daughter I have borne to supplant me. But if it be so, the life I have given thee (ungratefull *Philoclea*) I will sooner with these handes bereave thee of, then my birth shall glory, she hath  
 “bereaved me of my desires. In shame there is no cōfort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

- 2 Having spokē thus, she began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when she might heare (not far frō her) an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering note, that she could not conceave the wordes distinctly. But  
 “(as a lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find some cōpaniō of her misery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a nūber of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid

she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to understand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceave a Lute excellently well played upon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

**I***N vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende  
With flowing teares your fault of hasty sight :  
(Since to my hart her shape you so did sende ;  
That her I see, though you did lose your light.*

*In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burnd,  
With sighes you seeke to coole your hotte desire :  
Since sighes (into mine inward forpance turnd)  
For bellowes serve to kindle more the fire.*

*Reason, in vaine (now you have lost my hart)  
My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte :  
Since there mine eyes have played so false a parte,  
That to your strength your foes have sure resorte.  
Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,  
To this strange death I vainely yeeld my life.*

The ending of the song served but for a beginning of new complaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heavy a burthē of cares) was faine to discharge it self of al sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in al sortes of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had evill joined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiv'd to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my joyfull minde then receive every thing to a joyful consideration, then my carefull mind now makes ech thing tast like the bitter juyce of care. The evill is inward, my Lute, the evill is inward; which all thou doost doth serve but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cause I finde of thinking, but lesse of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leave thy master, since he is not afraide to forsake himselfe.

4 And thus much spokẽ (in steed of a conclusion) was closed up with so hartly a groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could serve fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodaine astonishment. *Zelmane* fearing, least shee had heard some part of those complaints, which shee had risen up that morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe. But *Gynecia* a great while stode still, with a kind of dull amasement, looking stedfastly upon her: at length returning to some use of her selfe, shee began to aske *Zelmane*, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened some great flood-gate of sorrow (wherof her heart could not abide the violẽt issue) she sanke to the ground, with her hands over her face, crying vehemently, *Zelmane* helpe me, O *Zelmane* have pittie on me. *Zelmane* ranne to her, marvelling what sodaine sicknesse had thus possessed her: and beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offering her service to be employed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly upon her, pricked with the flames of love, and the torments of her owne conscience: O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poyson? Or wilt thou doo me service, which hast alredie brought me into eternall slaverie? *Zelmane* then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fitte. Retire my selfe? (said *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (unfortunate guest) camest to draw me from my selfe; blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counsaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee judge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mischief. *Zelmane* the more astonished, the more she understood her, Madam (said she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered *Gynecia*, what

shall I say more? Take pittie of me, O *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell.

*Zelmane* was much troubled with that word, finding her selfe 3 brought to this streight. But as shee was thinking what to answer her; they might see olde *Basilus* passe harde by them, without ever seeing them: complayning likewise of love verie freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Love having renewed both his invention, and voyce.

**L** *Et not old age disgrace my high desire,  
O heavenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:  
Old wood inflam'de, doth yeeld the bravest fire,  
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.*

*Ne let white haire, which on my face doo grow,  
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull bewe:  
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest show,  
Which makes all eyes doo honour unto you.*

*Old age is wise and full of constant truth;  
Old age well stayed from raunging humor lives:  
Old age hath knowne what ever was in youth:  
Old age orecome, the greater honour gives.  
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,  
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.*

Which being done, he looked verie curiously upon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had said, his strength had not yet forsaken him. But *Zelmane* having in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answer; looking upon *Gynecia*, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an *Amazon*, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be used. If my service may please you, imploy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me. Alas *Zelmane* (said *Gynecia*) I perceive you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true lover. There is no one beame of those thoughts you have planted in me, but is able discerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of love into violent

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

extremities. Nowe was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceived his wife and mistres together: so that framing the most lovely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for having entertained *Zelmane*,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certain matters of estate to impart to the Ladie *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with jelousie in that point) obeyed the kings commaundement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all loving meanes to winne *Zelmane*, so she would stirre up terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an overthrow given to her best resolutions, that even her bodie (where the field was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sicknesse waite upon the triumph of passion; which the more it prevailed in her, the more it made her jelousie watchfull, both over her daughter, and *Zelmane*; having ever one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as *Basilus* was ridde of his wives presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre up againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie; which can make old age come to aske counsaile of youth; and a Prince uncōquered, to become a slave to a stranger. And whē you see that power of yours, love that at lest in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loved. Worthy Prince (answered *Zelmane*, taking him up from his kneeling) both your manner, and your speech are so straunge unto me, as I know not how to answere it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shal never displease me, since my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse, as to heare you, they shall convey your words to such a mind, which is with the humblest degree of reverēce to receive them. I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said *Zelmane*,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which may bring my honor into question. And therewith, with a brave counterfeited scorne she departed from the king; leaving him not so sorie for his short answere, as proud in



himself that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with those thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making more of himselfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would have growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But *Zelmane* being ridde of this loving, but little-loved company, Alas (said she) poore *Pyrocles*, was there ever one, but I, that had received wrong, and could blame no body? that having more then I desire, am still in want of that I woulde? Truly Love, I must needes say thus much on thy behalfe; thou hast imployed my love there, where all love is deserved; and for recompence hast sent me more love then ever I desired. But what wilt thou doo *Pyrocles*? which way canst thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I live in darkenesse: and to her am revealed, from whom I would be most secret. What shift shall I finde against the diligent love of *Basilus*? what shield against the violent passions of *Gynecia*? And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, well, sweete *Philoclea*, my whole confidence must be builded in thy divine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I have received by you.

## CHAP. 2.

<sup>1</sup>*Dametas his enstructing of Dorus.* <sup>2</sup>*Zelmanes discourse to Dorus of her difficulties;* <sup>3</sup>*And his to her of his successe in love.* <sup>4</sup>*His love-suits made to Mopsa, meant to Pamela: with their answers.*

But as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieve them, & yet having company do find it noysome; changing willingly outward objects, when indeed the evill is inward: So poore *Zelmane* was no more weery of *Basilus*, then she was of her selfe, when *Basilus* was gone: and ever the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her owne judges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her friende *Dorus*; that upon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

sorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches she found *Dorus*, apparelled in flanen, with a goats skin cast upon him, & a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres leaves on his head, wayting on his master *Dametas*, who at that time was teching him how with his sheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a litle clod at any one that strayed out of cōpanie. And while *Dorus* was practising, one might see *Dametas* hold his hand under his girdle behind him, nodding from the wast upwards, & swearing he never knew man go more aukewardly to worke: & that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he never saw more unfeatlíe fellowes, then great clearks were.

- 2 But *Zelmanes* comming saved *Dorus* from further chiding. And so she beginning to speake with him of the number of his masters sheepe, and which Province of *Arcadia* bare the finest wooll, drewe him on to follow her in such cōtrie discourses, till (being out of *Dametas* hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her harte would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared unto him, upon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort upon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, saving so much worse, as continuance of evill dooth in it selfe increase evill. Alas my *Dorus* (said she) thou seest how long and languishingly the weekes are paste over us since our laste talking. And yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the insupportablenes of her desires, that *Dorus* eares (not able to shew what woundes that discourse gave unto them) procured his eyes with teares to give testimonie, how much they suffered for her suffering: till passion (a most cumbersome guest to it selfe) made *Zelmane* (the sooner to shake it of) earnestly intreate *Dorus*, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mapped of his little worlde, upon her; that she might see, whether it were troubled with such unhabitable climes of colde despaires, and hotte rages, as hers was. And so walking under a fewe Palme trees, (which being loving in their own nature, seemed to give their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of love) *Dorus* thus entred to the description of his fortune.

Alas (said he) deare Cosin, that it hath pleased the high <sup>3</sup> powers to throwe us to such an estate, as the onely entercourse of our true friendshippe, must be a bartring of miseries. For my parte, I must confesse indeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is deprived: or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selfe utterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serve in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the service I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princesse (in whom indeede statelines shines through courtesie) to let fall some gracious looke upon me. Sometimes to see my exercises, sometimes to heare my songes. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable *Pamela*, see how much extraordinarie devotion I bare to her service: and withall, strave to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, joyned to so great affection, might prevaile something in the wisest Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepheards service was but considered of as from a shepherd, and the acceptation limited to no further proportion, then of a good servant. And when my countenance had once given notice, that there lay affection under it, I sawe straight, Majesty (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sworde of just disdaine, that I remayned as a man thunder-stricken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowen, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspitiousnes of *Dametas*, *Miso*, and my young Mistresse, *Mopsa*. For, *Dametas* (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wise, then by suspecting every thing in his way. Which suspicion *Miso* (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and *Mopsa* (for a very unlikely envie she hath stumbled upon, against the Princesses unspeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my service by this meanes lightlie

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe unknowne) remayned no fuller of desire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desire. Which (alas) if these trees could speak, they might well witnesse. For, many times have I stooode here, bewailing my selfe unto them: many times have I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the blessednes of it, that coulede beare Love without sence of paine. Many times, when my masters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his love. But how? with proud lookes, and joyfulness. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom witte (which should be the governer of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inherite her blessings quietly; we, like bastards, are layd abroad, even as foundlings to be trayned up by griefe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their sences are letted from enjoying their objects: we have the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truly in such cogitatiōs have I somtimes so long stood, that me thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with such a darkenes and heavines of minde, that I might easilie have bene perswaded to have resigned over my very essence. But Love, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giveth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pulled up my harte to remēber, that nothing is atchieved before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying still doth never goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or never, to sharpen my invention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterprise; never ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other; how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at last, I lighted and resolved on this way, which yet perchaunce you will think was a way rather to hide it.

- 4 I began to counterfeite the extremest love towards *Mopsa*, that might be: and as for the love, so lively it was indeed within me, (although to another subject) that litle I needed to counterfait any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld *Pamelas* fayrenesse, still looking on *Mopsa*, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but *Mopsa*: to *Mopsa* my attendance was directed: to *Mopsa* the best fruites I coulede gather were

brought: to *Mopsa* it seemed still that mine eye conveyed my tongue. So that *Mopsa* was my saying; *Mopsa* was my singing; *Mopsa*, (that is onely suteable in laying a foule complexion upon a filthy favour; setting foorth both in sluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, she the blessing of mine eyes, she the overthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my overthrowe; she the sweetnesse of my harte, even sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew upon me. In summe, what soever I thought of *Pamela*, that I saide of *Mopsa*; whereby as I gatte my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing lest I should winne the Princesse favour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanelly soever she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of *Mopsaes* worthinesse, she perceived well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tel (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne love, and estate, finding *Mopsa* (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with *Pamela*, I came in unto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of clowdy fancies, tooke a harpe, and songe this songe.

*Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight,  
That in your sight they fixed have my braine;  
Since so my harte is filled with that light,  
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;*

*Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,  
That where you are no wished good can want;  
(Since so your living image lives in me,  
That in my selfe your selfe true love doth plant;  
How can you him unworthy then decree,  
In whose chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?*

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the midst with grievous sighes, which overtooke every verse I sange, I let fall my harpe frō me; & casting my eie sometime

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

upon *Mopsa*, but setting my sight principally upon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune most bewtiful *Mopsa* (said I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid upon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of cruelty against me? Alas excellent *Mopsa*, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subject, and the heavenly Sunne disdaines not to give light to the smallest worme. O *Mopsa*, *Mopsa*, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is uncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well countervaille the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet uniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that al these are but ornamēts of that divine sparke within you, which being descēded from heaven could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercifulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule devoted to those perfections. *Mopsa* (who already had had a certaine smacking towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most cōmonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you jest with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the ever-pleasing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe *Mopsa* to her parte) was cōtent to urge a little further of me. Maister *Dorus* (said the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopsa* to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers servaunt; since she is not worthy to be loved, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staid a good while after her words, in hope she would have continued her speech (so great a delight I receaved in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all over my body) I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely

rebellious handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you have a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (even at his death) have leave to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I love, as the feeling of them cannot come into any unnoble hart; shall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted up to such a height, be counted base? O let not an excellent spirit doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loved; there can be any unworthinesse, since the weakest mist is not easilier driven away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gracious *Pamela*) but that the love you beare to *Mopsa*, hath brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and that consideration may have made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But even that then (you must confesse) you have received of her, and so are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to presse any further, till you bring something of your owne wherby to claime it. And truely *Dorus*, I must in *Mopsaes* behalfe say thus much to you, that if her beauties have so overtaken you, it becomes a true Love to have your harte more set upon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said *Mopsa*, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes upon me) you have even touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the pollicie that I had used, had at lest wise procured thus much happinesse unto me, as that I might even in my Ladies presence, discover the sore which had deeply festered within me, and that she could better conceive my reasons applied to *Mopsa*, then she would have vouchsafed them, whilst her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, using this fit occasion of *Pameleas* wit, and *Mopsaes* ignorance. Therefore with an humble pearcing eye, looking upon *Pamela*, as if I had rather bene cōdemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to *Mopsa*, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire *Mopsa* (said I) well doo I finde by

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the wise knitting together of your answere, that any disputatiō I can use is asmuch too weake, as I unworthy. I find my love shalbe proved no love, without I leue to love, being too unfit a vessell in whō so high thoughts should be engraved. Yet since the Love I beare you, hath so joyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one cānot depart, but that th'other will follow, before I seeke to obey you in making my last passage, let me know which is my unworthines, either of mind, estate, or both? *Mopsa* was about to say, in neither; for her hart I thinke tūbled with over much kindnesse, when *Pamela* with a more favourable countenance thē before (finding how apt I was to fall into dispaire) told me, I might therein have answered my selfe; for besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of *Mopsaes* perfectiōs had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deserved great allowance. But *Dorus* (sayd she) you must be so farre maister of your love, as to consider, that since the judgement of the world stands upon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to have regardfull eie to mens judgements, it is not for us to play the philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise prince would be coūted wisdome, in us wil be taken for a light-grounded affectiō: so is not one thing, one, done by divers persons. There is no man in a burning fever feeles so great contentmēt in cold water greedily received (which assoone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronouced words; & newly, & more violētly againe enflamed, assoone as she had closed up her delightfull speach, with no lesse wel graced silence. But remēbring in my self that aswell the Souldier dieth which standeth still, as he that gives the bravest onset: & seeing that to the making up of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel witnessing how deeply my soule was possessed, & with the most submissive behavior, that a thralld hart could expresse, evē as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at lēgh spake to this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princesse (said I) & do not then your owne sweet words sufficiētly testifie, that there was never mā could have a juster actiō against filthy fortune, thē I, since all other things being granted me, her blindnesse is my onely let?



O heavly God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to discern my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured Lady, if my miserable speeches have not already cloied you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes; let me reply thus much further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a storie, which happened in this same country long since (for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like upon him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a mightie Princesse. *Pamela* gratusly harkened, and I told my tale in this sort.

## CHAP. 3.

*Dorus-his tale of his owne <sup>1</sup>education, <sup>2</sup>travaile, <sup>3</sup>enamoring, <sup>4</sup>metamorphosing, <sup>5</sup>saving from sea, <sup>6</sup>and being Musidorus. <sup>7</sup>His octave. <sup>8</sup>Pamelas and Mopsas answeare to his suit. <sup>9</sup>His present to them; <sup>10</sup>and perplexitie in himselfe.*

IN the countrie of *Thessalia*, (alas why name I that accursed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I must) in *Thessalia* (I say) there was (well may I say, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, whō bondage wholly possessed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named *Musidorus*. O *Musidorus*, *Musidorus*; but to what serve exclamations, where there are no eares to receive the sounde? This *Musidorus*, being yet in the tendrest age, his worthy father paid to nature (with a violent death) her last dueties, leaving his childe to the faith of his friends, and the prooffe of time: death gave him not such pangs as the foresight-full care hee had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could have seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sonnes miseries, which his knowledge could neither have prevented, nor relieved. The young *Musidorus* (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, deprived of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselves for a

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

greater mischief) lulled up in as much good luck, as the heedfull love of his dolefull mother, and the flourishing estate of his country could breed unto him.

- 2 But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I thinke there was a conspiracy in all heavenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him unto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in foretime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloved Prince, experience by travaile: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the joy of looking upon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowhead life, desiring the same her subjectes did, for the increase of her sonnes worthinesse. And here-to did *Musidorus* owne vertue (see how vertue can be a minister to mischief) sufficiently provoke him: for indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likenesse of our mishaps makes me presume to patterne my selfe unto him) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this together, was his uncle the king of *Macedon*; who having lately before gottẽ such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought up together, to avoid the warres, with *Musidorus*) and for *Musidorus* himselfe, that his joy might be the more full, having such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, till *Pamela* shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfie the king, tooke their way by sea, towards *Thrace*, whether they would needs go with a Navie to succour him: he being at that time before *Bizantium* with a mighty Army beseeing it; where, at that time his court was. But when the conspired heavens had gotten this Subject of their wrath upon so fit a place as the sea was, they streight began to breath out in boystrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Navie, he onely with the Prince his cosin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would have guided them. O cruell winds in your unconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life

for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful mishaps fell to the young Prince of *Macedon* his cosen, I should too much fill your eares with strange horrors; neither will I stay upon those laborsome advētures, nor loathsome misadventures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speach hastneth it self to come to the ful-point of *Musidorus* his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestilēt diseases do gather into themselves al the infirmitie, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace in the extremitie of it self all his former mischiefes.

*Arcadia*, *Arcadia* was the place prepared to be the stage of 3 his endlesse overthrow. *Arcadia* was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for ever should be enchaunted. For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heavenly beauty hath to throw it downe to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the *Arcadian* Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed so all his hopes of joy, and joyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleeve, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they cā be understood; no outward utterance can command a conceipt. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captived wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he cloathed himselfe in a shepherds 4 weede, that under the basenesse of that forme, he might at lest have free accesse to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate up his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this estate is not alwayes to be rejected, since under that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast up his eyes to the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I have, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon therfore, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be understood, I have said enough,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

for the defence of my basenesse; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their owne workemanship.

5 Thus having delivered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse might judge that he ment himselfe, who spake so feelingly; her aunswere was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? she hath heard heretofore of us both, by meanes of the valiant prince *Plangus*, and particularly of our casting away: which she (following my owne stile) thus delicately brought foorth. You have told (said she) *Dorus*, a prettie tale; but you are much deceived in the latter end of it. For the prince *Musidorus* with his cosen *Pyrocles* did both perish upon the coast of *Laconia*; as a noble gentleman, called *Plangus* (who was well acquainted with the historie) did assure my father. O how that speach of hers did poure joyes in my hart? ô blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou hast bene in that toong, and passed through those lips, though I can never hope to approch them. As for *Pyrocles* (said I) I will not denie it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspition might arise of your being, then your selfe would have it) and yet affirmed no lye unto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it. But for *Musidorus* (said I) I perceiue indeed you have neither heard or read the story of that unhappy Prince; for this was the verie objection, which that peerelesse Princesse did make unto him, whē he sought to appeare such as he was before her wisdom: and thus as I have read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might answere her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a treason was perished, and therefore that *Plangus* might easily be deceived: but that he himselfe was cast upon the coast of *Laconia*, where he was taken up by a couple of shepheards, who lived in those dayes famous; for that both loving one faire maide, they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was song before you by the shepheard *Lamon*, and brought by them to a noble-mans house, neere *Mantineia*, whose sonne had a little before his mariage, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, *Musidorus* (though naming himselfe by another name) was delivered. Now these circumlocutions I did use, because of the one side I

knewe the Princesse would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the other, if I should have named *Strephon*, *Claius*, *Kalander*, and *Glitophon*, perhappes it would have rubd some conjecture into the heavie heade of Mistresse *Mopsa*.

And therefore (said I) most divine Lady, he justly was to 6 argue against such suspitions; that the Prince might easily by those parties be satisfied, that upon that wrack such a one was taken up: and therefore that *Plangus* might well erre, who knew not of anies taking up againe: that he that was so preserved, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two since *Plangus* knew to be *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, he must needes be one of them, although (as I said) upon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needes judge, that no lesse then a Prince durst undertake such an enterprise, which (though he might gette the favour of the Princesse) he could never defend with lesse thē a Princes power, against the force of *Arcadia*. Lastly, (said he) for a certaine demonstration, he presumed to shew unto the Princesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare *Mopsa*: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may ascertaine her selfe, that I am *Menalcas* brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into *Thessalia*, secretly to be advertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince *Musidorus*. Doo you not know further (saide she, with a settled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for even here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke upon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind of shepherd I was, I took up my Harpe, and sang these few verses.

**M***Y* sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve: 7  
 Their pasture is faire billes of fruitlesse Love:  
 On barren sweetes they feede, and feeding sterue:  
 I waile their lotte, but will not other prove.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*My sheepehooke is wanne hope, which all upholdes :*

*My weedes, Desire, cut out in endlesse foldes.*

*What wooll my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they live,  
In you it is, you must the judgement give.*

And then, partly to bring *Mopsa* againe to the matter (lest she should too much take heed to our discourses) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answeres, I kneeled downe to the Princesse, and humblie besought her to move *Mopsa* in my behalfe, that she would unarme her hart of that steely resistāce against the sweet blowes of Love: that since all her parts were decked with some particular ornamēt; her face with beautie, her head with wisdome, her eyes with majestie, her countenance with gracefulness, her lippes with lovelines, her tongue with victorie; that she woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

8 *Pamela*, without shew either of favour or disdaine, either of heeding or neglecting what I had said, turned her speech to *Mopsa*, and with such a voice and action, as might shewe she spake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take heede to your selfe (saide she) *Mopsa*, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely, if he doo fully proove himselfe such as he saith, I mean, the honest shepheard *Menalchas* his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde thinke scorne of him. *Mopsa* though (in my conscience) she were even then farre spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my quaint speeches, she would keepe her honestie close inough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she would steppe never a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole word him selfe, no she would not. But ever and anon turning her muzzell toward me, she threwe such a prospect upon me, as might well have given a surfet to any weake lovers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that drivels speeches among my noble thoughts? but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geve you a ful knowledge, and to leave nothing (that I can remember) unrepeatd.

9 Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from us, I tooke a Jewell, made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did

fitly patterne out my looking to *Mopsa*, but bending to *Pamela*: The word about it was, *By force, not choice*; and still kneeling, besought the Princesse that she would vouchsafe to give it *Mopsa*, and with the blessednes of her hande to make acceptable unto her that toye which I had founde, followinge of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (sayd I) as the earth was turned up, the plow-share lighted upon a great stone: we puld that up, & so found both that, and some other prety thinges which we had devided betwixt us.

*Mopsa* was benumbed with joy when the Princesse gave it 10 her: but in the Princesse I could finde no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calme carelesnesse letting each thing slide, justly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong unto us) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall majestie, is of all others most terrible unto me: for yet if I found she contemned me, I would desperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to overcome it; if she onely misdoubted me, I were in heaven; for quickly I woulde bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of desert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would serve, then I would give her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to favour; gracious, but gracious still after one maner; all her courtesies having this engraven in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties; ever keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayses, nor curses, will spare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heavenlines of hers, (for how so ever my miserie is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach unto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyrannie of despaire, not knowing any way of perswasio, where wisdome seemes to be unsensible. I have appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a device I used with my master, perswading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparel I had provided, and so practise some thing on horsback before *Pamela*, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at *Athens*: my horse indeed was it I had left at *Menalcas* house, and *Dametas* got one by friendship out

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of the Princes stable. But how soever I show, I am no base bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get fome.

## CHAP. 4.

<sup>1</sup> *Basilius his hauking.* <sup>2</sup> *Gynecias hurte by Dametas overturning her coche.* <sup>3</sup> *Her jelousie over Zelmane.* *Philocleas* <sup>4</sup> *love-passions,* <sup>5</sup> *vowe of chastitie,* <sup>6</sup> *revocation,* <sup>7</sup> *lamentation.*

<sup>1</sup> **B**UT as *Dorus* was about to tell further, *Dametas* (who came whistling, & counting upon his fingers, how many loades of hay his seventeen fat oxen eat up in a yeare) desired *Zelmane* from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said *Dorus*, taking his leave) the sum is this, that you may wel find you have beatē your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your sorrow ströger. But *Zelmane* turning her speach to *Dametas*, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I have often conference with your servaunt. In sooth (answered *Dametas* with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may prove wel enough, if he oversoon thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make *Zelmane* find she might have spēt her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne over all the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fiede: while poore *Zelmane* yeelded her eares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answer, till they came to *Basilius*, and *Gynecia*, who attēded for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. *Basilius* and *Gynecia* sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to *Philoclea*. *Zelmane* was moved in her minde, to have kissed their feete for the favour of so blessed a seate: for the narrownesse of the coach made them joine from the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch wherof though it were barred by their envious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an ivorie boxe, will

166



thorow the boxe send forth his imbraced vertue to a beloved needle; so this imparadised neighbourhood made *Zelma*nes soule cleave unto her, both thorow the ivory case of her body, and the apparell which did over-crowd it. All the blood of *Zelma*nes body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastily put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetnes of the beloved guest; her hart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but striving violently (if it had bene possible) to have leapt into the lappe of *Philoclea*. But *Dametas*, even then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to be doctōr of a coach, not a little prowd in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of *Arcadia*, drave the coach (the cover whereof was made with such joints, that as they might (to avoid the weather) pull it up close when they listed, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horsebacke) till upon the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Yeomen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height over certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe unto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule over a river. But the sporte which for that daie *Basilus* would principallie shewe to *Zelma*ne, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting up on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to flie thorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to give example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should show: whē a Jerfaulcon was cast of after her, who streight spying where the pray was, fixing her eie with desire, & guiding her wing by her eie, used no more strēgth then industry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his stayre upright, but winding almost the ful cōpasse about, that the steepnes be the more unsensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursued chase, went circkling, & cōpassing about, rising so with the lesse sence of rising; & yet finding that way scantly serve the greedines of her hast, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

out another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, she would either beate with cruell assaults the Heron, who now was driven to the best defence of force, since flight would not serve; or els clasping with him, come downe together, to be parted by the overpartiall beholders.

2 Divers of which flights *Basilus* shewing to *Zelmane*, thus was the richesse of the time spent, and the day deceased before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating successour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they willed *Dametas* to drive homeward, who (halfe sleeping, halfe musing about the mending of a vine-presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele comming over a great stub of a tree, it overturned the coach. Which though it fell violently upon the side where *Zelmane* & *Gynecia* sat, yet for *Zelmanes* part, she would have bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of *Philoclea*, but that she feared she might receive some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach, saving *Gynecia*, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her shoulder put out of joint; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a fever with him) drave her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

3 But neither was the fever of such impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-sore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the jealousie she conceived of her daughter *Philoclea*, lest this time of her sicknesse might give apt occasion to *Zelmane*, whom she misdoubted. Therefore she called *Philoclea* to her, and though it were late in the night, commaunded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and send *Miso* to her, with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister *Pamela*. The meane while *Gynecia* kepte *Zelmane* with her, because she would be sure, she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced *Zelmane*. *Philoclea* not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete *Philoclea*) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy

memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which having caused in others, thou didst feele in thy selfe.

The sweete minded *Philoclea* was in their degree of well 4 doing, to whom the not knowing of evill serveth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an unspotted simplicitie, then many, who rather cūningly seeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselves the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heavenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the evill, that evill caries with it; so now the *Ladie Philoclea* (whose eyes and senses had receaved nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required; which frō the tender youth had obediently lived under her parents behests, without framing out of her own wil the fore-choosing of any thing) whē now she came to appoint, wherin her judgemēt was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his first tokēs, she was like a yong faune, who cōming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that *Zelmane* had a while lived in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her cōming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conversatiō; her wit & behaviour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, joined with the extreme shewes she made of most devout honouring *Philoclea*, (carying thus in one person the only two bāds of good will, lovelines & lovingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most friēdly affectiō; which when it had gotten so ful possession of the keies of her mind, that it would receive no message frō her senses, without that affection were the interpreter; thē streight grew an exceeding delight stil to be with her, with an unmeasurable liking of al that *Zelmane* did: maters being so turned in her, that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while *Zelmane* was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was *Zelmanes*. Thē followed that most natural effect of cōforming

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be her selfe such an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation upon so much an esteemed authoritie: so that the next degree was to marke all *Zelmanes* dooings, speeches, and fashions, and to take them into herselfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminaltie of Passions, but agreed unto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it self (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thorowly observed. Then grew on that not onely she did imitate the sobernes of her countenance, the gracefulness of her speech, but even their particular gestures: so that as *Zelmane* did often eye her, she would often eye *Zelmane*; & as *Zelmanes* eyes would deliver a submissive, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answer in like pearcing kindnesse of a looke. *Zelmane* as much as *Gynecias* jealousy would suffer, desired to be neere *Philoclea*; *Philoclea*, as much as *Gynecias* jealousy would suffer, desired to be neere *Zelmane*. If *Zelmane* tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnes) shew she was loth to part from it. And if *Zelmane* sighed, she would sigh also; whē *Zelmane* was sad, she deemed it wisdom, and therefore she would be sad too. *Zelmanes* lāguishing coūtenāce with crost armes, and sometimes cast-up eyes, she thought to have an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenāce: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not onely the band, but the service; not only the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in cōtinuāce did finde, that *Zelmanes* friendship was full of impatient desire, having more thē ordinarie limits, & therfore shee was content to second *Zelmane*, though her selfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-love (well considered) have an infective power. At last she fell in acquaintance with loves harbinger, wishing. First she would wish, that they two might live all their lives together, like two of *Dianas* Nimphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nimphes besides them, who also would have their part in *Zelmane*. Thē would she

wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered, that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or *Zelmane* a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displaid his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battaile of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreames by night beganne to bring more unto her, then she durst wish by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to be cured: so the sweete *Philoclea*, while she might prevent it, she did not feele it, now she felt it, when it was past preventing; like a river, no rampiers being built against it, till alreadie it have overflowed. For now indeed, Love puld of his maske, and shewed his face unto her, and told her plainly, that shee was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie coulor was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of palenesse; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne prooffe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error gives so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more jealous her mother was, the more she thought the Jewell precious, which was with so many lookes garded. But that prevailing so far, as to keepe the two lovers from private conference, then began she to feele the sweetnesse of a lovers solitarinesse, when freely with words and gestures, as if *Zelmane* were present, shee might give passage to her thoughts, and so as it were utter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commande-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

ment, with dolefull gestures and uncertaine paces, shee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood; where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set together, as with the shade the moone gave thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of devotion to looke upon it. But true thoughts of love banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade beguiled *Phæbus* of looking upon her: There had she enjoyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

- 5 But the principall cause that invited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the *Silvan* gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before *Zelma*nes comming, had written these words upon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspicion her captivitie made her thinke she lived in. The writing was this.

**Y***ou living powres enclosed in stately shrine  
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield  
Your scepters here, if to your eares divine  
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yeld:  
This vowe receave, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;  
My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.*

*Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present  
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth showe  
My tempred hart; by thee my promise sent  
Unto my selfe let after-livers know.  
No fancy mine, nor others wronge suspect  
Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.*

*O Chastitie, the chiefe of heavenly lightes,  
Which makst us most immortall shape to weare,  
Holde thou my hart, establish thou my sprights:  
To onely thee my constant course I beare.  
Till spotlesse soule unto thy bosome flye,  
Such life to leade, such death I vow to dye.*

But now that her memorie served as an accuser of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the toppes together, as they might seeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceive the goodly stone, which served as an altar in that wooddie devotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaved, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which never receivedst spot but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she have chaunged since. Enjoy, enjoy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would have adjoynd as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

*MY words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde,  
This marble chose, as of like temper knowne:  
But loe, my words defaste, my fancies blinde,  
Blots to the stone, shame to my selfe I finde:  
And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,  
A womans hand with constant marble stone.*

*My words full weake, the marble full of might;  
My words in store, the marble all alone;  
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;  
My words unseene, the marble still in sight,  
May witnesse beare, how ill agree in one,  
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.*

But seeing she could not see meanes to joyne as thẽ this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire length under one of the trees) for a while she did nothing but turne up and downe, as if she had hoped to turne away the fancie that mastred her, and hid her face, as if she could have hidden her selfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whispring note to her selfe; O me unfortunate wretch (said she) what poysonous heates be these, which thus torment me? How hath

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the sight of this strange guest invaded my soule? Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what strength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing betweene her sight and the moone, O *Diana* (said she) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as easily passe away, as you will quickly overcome this let; or els that you were for ever thus darkned, to serve for an excuse of my outrageous folly. Then looking to the starres, which had perfittly as then beautified the cleere skie: My parêts (said she) have told me, that in these faire heavenly bodies, there are great hiddē deities, which have their working in the ebbing & flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars) judge rightly of me, & if I have with wicked intēt made my selfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle lustes I framed my harte fit for such an impression, then let this plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made odious to womankind. But if extreame and unresistable violence have oppressed me, who will ever do any of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot helpe me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish objections (simple *Philoclea*) it is the impossibilitie that dooth torment me: for, unlawfull desires are punished after the effect of enjoying; but impossible desires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times unhappie that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth love; in me despaire should be the bellows of my affection: and of all despaire the most miserable, which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most covetous man longs not to get riches out of a groūd which never can beare any thing; Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heaven; Why? because it is impossible. Alas then, ô Love, why doost thou in thy beautifull sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What doo I, sillie wench, knowe what Love hath prepared for me? Doo I not see my mother, as well, at lest as furiously as my selfe, love *Zelmane*? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible, or els impossible loves neede not



misbecome me. And doo I not see *Zelmane* (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdome and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to love me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes depose it to be true; what then? and if she can love poore me, shall I thinke scorne to love such a woman as *Zelmane*? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou lovest me, excellent *Zelmane*, and I love thee: and with that, embrasing the very grounde whereon she lay, she said to her selfe (for even to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my *Zelmane*, governe and direct me: for I am wholly given over unto thee.

## CHAP. 5.

<sup>1</sup> *The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela.* <sup>2</sup> *Pamelas narration of her shepheardes making love,* <sup>3</sup> *of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe,* <sup>4</sup> *of his hote pursuite, and her colde acceptance.* <sup>5</sup> *His letter.* <sup>6</sup> *Her relenting,* <sup>7</sup> *and Philocleas sole complaint.*

IN this depth of muzes, and divers sorts of discourses, would I she have ravingly remained, but that *Dametas* and *Miso* (who were rounde about to seeke her, understanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; *Dametas* saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or save a chicken from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And *Miso* swearing that if it were her daughter *Mopsa*, she woulde give her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But their jangling made *Philoclea* rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed *Miso* to waite upon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serve her selfe) she went alone up to *Pamelas* chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and joy her thoughts with the sweet conversation of her beloved sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost over the back of it, & looking upon a wax-candle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronk up the teares of her eyes, leaving in steed of them, crimson circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which *Philoclea* finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But *Pamela*, rather seeming sorie that she had perceived so much, then willing to open any further, O my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) who are to me a sister in nature, a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our coütrey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your favour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you love your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I shall not love a sadde *Pamela*, so well as a joyfull? Or be my eares unwoorthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and servant *Philoclea*? These wordes wanne no further of *Pamela*, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impoverished their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of *Venus*: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements; with sweet, though cold kisses; it might seeme that Love was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreshe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But *Philoclea* earnestly againe intreated *Pamela* to open her griefe; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete *Philoclea*, let us talke of some other thing: & tell me whether you did ever see any thing so amèded as our Pastoral sports be, since that *Dorus* came hether? O Love, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? *Philoclea* had straight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (said she) I have often wondred to my selfe how such excellencies could be in so meane a person; but belike Fortune was afraide

to lay her treasures, where they should be staine with so many perfections: onely I marvaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare giftes under such a block as *Dametas*. Ah (said *Pamela*) if you knew the cause: but no more doo I neither; and to say the trueth: but Lord, how are we false to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while *Dametas* reades his rusticke lecture unto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger handsome for his oxen, when to use the goade, & when the voice: giving him rules of a heardmā, though he pretended to make him a shepherd) to see all the while with what a grace (which seemes to set a crowne upon his base estate) he can descend to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serves this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) I have caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disjointed speeches: you love, dissemble no further. It is true (said *Pamela*) now you have it; and with lesse adoo should, if my hart could have thought those words suteable for my mouth. But indeed (my *Philoclea*) take heed: for I thinke Vertue it self is no armour of prooffe against affection. Therefore learne by my example. Alas thought *Philoclea* to her selfe, your sheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then *Pamela* being once set in the streame of her Love,<sup>2</sup> went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet ever waying his meanenes, & so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & ever kept from it (as wel because she shund it, seing and disdaining his mind, as because of her jealous jaylours) he had at length used the finest pollicie that might be in counterfainting love to *Mopsa*, & saying to *Mopsa* what soever he would have her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore *Mopsa* beleve, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shal know my teares come not, neither of repētance nor misery, who thinke you, is my *Dorus* fallen out to be? even the Prince *Musidorus*, famous over all *Asia*, for his heroical enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the straunger *Plangus* told my.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

father; he not being drowned (as *Plangus* thought) though his cousin *Pyrocles* indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or seene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his love was, you would have matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to doo vertuously) can I without the detestable staine of ungratefulnesse abstaine from loving him, who (far exceeding the beautifulnesse of his shape with the beautifulnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become *Dametas* servaunt for my sake? you will say, but how know I him to be *Musidorus*, since the handmaid of wisdom is slow belief? That cōsideratiō did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receive beliefe, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that have I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of cōmon sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would have me send to *Thessalia*: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Love so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For every day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe unto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

- 3 A few daies since, he & *Dametas* had furnished theselves very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see *Dametas*, like rich Tissew furd with lambe skins? But ô how well it did with *Dorus*, to see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me on horseback, making majestie wait upon humblenes? how at the first, standing stil with his eies bent upō me, as though his motiōs were chained to my looke, he so staide till I caused *Mopsa* bid him doo something upon his horse: which no sooner said, but (with a kinde rather of quick gesture, then shew of violēce) you might see him come towards me, beating the groūd in so due time, as no daunce can observe better measure. If you remember the ship we saw once, whē the Sea went hie upon the coast of *Argos*; so went the beast: But he (as if Cētaurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was no more moved, then one is with the going of

his owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both spurres and wande, they seemed rather markes of soveraintie, then instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with most pleasing grace) commāding without threatning, & rather remēbring then chastising, at lest if sometimes he did, it was so stolen, as neyther our eyes could discerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did cōplaine of it, he ever going so just with the horse, either foorth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the turning one might perceive the bridle-hand something gently stir, but indeed so gently, as it did rather distill vertue, then use violence. Him self (which me thinkes is straunge) shewing at one instant both steadines & nimblenes; somtimes making him turne close to the groūd, like a cat, when scratchingly she wheeles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Raven leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of *Dametas* kiddes bound over the hillocks: and all so done, as neither the lustie kinde shewed any roughnesse, nor the easier any idlenesse: but still like a well obeyed maister, whose becke is enough for a discipline, ever concluding ech thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sporte was to see *Dametas*, how he was tost from the saddle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giving his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before he had ever said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as brave a courtier as the best, so now brused with prooffe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisdom, to put himselfe under the tuition of a beast; so as *Dorus* was fayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at lest my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, the descending it a little downe, the getting of it up into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at lest (if they were divers motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was ever in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed *Dametas* found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

4 But how delightfull soever it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it never went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppress it, or at lest to conceale it. Indeed I must confesse, as some Physitions have tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; so truly the colde ashes layed upon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my brest swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often have the teares, I drave backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore *Dorus*? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) could carry unto him no other newes, but discomfutable. I thinke no day past, but by some one invention he would appeare unto me to testifie his love. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexteritie?) I thinke to make me see, that he had bene brought up in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play *Priamus* while he plaide *Paris*. Thinke (sweet *Philoclea*) what a *Priamus* we had: but truly, my *Paris* was a *Paris*, and more then a *Paris*: who while in a savage apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made love to *Oenone*, you might wel see by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felte the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet *Philoclea*) did you ever see such a shepheard? tell me, did you ever heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or unworthy assaulte have conquered me. Truly I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But since my parents deale so cruelly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my owne judgement. Yet hetherto have my lookes bene as I told you, which continuing after many of these his fruitles trials, have wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that worde she laid her hand upon her quaking side) I doo not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drewe she the curtaine and tooke the letter from under the pillowe) which to daie (with an afflicted humblenesse) he delivered me, pretending before *Mopsa*, that I should read it unto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomack; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

Most blessed paper, which shalt kisse that hād, where to 5  
 al blessednes is in nature a servāt, do not yet disdain  
 to cary with thee the woful words of a miser now despairing:  
 neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the base title of  
 the sender. For no sooner shal that divine hande touch thee,  
 but that thy basenesse shall be turned to most hie preferment.  
 Therefore mourne boldly my Inke; for while she lookes upō  
 you, your blacknes wil shine: crie out boldly my Lamētatiō;  
 for while she reads you, your cries wil be musicke. Say then  
 (O happy messenger of a most unhappy message) that the too  
 soone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake,  
 no not looke, no not scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe,  
 unto her heavenly highnesse) onely presumes to desire thee (in  
 the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and in  
 this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but  
 of him. Thus much unto her sacred judgement: O you, the  
 onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admira-  
 tion, you that being armed by Love, defie him that armed you,  
 in this high estate wherein you have placed me, yet let me  
 remember him to whom I am bound for bringing me to your  
 presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours,  
 how meane so ever it be) it is reasō you have an account of  
 him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing  
 steppes runnes fast to his grave, and will you suffer a temple (how  
 poorely-built soever, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be  
 rased? But he dyeth: it is most true, he dyeth; and he in  
 whom you live, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he  
 plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong,  
 which he hath received. He dyes, because in wofull language  
 all his senses tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you  
 will not that he live, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth  
 of the most ruined *Dorus*, but his ende? Ende then, evill  
 destinyed *Dorus*, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it  
 suffiseth her wisdomē to know, that her heavenly will shalbe  
 accomplished.

O my *Philoclea*, is hee a person to write these words? and 6  
 are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene,  
 when with trembling hand he had delivered it, how hee went  
 away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to  
 his sepulcher. Two times I must confesse I was about to take

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him ever since hath put me into such perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) leave sorrow. The river of your teares will soone loose his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to stitch up his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-grieved mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in *Pamelaes* faire weeping eyes.

- 5 Which when *Philoclea* found, wringing her hands, O me (said she) indeed the onely subject of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more unfortunate, then my sisters greatest unfortunatenesse. Alas shee weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weepe because I can never be happie; her teares flow from pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not envie thee, deare *Pamela*, I do not envy thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

### CHAP. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *The Ladies uprising,* <sup>2</sup> *and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus.* <sup>3</sup> *His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies,* <sup>4</sup> *his entry on a most corrupt estate,* <sup>5</sup> *and reformation thereof by royall arts and aētions.* <sup>6</sup> *His, and Dorilaus crosse-mariage to ech others sister, having by ech a sonne; their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.*

**B**<sup>U</sup>t the darkenesse of sorrow overshadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselves under the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked frō dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent unto. For then they were called up by *Miso*; who having bene with *Gynecia*, had received commaundement to be continually with her



daughters, and particularly not to let *Zelma* and *Philoclea* have any private cōferēce, but that she should be present to heare what passed. But *Miso* having now her authoritie encreased, came with skowling eyes to deliver a slaving good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would have made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainment, and obeying her direction, covered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as *Pamela* was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of *Dorus* giving a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (lively imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to *Mopsa*, and willed her to fetch *Dorus* to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further judgement of him, before she would move *Dametis* to graunt her in mariage unto him. *Mopsa* (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with *Dorus* to *Pamela*, who entended both by speaking with him to give some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which although fame had already delivered unto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to have it from so beloved an historian. Yet the sweetness of vertues disposition jealous, even over it selfe, suffred her not to enter abruptlie into questions of *Musidorus* (whom she was halfe ashamed she did love so well, and more then halfe sorie she could love no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of *Pyrocles*, and his vertuous father: which thus she did. ✓ 23

*Dorus* (said she) you told me the last day, that *Plangus* was 2 deceived in that he affirmed the Prince *Musidorus* was drowned: but withall, you confessed his cosen *Pyrocles* perished; of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I have heard) he was a young Prince, of whō al mē expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceived. Most excellent Ladie (said *Dorus*) no expectatiō in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, thē to be thought worthy to be praised by your judgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no 34

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

meanes get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leaving your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subject of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of shape most lovely, and yet of mind more lovely; valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete *Pyrocles*, excellent *Pyrocles*, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequethed to him that ever must have thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might have found some more gracious acceptance, with that he imprisoned his looke for a while upon *Mopsa*, who thereupon fell into a verie wide smiling. Truly (said *Pamela*) *Dorus* I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as *Pyrocles* was. Who shootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall never hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shoote higher, then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you *Dorus* (said she) tell me (since I perceave you are well acquainted with that storie) what Prince was that *Euarchus* father to *Pyrocles*, of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then so descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and losse: and therein you may (if you list) say something of that same *Musidorus* his cosen, because, they going together, the story of *Pyrocles* (which I onely desire) may be the better understood.

- 3 Incomparable Lady (said he) your commandement doth not onely give me the wil, but the power to obey you, such influence hath your excellencie. And first, for that famous King *Euarchus*, he was (at this time you speake off) King of *Macedon*, a kingdome, which in elder time had such a soveraintie over all the provinces of *Greece*, that evē the particular kings therin did acknowledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest, even this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of *Arcadia*. But he, whē he came to his crowne, finding by his later ancestors either negligēce, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those duties had bin intermitted, would never stirre up old

titles (how apparant soever) whereby the publike peace (with the losse of manie not guiltie soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heavens had placed him, shewēd no lesse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despising, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath since borne enow bleeding witnessses, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was most wise to see what was best, and most just in the perfourming what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrary: so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatning upon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loved greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercise his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the more goodly by a grave majestie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward graces; strong of body, and so much the stronger, as he by a well disciplined exercise taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew *Musidorus* tooke on such shepherdish apparell for the love of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whose 4 father & grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his estate, when he came to age (which allowed his authoritie) so disjoynted even in the noblest & strongest lims of governmēt, that the name of a King was growne evē odious to the people, his authority having bin abused by those great Lords, & litle kings: who in those betweene-times of raigning (by unjust favouring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing them that would defende their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then seene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of *Oligarchie*; that is, whē men are governed in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they having the power of kinges, but not the nature of kings, used the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a yeere they shal goe out: making the Kinges sworde strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loved: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serve to undermine the Royall soveraintie. For the Subjectes could taste no sweeter fruites of

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

having a King, then grievous taxations to serve vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to prevent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priviledged place of unbrideled licentiousnes, then as a bidding of him, who as a father, should give a fatherly example unto his people. Hence grew a very dissolution of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition never satisfied) grew factious among themselves: and the underlings, glad indeede to be underlings to them they hated lest, to preserve them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, lest their shining should discover the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nusled in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformation; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els, by the custome of selfe-guiltie evill, glad to change though oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and so townes decayed for want of just and naturall libertie; offices, even of judging soules, solde; publique defences neglected; and in summe, (lest too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the most wrie course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

- 5 In this, and a much worse plight then it is fitte to trouble your excellent eares withal, did the King *Euarchus* finde his estate, when he tooke upon him the regiment: which by reason of the long streame of abuse, he was forced to establish by some even extreme severitie, not so much for the very faultes themselves, (which he rather sought to prevent then to punish) as for the faultie ones; who strong, even in their faultes, scorned his youth, and coulde not learne to digest, that the man which they so long had used to maske their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundred a duetie into the subjects hartes, he soone shewed, no basenes of suspition, nor the basest basenes of envie, could any whit rule such a Ruler. But then shined forth indeede all love among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by justice, did make that love most lovely: his first & principall care being to appeare unto his people, such as he would have them be, & to be such as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his actions arising

out of his deedes. So that within small time, he wanne a singular love in his people, and engrafted singular confidence. For how could they chuse but love him, whom they found so truely to love thẽ? He even in reason disdayning, that they that have charge of beastes, should love their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to governe the most excellent creature, should not love so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to builde upon false grounds of government) make themselves (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their estate goes hiest when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselves most Kinges, when the subject is most basely subjected: he contrariwise, vertuously and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himselfe was the head; even so cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: never restrayning their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not imployed to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, brought that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their love he had all. In summe (peerelesse Princesse) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of government, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sorte he flourished in the sweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an action of leaving his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of justice.

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (lest I should too easilie 6 fall to partiall prayses of her) of whom it may be justly said, that she was no unfit brāch to the noble stock wherof she came. Her he had given in mariage to *Dorilaus*, Prince of *Thessalia*, not so much to make a frēdship, as to cōfirm the frēdship betwixt their posteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, *Dorilaus* could neede no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who hath not heard (said *Pamela*) of the valiāt, wise, and just *Dorilaus*, whose unripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares frō vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to speak of nothing with greater admiration, then of the

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

notable friendshippe (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was observed to the last, of those two excellent men. But (said she) goe on I pray you. *Dorilaus* (said he) having married his sister, had his mariage in short time blest (for so are folke woont to say, how unhappie soever the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named *Musidorus*: of whom I must needes first speake before I come to *Pyrocles*; because as he was borne first, so upon his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was *Musidorus* made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that childe; whether the heavens at that time listed to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as even at times to borrow the face of Divinitie. But certainly, so did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (even descending to particularities, what kingdoms he should overcome) that the King of *Phrygia* (who over-superstitiously thought him selfe touched in the matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to prevent his after-expectations: because a skilful man (having compared his nativity with the child) so told him. Foolish mā, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it were a worke of the superiour powers, the heavens at length are never children. But so he did, & by the aid of the Kings of *Lydia* and *Crete* (joining together their armies) invaded *Thessalia*, & brought *Dorilaus* to some behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother *Euarchus* came so mightily to his succour, that with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a just war, the best child, peace. In which time *Euarchus* made a crosse mariage also with *Dorilaus* his sister, & shortly left her with child of the famous *Pyrocles*, driven to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of *Thrace*, & his brother, King of *Pannonia*, had invaded. The successe of those warres was too notable to be unknowne to your eares, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to come unto. But there was *Dorilaus* (valiantly requiting his friēds helpe) in a great battaile deprived of his life, his obsequies being no more solēnised by the teares of his par-

takers, thē the bloud of his enimies; with so pearcing a sorrow to the constant hart of *Euarchus*, that the newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of comfort, although al the comfort that might be in a child, truth it selfe in him forthwith delivered. For what fortune onely southsayers foretold of *Musidorus*, that all men might see prognosticated in *Pyrocles*; both Heavens & Earth giving tokēs of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfectiō in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely love was threatned, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and haven of their best yeares. But as death may have prevented *Pyrocles*, so unworthinesse must be the death to *Musidorus*.

## CHAP. 7.

<sup>1</sup>*The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus.* <sup>2</sup>*Their friendship,*  
<sup>3</sup>*navigation,* <sup>4</sup>*and first shipwracke.* <sup>5</sup>*The straunge gratitude*  
*of two brothers to them, upon their liberalitie to those two*  
*brothers.*

**B**UT the mother of *Pyrocles* (shortly after her childe-birth) <sup>1</sup>dying, was cause that *Euarchus* recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & those evil neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that *Pyrocles* taught admiration to the hardest conceats: *Musidorus* (perchaunce because among his subjectes) exceedingly beloved: and by the good order of *Euarchus* (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought up, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in thē, were so blowne to give forth their uttermost heate that justly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew thē. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receave cōceits not unworthy of the best speakers: excellent devises being used, to make even their sports profitable; images of battailes, & fortifi-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

catiōs being then delivered to their memory, which after, their stronger judgemēts might dispens, the delight of tales being cōverted to the knowledge of al the stories of worthy Princes, both to move them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Grāmatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffring, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; & in sum, all bent to the making up of princely mindes: no servile feare used towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but stil as to Princes: so that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature having done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

2 Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their blood could aspire unto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that *Musidorus* being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past over the humour of such contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reverēce ful of love to *Musidorus*, & *Musidorus* had a delight full of love in *Pyrocles*. *Musidorus*, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was so glad to learne of none, as of *Musidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to sixtene yeares of age, he seemed so to overrun his age in growth, strength, and al things following it, that not *Musidorus*, no nor any man living (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliver that strength more nimbly, or become the delivery more gracefully, or employ al more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subject.

3 At which time understanding that the King *Euarchus*, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all *Pannonia*, and almost *Thrace*, had now brought the cōclusion of al to the siege of *Bizantium* (to the raising of which siege great forces were



made) they would needs fall to the practise of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of *Musidorus* nobly yeelding over her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to thẽ both) the rather that they might helpe her beloved brother, they brake of all delayes; which *Musidorus* for his parte thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would never seeke the adventures of armes, until he might go with him: which having fast boũd his hart (a true slave to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding him able every way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a navie, that they might go like themselves, and not onely bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themselves to the Sea, leaving the shore of *Thessalia* full of teares and vowes; and were received thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as if *Neptune* had as then learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a servaunt, wayting behind them so just, that they might fill the sailes as they listed; and the best saylers shewing themselves lesse covetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which so well could obey their maisters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies, some two or three of them would strive, who could (either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the advantageous building of their mooving houses) leave their fellowes behind them in the honour of speed: while the two Princes had leasure to see the practise of that, which before they had learned by bookes: to consider the arte of catching the winde prisoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and use can so well agree together, that of all the trinckets, where with they are attired, there is not one but serves to some necessary purpose. And (ô Lord) to see the admirable power & noble effects of Love, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beauty (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing unto it, and (like a vertuous mistresse) not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Love, as of the heavenly Poles; and

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

thereby to bring forth the noblest deeds, that the children of the Earth can boast of. And so the Princes delighting their cōceats with cōfirming their knowledge, seing wherein the Sea-discipline differed from Land-service, they had for a day & almost a whole night, as pleasing entertainment, as the falsest hart could give to him he meanes worst to.

- 4 But by that the next morning began a little to make a gilden shewe of a good meaning, there arose even with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inck powred into water) had blacked over all the face of heaven; preparing (as it were) a mournfull stage for a Tragedie to be plaid on. For forthwith the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest instruments of commaundement; and blowing whole stormes of hayle and raine upon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they coule almost bethinke themselves of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea began to swell in pride against the afflicted Navie, under which (while the heaven favoured them) it had layne so calmely, making mountaines of it selfe, over which the tossed and tottring ship shoulde clime, to be streight carried downe againe to a pit of hellish darkenesse; with such cruell blowes against the sides of the shippe (that which way soever it went, was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay, nor way to escape. And shortly had it so dissevered the loving companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that most of them never met againe, but were swallowed up in his never-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne) after long wandring returned into *Thessalia*; other recovered *Bizantium*, and served *Euarchus* in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all industrie to save themselves, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as if it would prevent the nights comming, usurped the dayes right: which (accompanied sometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyses of the chafing winds) made the masters and pilots so astonished, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the sea strave with the winds which should be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastrful noise to

them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heaven roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as having those powers for enimies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdomes. For that dwelling place is unnaturall to mankind, and then the terrible-nesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutiō of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the eare having ougly images ever before it, doth still vex the minde, even when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with striking sailes to yeelde to be governed by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the fearefullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to everie most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselves the best, and yet not to despise the worst. But so were they carryed by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treason of the sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glasse, then by the day cleerenesse) having runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe ever was painted, lest the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driven upon a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waves, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruel mind, till with an unbeleevd violence (but to them that have tried it) the shippe ranne upon it; and seeming willinger to perish then to have her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diverse manner of minds in distresse: some sate upon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to prevent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heavens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie begotten of manie

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

roaring vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not prevented it with the power of reason.

- 5 But the Princes using the passions of fearing evill, and desiring to escape, onely to serve the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones selfe, leapt to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doo service, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; upon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne servants of theirs; and streight they foure were carryed out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the peece they were on sinking by little and little under them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was *Leucippus*, the younger *Nelsus*) shewed themselves right faithfull and gratefull servants unto them; gratefull (I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of *Phrygia* made upon *Thessalia*, in the time of *Musidorus* his infancie; and having beene solde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene these Realmes) could not be delivered, because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found meanes both by selling all the Jewels they had of great price, and by giving under their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so much treasure as redeemed them from captivitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselves to the seas rage, & even when they went to dye, themselves praying for the Princes lives. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moved the Princes hartes as the tendernesse of that loving part, farre from glorie, having so few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, since themselves were sure to perish.

## CHAP. 8.

<sup>1</sup>*Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia* <sup>2</sup>*led prisoner to the King.*  
<sup>3</sup>*That suspicious tyrant naturalized.* <sup>4</sup>*His intent to kill*  
*Pyrocles.* <sup>5</sup>*Musidorus-his escape from sea, and offer to dye*  
*for his friend.* <sup>6</sup>*Their contention for death.* <sup>7</sup>*Preparation*  
*for Musidorus execution.* <sup>8</sup>*His straunge deliverie by Pyrocles,*  
<sup>9</sup>*and a sodaine mutinie.* <sup>10</sup>*Their killing the bad King,* <sup>11</sup>*and*  
*creating a better.*

BUT now of all the royal Navie they had left but one peece of one ship, whereon they kept themselves in all trueth, having enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and counselling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were carryed by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceedingly swiftly) *Musidorus* seeing (as he thought) *Pyrocles* not well upon the boord, as he would with his right hand have helped him on better, he had no sooner unfastned his hold, but that a wave forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But *Pyrocles* (then carelesse of death, if it had come by any meanes, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter unto him. And bitter indeed it fell out even in it selfe to be unto him.

For being cast on land much brused & beaten both with the <sup>2</sup> seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and even almost deadly tired with the length of his uncomfortable labour, as he was walking up to discover some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came streight running unto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diverse places along the coast: who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse having no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more civilitie (though with much more busines then those under-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories unto him. To which he (unused to such entertainment) did shortlie and plainly aunswere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe) he was sent to the Kings court, which as then was not above a dayes journey off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne serviceable diligence in discovering so great a personage; adding with all more then was true of his conjectures, because he would endeare his owne service.

3 This country whereon he fell was *Phrygia*, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly sad, ever musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of evill, because his minde had no eye to espie goodnesse: and therefore accusing *Sycophantes*, of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming *Sycophantes*, because of no evill they said, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing unto him, but such as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofes of his wisdom: fearefull and never secure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any possibilitie of event. A tode-like retyrednesse, and closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse of poyson, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discovered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous. But after that yeares beganne to come on with some, though more seldome shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of *Musidorus* destinie came to his eares (delivered unto him, and received of him with the hardest interpretation, as though his subjectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gave he himselfe indeede to the full currant of his disposition, especially after the warre of *Thessalia*, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his unsuccessings proceeded of their unwillingnes to have him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned, (knowing no countertermine against contempt, but terror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault,

without sharpe punishment: & when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent povertie cannot make it selfe serviceable, so were there enow of those desperate ambitious, who would builde their houses upon others ruines, which after shoulde fall by like practises. So as servitude came mainly upon that poore people, whose deedes were not onely punished, but words corrected, and even thoughts by some meane or other puld out of thẽ: while suspitiõ bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie stirred a new cause of suspicion. And in this plight (ful of watchfull fearefulness) did the storme deliver sweete *Pyrocles* to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenaunce deserved both pitie and admiration) condemning thẽselves as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloody King knew what he was, and in what 4 order he and his cosin *Musidorus* (so much of him feared) were come out of *Thessalia*, assuredly thinking (because ever thinking the worst) that those forces were provided against him; glad of the perishing (as he thought) of *Musidorus*, determined in publique sort to put *Pyrocles* to death. For having quite loste the way of noblenes, he strave to clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking to make all men adread, to make such one an enemy, who would not spare, nor feare to kill so great a Prince; and lastly, having nothing in him why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemy. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemne an order, as if they would set foorth tyrãny in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of invincible valour, yet so unjustly subjected to such outrageous wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanure so constãtly, abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the greatest hope of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was prevented by a rare ex- 5 ample of friendship in *Musidorus*: who being almost drowned, had bene taken up by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdome of *Pontus*; and being there, and understanding the full discourse (as Fame was very prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Pyrocles* was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to *Pyrocles*, he founde meanes to acquaint him selfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whom largely discovering what he was, he found him a most fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had served *Euarchus*, and had bene so mind-stricken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subject) he even profeste himselfe his servaunt. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe *Musidorus* in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of *Phrygia* understande, that if he would deliver *Pyrocles*, *Musidorus* would willingly put him selfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirstie so ever he was of *Pyrocles* bloud, he would rather drinke that of *Musidorus*.

The Nobleman was loath to preserve one by the losse of another, but time urging resolution: the importunitie of *Musidorus* (who shewed a minde not to over-live *Pyrocles*) with the affection he bare to *Euarchus*, so prevayled, that he carried this strange offer of *Musidorus*, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

6 And so upon securitie of both sides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omitte that worke of friendshippe in *Pyrocles*, who both in speache and coütenance to *Musidorus*, well shewed, that he thought himselfe injured, and not releevd by him: asking him, what he had ever seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man? and why he shoulde envie him the glorie of suffering death for his friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession? But in this notable contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and safetie the punishment of the conquered) *Musidorus* prevayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the unjuste King, that wisht none well, to them worse then others, and to him worste of all: and as chearefully going towards, as *Pyrocles* went frowardly fromwarde his death, he was delivered to the King, who could not be inough sure of him, without he fed his owne eies upon one, whom he had begon to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

7 Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most feared enemy was fallen) and withal cut of such hopes from his suspected subjects (when they should knowe certainly he was dead) with much



more skilful cruelty, and horrible solemnitie he caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And so the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done such service to *Pyrocles*, this strange encounter he had.

The excellling *Pyrocles* was no sooner delivered by the kings 8 servants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to passe?) how ether to deliver *Musidorus*, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (little hoping of better event) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent, suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (even he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be servant to the executioner that should put to death *Musidorus*: a farre notabler prooffe of his friendship, considering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being araied fit for such an estate, & having his beautie hidden by many foule spots he artificially put upon his face, gave him leave not onely to weare a sworde himselfe, but to beare his sworde prepared for the justified murther. And so *Pyrocles* taking his time, when *Musidorus* was upon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest, as allowed to say something) he stept unto him, & putting the sworde into his hande not bound (a point of civility the officers used towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) *Musidorus* (said he) die nobly. In truth, never mã betweene joy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after cōsidering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw *Pyrocles*, so neare me. But with that *Dorus* blushed, and *Pamela* smiled: and *Dorus* the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of him selfe to use the third person. But *Musidorus* turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (said he) when they were with swordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of defence) but making that a preservation in not hoping to be preserved, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst thẽ all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none upon the scaffold to annoy them. Wherein *Pyrocles* (the excellent *Pyrocles*) did such wonders beyond beleefe, as was hable to leade *Musidorus* to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, just rage & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sorte of the beholders began to be almost superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not ashamed, the worlde should behold him a beholder) cōmaunded his garde, and the rest of his souldiers to hasten their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

- 9 But as they were stil fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (cōmaūded to go up after his fellowes against the Princes) having received a light hurt, more woūded in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came up with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him upon the face, reviling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in revenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight revenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers; which seene, and not understood by the people (used to feares but not used to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason; and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set upon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such thinges often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was slaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the bravest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, set upon the garde, and souldiers as chiefe instruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none

of them alive, nor any other in the cittie, who they thought had in any sorte set his hand to the worke of their servitude, and (God knowes) by the blindnesse of rage, killing many guiltles persons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) prevailed with the rest to make *Musidorus* their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom forthwith they lifted up, Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, 10 that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neere hãd, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this mutinie. But now they had run themselves too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to forget such an injũry; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute to obey *Musidorus*. Who seing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practises might be used to dis-sever them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to prevaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him selfe was slaine by *Musidorus*, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of great courage & beautie, but fostred in bloud by his naughty Father) slaine by the hand of *Pyrocles*. This victorie obtained, with great, and truly not undeserved honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gave the crowne and all other markes of soveraigntie to *Musidorus*; desiring nothing more, then to live under such a government, as they promised thẽselves of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnes to give a kingdome, 11 then get a kingdome; understanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, & next to the successiõ, an aged Gentleman of approved goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power, but danger frõ him, and odiousnes for him) having past his time in modest secrecy, & asmuch from entermedling in matters of government, as the greatnesse of his bloud would suffer him,

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

did (after having received the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the noble-mã: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure the people (with asmuch assurãce as worldly matters beare) that not onely that governour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the government, should be no way apt to decline to Tyrãny.

## CHAP. 9.

<sup>1</sup> *The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus.* <sup>2</sup> *Incōstancy,* <sup>3</sup> *and envie purtraied in the King & his Counsellor.* <sup>4</sup> *The advancement & overthrow by them of those two brothers.* <sup>5</sup> *The revenge thereof by the two Princes.* <sup>6</sup> *The cruelties of two revengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes.* <sup>7</sup> *Their honours, and their honourable mindes.*

I **T**His dooing set forth no lesse his magnificēce, then the other act did his magnanimitie: so that greatly prayed of al, and justly beloved of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behaviour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to revenge those two servãts of theirs, of whose memorable faith, I told you (most excellēt Princesse) in willingly giving themselves to be drowned for their sakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull swimming upon a rocke: frō whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking up, they were brought to the maine lande of *Pontus*; the same coutry upon which *Musidorus* also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

2 For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspition, greedines, or unrevēgefulness, as he of *Phrygia*, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choise of friends, or rather never having a friēd, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwise rid himself, thē by killing thē: giving somtimes prodigally, not because he loved them to whom he gave, but because he lusted to give: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at first for those vertues which

were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering : with like judgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.

He chaüced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted 3 with him) to have next in use about him, a mã of the most envious dispositiõ, that (I think) ever infected the aire with his breath : whose eies could not looke right upon any happie mã, nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praise : cõtrary to the natures of al other plagues, plagued with others well being ; making happines the ground of his unhappinesse, & good newes the argumēt of his sorrow : in sum, a man whose favour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull servants of theirs came 4 in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at first to favour them ; and the King understanding of their adventure, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith unto their Lordes) suddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praying him selfe in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduancement (the most mortall offence to envy) stirred up their former friend, to overthrow his owne worke in them ; taking occasion upon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of *Phrygia* destroyed by their two Lordes, who having bene a neere kinsman to this Prince of *Pontus*, by this envious Coücellour, partly with suspition of practise, partly with glory of in-part revēging his cousins death, the King was suddainly turned, (and every turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them up in prison, as servaunts to his enemies, whom before he had never knowne, nor (til that time one of his own subjects had entertained and dealt for them) did ever take heed of. But now earnest in every present humour, and making himselfe brave in his liking, he was content to give them just cause of offence, when they had power to make just revenge. Yet did the Princes send unto him before they entred into war, desiring their servants liberty. But he swelling in thier hūbleness, (like a bubble swollen up with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or never knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be stricken off, by the advice of his envious Councillor

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

(who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the happines in having such, and so fortunate masters) and sent them with unroyall reproches to *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as if they had done traiterously, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall Cosen.

5 But that injurie went beyond al degree of reconcilement; so that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome wholly at their commandement, by the love of the people, and gratefulnessse of the King) they entred his country; and wholly conquering it (with such deeds as at lest Fame said were excellent) tooke the King; and by *Musidorus* commaundement (*Pyrocles* hart more enclined to pitie) he was slaine upon the tombe of their two true Servants; which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserve their deade lives. For his wicked Servant he should have felt the like, or worse, but that his harte brake even to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There might *Pyrocles* quietly have enjoyed that crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had revolted unto him: but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well esteemed Ladie) looking for nothing more, then to be oppressed with her brothers ruines, gave her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) governing vertue, they did (in that kingdome and some other neere about) divers acts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruell monsters, & monstrous men: all which in short time by private combats they delivered the countries of.

6 Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatnesse & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept thēselves in a castle seated upon the top of a rocke, impregnable, because there was no comming unto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while served the King of *Pontus*, and in all his affaires (especially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they had shewed, as uncōquered courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and

uprightly dealt with; rather impatient of injury, then delighted with more then ordinary curtesies; and in injuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly Jewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that unworthy Prince, after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more evident to them; because it sodainly fell from an excesse of favor, which (many examples having taught them) never stopt his race till it came to an headlong overthrow: they full of rage, retyred themselves unto this castle. Where thinking nothing juster thẽ revenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward bravery and fiercenes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gave themselves to make all the countrie about them (subject to that King) to smart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with use of evill, growing more and more evill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleasing themselves in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a serviceable power of the minde to doo publike good; so now unbridled, and blinde judge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiefe; almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and lovelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in crueltye, as not to be reclaimed, secretly undertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not have suffered them to have mounted; and so those great fellows scornefully receiving them, as foolish birds falne into their net, it pleased the eternall justice to make thẽ suffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the savers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the 7 numbers of wel-devised honors done unto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine, and daunger, but must be nurst by the like, or els vanisheth as soone as it appears to the world: so the naturall hunger thereof (which was in *Pyrocles*) suffered him not to account a resting seate of that,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

which ever either riseth, or falleth, but still to make one action beget another; whereby his doings might send his praise to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his spirite. And therefore having well established those kingdomes, under good governours, and rid them by their valure of such giants and monsters, as before time armies were not able to subdue, they determined in unknowne order to see more of the world, & to imploy those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themselves (understanding that the King *Euarchus* was passed all the cumber of his warres) goe privately to seeke exercises of their vertue; thinking it not so worthy, to be brought to heroycall effects by fortune, or necessitie (like *Ulysses* and *Aeneas*) as by ones owne choice, and working. And so went they away from verie unwilling people to leave them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honour, and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely were they out of the cōfines of *Pontus*, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one serving the other) they mette an adventure; which though not so notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembred for the un-used examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched ungratefulnesse.

### CHAP. 10.

<sup>1</sup> *The pitifull state, and storie of the Paphalgonian unkinde King, and his kind sonne,* <sup>2</sup> *first related by the son,* <sup>3</sup> *then by the blind father.* <sup>4</sup> *The three Princes assaulted by Plexirtus and his traine:* <sup>5</sup> *assisted by their King of Pontus and his troupes.* <sup>6</sup> *Plexirtus succoured and saved by two brothers, that vertuously loved a most vicious man.* <sup>7</sup> *Beseeged by the new King,* <sup>8</sup> *he submitteth, & is pardoned.* <sup>9</sup> *The two Princes depart to aide the Queene of Lycia.*

I T was in the kingdome of *Galacia*, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that never any



winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: so that the Princes were even compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it unto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiving them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputation which made them steppe out; yet in such sort, as they might see unseene. There they perceaved an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extreameley weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both these seemed to appeare a kind of noblenesse, not sutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well *Leonatus* (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to lead me to that which should end my grieffe, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leave me: feare not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but miserie; feare not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (answered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I have power to doo you service, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groned, as if sorrow strave to breake his harte,) how evill fits it me to have such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse upbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moved the Princes to goe out unto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiousnes) I see well you are straungers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. In deede our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull unto us as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous unto us, then to make our selves so knowne as may stirre pittie. But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not over-runne

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

hate. And if it did, in truth our state is soncke below the degree of feare.

2 This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of *Paphlagonia*, by the hard-harted ungratefulnes of a sonne of his, deprived, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraine forces were ever able to spoyle him) but of his sight, the riches which Nature graūts to the poorest creatures. Whereby, & by other his unnaturall dealings, he hath bin driven to such griefe, as even now he would have had me to have led him to the toppe of this rocke, thēce to cast himselfe headlong to death: and so would have made me (who received my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble Gentlemen (said he) if either of you have a father, and feelee what duetifull affection is engrafted in a sonnes hart, let me intreate you to convey this afflicted Prince to some place of rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie actes it shall be none of the least, that a King, of such might and fame, and so unjustly oppressed, is in any sort by you relieved.

3 But before they could make him answeare, his father began to speake, Ah my sonne (said he) how evill an Historian are you, that leave out the chiefe knotte of all the discourse? my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou doest it to spare my eares, (the onely sense nowe left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou dost mistake me. And I take witnesse of that Sunne which you see (with that he cast up his blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light,) and wish my selfe in worse case then I do wish my selfe, which is as evill as may be, if I speake untruely; that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I wish that it may not prove ominous foretokē of misfortune to have mette with such a miser as I am) that whatsoever my sonne (ō God, that trueth binds me to reproch him with the name of my sonne) hath said, is true. But besides those truthes, this also is true, that having had in lawful mariage, of a mother fitte to beare royall children, this sonne (such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe by my shorte declaration) and so enjoyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growē to justifie their expectations (so as I needed envie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leave an other ones-selfe after me) I was caried by a bastarde

sonne of mine (if at least I be bounde to beleeve the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to mislike, then to hate, lastly to destroy, to doo my best to destroy, this sonne (I thinke you thinke) undeserving destruction. What waies he used to bring me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much poysonous hypocrisie, desperate fraude, smoothe malice, hidden ambition, & smiling envie, as in any living person could be harbored. But I list it not, no remembrance, (no, of naughtines) delights me, but mine own; & me thinks, the accusing his traines might in some manner excuse my fault, which certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gave order to some servants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forrest, & there to kill him.

But those theeves (better natured to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him goe; to learne to live poorly: which he did, giving himselfe to be a private souldier, in a countrie here by. But as he was redy to be greatly advaunced for some noble peeces of service which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that unlawfull and unnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my self so to be governed by him, that all favors and punishments passed by him, all offices, and places of importance, distributed to his favourites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid upon me) threw me out of my seat, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, nether imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feeble my miserie; miserie indeed, if ever there were any; full of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so unjust meanes, as unjustlie he kept it, by force of stranger souldiers in *Cittadels*, the nestes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; disarming all his own countrimen, that no man durst shew himself a wel-willer of mine: to say the trueth (I think) few of thẽ being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my unkinde bastard :) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of unstained duety left in them towards me, yet durst they not shewe it, scarcely with giving

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenance of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came hether to doo this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my unspeakable grieve; not onely because his kindnes is a glasse evē to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that above all griefes, it grieves me he should desperatly adventure the losse of his soul-deserving life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deserts, as if he would cary mudde in a chest of christall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much soever (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slippe any advantage to make away him, whose just title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a never secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craved of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient unto me. And now Gentlemen, you have the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischievous proceedings may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my sonne denies me: for never was there more pity in saving any, then in ending me; both because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you preserve this excellent young man, who els wilfully folowes his owne ruine.

- 4 The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expressed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moved the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented; for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came thether with fortie horse, onely of purpose to murder this brother; of whose comming he had soone advertisement, and thought no eyes of sufficient credite in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selfe to be

actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commaunded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sworde) how falsely soever he was dealt with by others, would not betray him selfe: but bravely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* were quickly become parties (so just a defence deserving as much as old friendship) and so did behave them among that cōpanie (more injurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their lives for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last prevailed, if 5 the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made so) had not come unlooked for to their succour. Who (having had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently upon some great daunger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most deerely loved) was come in all hast, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundreth horses in that countrie, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had ben so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that 6 his ill-led life, & worse gotten honour should have tumbled together to destructiō; had there not come in *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, with fortie or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought up frō their infancie with *Plexirtus*: men of such prowesse, as not to know feare in themselves, and yet to teach it others that should deale with them: for they had often made their lives triumph over most terrible daungers; never dismayed, and ever fortunate; and truely no more settled in their valure, then disposed to goodnesse and justice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could have learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing up (rather then choise) having first knit their minds unto him, (indeed craftie inough, eyther to hide his faultes, or never to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to satisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: so as though they did not like the evill he did, yet they liked him that did

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBRÔKES

the evill; and though not counsellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they having heard of this sodaine going out, with so small a company, in a country full of evil-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him; till they found him in such case as they were to venture their lives, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may justly say, *Pyrocles & Musidorus* had never till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the feates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they overcame not; yet were they not overcome, but caried away that ungratefull maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoever the Princes laboured to the cōtrary. But this matter being thus far begun, it became not the constâcie of the Princes so to leave it; but in all hast making forces both in *Pontus* and *Phrygia*, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him but only that one strong place where he was. For feare having bene the onely knot that had fastned his people unto him, that once untied by a greater force, they all scattered from him; like so many birdes, whose cage had bene broken.

7 In which season the blind King (having in the chief cittie of his Realme, set the crowne upō his sonne *Leonatus* head) with many teares (both of joy and sorrow) setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sonne to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become subject) evē in a moment died, as it should seeme: his hart broken with unkindnes & affliction, stretched so farre beyond his limits with this excesse of cōfort, as it was able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new King (having no lesse lovingly performed all duties to him dead, then alive) pursued on the siege of his unnatural brother, asmuch for the revenge of his father, as for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those two brothers, then whom the Princes never found in all their travell two men of greater habilitie to performe, nor of habler skill for conduct.

8 But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing els, famin would at last bring him to destructiō, thought better by hūblenes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainly so had nature formed him, & the exercise of craft conformed him

to all turnings of sleights, that though no mā had lesse goodnes in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence argumēts might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man felt lesse pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie: no mā more impudēt to deny, where proofes were not manifest; no man more ready to confesse with a repenting māner of aggravating his owne evil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that having gotten a pasport for one (that pretended he would put *Plexirtus* alive into his hāds) to speak with the King his brother, he him selfe (though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in brave defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of *Leonatus*. Where what submission he used, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the lesse, how artificially he could set out the torments of his owne cōscience, with the burdensome comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed to live, he begd life, in the refusing it, I am not cunning enough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first sight *Leonatus* saw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint revenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amēdment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednes, now betraied by the author therof,) were delivered to many cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the defence of an unremediable mischiefe already cōmitted, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left these recōciled brothers 9 (*Plexirtus* in all his behaviour carying him in far lower degree of service, then the ever-noble nature of *Leonatus* would suffer him) & taking likewise their leaves of their good friend the King of *Pontus* (who returned to enjoy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they privately went thence, having onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accōpanie them, through divers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though lesse famous, because they were but privat chivalries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Erona* of *Lycia*, besieged by the puissant King of *Armenia*, they bent themselves to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Ladie,) & partly because they heard the King of *Armenia* had in his company three of the most famous men living, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince *Plangus*, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerlesse Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him unto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) *Barzanes* and *Euardes*, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie, was reposed. And of them, those two brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (sufficient judges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had even a youthfull longing to have some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into *Lycia* they joyned thēselves with them that faithfully served the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and ere long animated in such sort their almost overthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieve the towne, though they were deprived of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister, *Plexirtus*: who (willingly hoodwinking themselves from seeing his faultes, and binding themselves to beleieve what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of injustice. But now they were sent for to advaunce a conquest he was about; while *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* pursued the deliverie of the Queene *Erona*.

### CHAP. II.

<sup>1</sup> Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsas waking. <sup>2</sup> The sisters going with Zelmane to wash themselves. <sup>3</sup> The pleasantnes of the river. <sup>4</sup> The pleasure Zelmane had in seeing them, uttered <sup>5</sup> in speech, <sup>6</sup> and song. <sup>7</sup> She led by a spaniel, to know, and hurte her noble rivall. <sup>8</sup> The parting of that fraye.

I Have heard (said *Pamela*) that parte of the story of *Plangus* whē he passed through this country: therfore you may (if you list) passe over that warre of *Eronaes* quarrell, lest if you



speake too much of warre matters, you should wake *Mopsa*, which might happily breed a great broile. He looked, and saw <sup>1</sup> that *Mopsa* indeed sat swallowing of sleepe with opē mouth, making such a noise withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to use that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) divine Lady, who have wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the basest) to thinke all principalities base, in respect of the sheephooke, which may hold him up in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble sute, while this dragō sleepe, that keepes the golden fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my selfe any thing which may be the lest spot to that heavenly vertue, which shines in all your doings; I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speak may be deadly poysons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confusion. But if love, love of you, love of your vertues, seeke onely that favour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cānot misbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would have said further, but *Pamela* calling aloud *Mopsa*, she sodainly start up, staggering, and rubbing her eies, ran first out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked *Pamela*, why she had called her. For nothing (said *Pamela*) but that you might heare some tales of your servants telling: and therefore now (said she) *Dorus* go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) <sup>2</sup> was returning to the story of himselfe, *Philoclea* came in, & by and by after her, *Miso*; so as for that time they were faine to let *Dorus* depart. But *Pamela* (delighted evē to preserve in her memory, the words of so wel a beloved speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselves something, (even tyred with the noysomnes of *Misos* conversation) they determyned to goe (while the heate of the day lasted) to bath themselves (such being the maner of the *Arcadian* nymphes often to doo) in the river of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

them under some shadow. But they could not stir, but that *Miso* with her daughter *Mopsa* was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, *Zelmane* out of her window espied them, and so stale downe after them: which she might the better doo because that *Gynecia* was sicke, and *Basilius* (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was busie about his devotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with *Philoclea*: but not a word could she beginne, but that *Miso* would be one of the audience; so that she was driven to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they came to the rivers side; which of all the rivers  
3 of *Greece* had the price for excellent purenesse, and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was accounted exceeding healthfull. It ranne upon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easely judge, whether the River did more wash the gravell, or the gravel did purifie the River; the River not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the River had a delight to play with it selfe. The banckes of either side seeming armes of the loving earth, that faine would embrace it; and the River a wanton nymph which still would stirre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which resisted the sunnes darts from overmuch pearcing the naturall coldnes of the River. There was the

But among the rest a goodly *Cypres*, who bowing her faire head over the water, it seemed she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running River. There the Princesses determining to bath themselves, though it was so priviledged a place, upon paine of death, as no bodie durst presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the river, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdaining that his smelling force coulde not as well prevaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting up againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the river, & shaking off the water (as great men

do their friends, now he had no further cause to use it) inweeded himselfe so, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulnesse: and inviting *Zelmane* also to wash her selfe with them, and she excusing her selfe with having taken a late cold, they began by peece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their apparell.

*Zelmane* would have put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a quivering, that she thought it more wise-dome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while *Miso* and *Mopsa* (like a couple of foreswat melters) were getting the pure silver of their bodies out of the ure of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receave kisses of the ground, *Zelmane* envied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was even jealous, and when that was taken away too, and that *Philoclea* remained (for her *Zelmane* onely marked) like a *Diamond* taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from under a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient sight, the delight too strong for a stayed conceipt: so that *Zelmane* could not choose but runne, to touch, embrace, and kisse her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, & leave *Philoclea*, who blushing, and withall smiling, making shamefastnesse pleasant, and pleasure shamefast, tenderly moved her feete, unwonted to feele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a prettie kinde of shrugging come over her bodie, like the twinckling of the fairest among the fixed stars. But the River it selfe gave way unto her, so that she was streight brest high; which was the deepest that there-about she could be: and when cold *Ladon* had once fully imbraced them, himselfe was no more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold complexion had bene heated with love, so seemed he to play about every part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest *Ladon* (said *Zelmane*) why dost thou not stay thy course to have more full tast of thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the upper streames make such haste to have their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) must needs give place unto them. O happie *Ladon*, within whom she is, upon whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye perceth. O happie *Ladon*, which art now an unperfect mirror of al perfection, canst thou ever forget

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the blessednes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine gravel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let some unjust niggards make weres to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater river fal into thee, to take away the name of *Ladon*. Oh *Ladon*, happie *Ladon*, rather slide then run by her, lest thou shouldest make her legs slippe from her; and then, O happy *Ladon*, who would then cal thee, but the most cursed *Ladon*? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, somtimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to have the picture of their face in large upon him, but he would in ech of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

- 6 But *Zelmane*, whose sight was gaine-said by nothing but the transparent vaile of *Ladon*, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that now all her parts grudged, that her eyes should doo more homage, then they, to the Princesse of them. In somuch that taking up the Lute, her wit began to be with a divine furie inspired; her voice would in so beloved an occasion, second her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes musicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the *Queene* which shoulde be delighted. And so together went the utterance and the invention, that one might judge, it was *Philocleas* beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend utterance. The song was to this purpose.

**W***Hat toong can her perfections tell  
In whose each part all pens may dwell?  
Her haire fine threeds of finest gould  
In curled knots mans thought to hold:  
But that her fore-head sayes in me  
A whiter beautie you may see.  
Whiter indeed; more white then snow,  
Which on cold winters face doth grow.*

*That doth present those even browes,  
 Whose equall line their angles bowes,  
 Like to the Moone when after chaunge  
 Her horned head abroad doth raunge:  
 And arches be to heavenly lids,  
 Whose winke ech bold attempt forbids.  
 For the blacke starres those Spheares containe,  
 The matchlesse paire, even praise doth staine.  
 No lampe, whose light by Art is got,  
 No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,  
 Can liken them without all peere,  
 Save one as much as other cleere:  
 Which onely thus unhappie be,  
 Because themselves they cannot see.*

*Her cheekes with kindly claret spread.  
 Aurora like new out of bed,  
 Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,  
 Blushing at sight of Phœbus pride.*

*Her nose, her chinne pure ivorie weares:  
 No purer then the pretie eares.  
 So that therein appeares some blood,  
 Like wine and milke that mingled stood  
 In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,  
 Your eyes may tread a Lovers maze.  
 But with such turnes the voice to stray,  
 No talke untaught can finde the way.  
 The tippe no jewell needes to weare:  
 The tippe is jewell of the eare.*

*But who those ruddie lippes can misse?  
 Which blessed still themselves doo kisse.  
 Rubies, Cherries, and Roses new,  
 In worth, in taste, in perfitte bewe:  
 Which never part but that they showe  
 Of pretious pearle the double rowe,  
 The second sweetly-fenced warde,  
 Her heav'nly-dewed tongue to garde.  
 Whence never word in vaine did flowe.*

*Faire under these doth stately growe,  
 The handle of this pretious worke,  
 The neck, in which strange graces lurke.*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers  
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.  
So good a say invites the eye,  
A little downward to espie,  
The livelie clusters of her brests,  
Of Venus babe the wanton nests:  
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:  
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.  
With dearest tops of porphyrie.*

*Betwixt these two a way doth lie,  
A way more worthie beauties fame,  
Then that which beares the Milkie name.  
This leades into the joyous field,  
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:  
But Lillies such whose native smell  
The Indian odours doth excell.  
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste  
Mens lives, untill it be imbraste.*

*There may one see, and yet not see  
Her ribbes in white all armed be.  
More white then Neptunes fomie face,  
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.*

*In those delights the wandering thought  
Might of each side astray be brought,  
But that her navel doth unite,  
In curious circle, busie sight:  
A daintie seale of virgin-waxe,  
Where nothing but impression lackes.*

*Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,  
Justly entitled Cupids hill.  
A hill most fitte for such a master,  
A spotlesse mine of Alablaster.  
Like Alablaster faire and sleeke,  
But soft and supple satten like.*

*In that sweete seate the Boy doth sport:  
Loath, I must leave his chiefe resort.  
„For such a use the world hath gotten,  
„The best things still must be forgotten.*

*Yet never shall my song omitte  
Thighes, for Ovids song more fitte;*

*Which flanked with two sugred flanks,  
Lift up their stately swelling bankes;  
That Albion clives in whitenes passe:  
With hanches smooth as looking glasse.*

*But bow all knees, now of her knees  
My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.  
The knottes of joy, the gemmes of love,  
Whose motion makes all graces move.  
Whose bought incav'd doth yeeld such sight,  
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.  
The gartring place with child-like signe,  
Shewes easie print in mettall fine.  
But then againe the flesh doth rise  
In her brave calves, like christall skies.  
Whose Atlas is a smallest small,  
More white then whitest bone of all.*

*Thereout steales out that round cleane foote  
This noble Cedars pretious roote:  
In shewe and sent pale violets,  
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.*

*But back unto her back, my Muse,  
Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,  
Along whose ridge such bones are met,  
Like comfits round in marchpane set.*

*Her shoulders be like two white Doves,  
Pearching within square royall rooves,  
Which leaded are with silver skinne,  
Passing the hate-sport Ermelin.*

*And thence those armes derived are;  
The Phoenix wings are not so rare  
For faultlesse length, and stainelesse hewe,*

*Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;  
Now course doth leade me to her hand,  
Of my first love the fatall band.*

*Where whitenes dooth for ever sitte:  
Nature her selfe enameld it.  
For there with strange compact dooth lie  
Warme snow, moyst pearle, softe ivorie.  
There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,  
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Sweete Ilands make in that sweete land.  
As for the fingers of the hand,  
The bloody shaftes of Cupids warre,  
With amatists they headed are.*

*Thus hath each part his beauties part,  
But how the Graces doo impart  
To all her limmes a spetiall grace,  
Becomming every time and place.  
Which doth even beautie beautifie,  
And most bewitch the wretched eye.  
How all this is but a faire Inne  
Of fairer gwestes, which dwell within.  
Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,  
Goodnes the penne, heaven paper is.  
The inke immortall fame dooth lende :*

*As I began, so must I ende.  
No tongue can her perfections tell,  
In whose each part all tongues may dwell.*

But as *Zelmane* was cōming to the latter end of her song, she might see the same water-spaniell which before had hūted, come and fetch away one of *Philocleas* gloves ; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to *Zelmane*, to see that the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who quickly caried it out of sight among certaine trees and bushes, which were very close together. But by & by he came againe, & amongst the raiments (*Miso* and *Mopsa* being preparing sheets against their comming out) the dog lighted upon a little booke of foure or five leaves of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then *Zelmane* (not knowing what importāce it might be of) ran after the dog, who going streight to those bushes, she might see the dog deliver it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily cōming in, the Gētleman rose up, & with a courteous (though sad) countenance presented himselfe unto her. *Zelmanes* eies streight willed her mind to marke him : for she thought, in her life she had never seene a mā of a more goodly presence, in whom strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fiercenesse : being indeed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet shewes



she would faine make. But when she had a while (not without admiration) vewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the glove & paper, because they were the Ladie *Philocleas*; telling him withall, that she would not willingly let thẽ know of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing thẽselves; because she knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my self the punishment. But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse, not my presumption. With that he gave her backe the paper: But for the glove (said he) since it is my Ladie *Philocleas*, give me leave to keepe it, since my hart cānot perswade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that I will direct my life to honour this glove with serving her. O villain (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an unlooked-for Rivall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (said she) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her sworde, which (*Amazon*-like) she ever ware about her. The Gentlemā retired himself into an open place frō among the bushes; & thẽ drawing out his too, he offred to deliver it unto her, saying withall, God forbid I should use my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceived) you are the same famous *Amazon*, that both defended my Ladies just title of beautie against the valiant *Phalantus*, & saved her life in killing the Lion: therfore I am rather to kisse your hands, with acknowledging my selfe boūd to obey you. But this courtesie was worse then a bastonado to *Zelmane*: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no lesse then his life should answer it. A hard case (said he) to teach my sworde that lesson, which hath ever used to turne it self to a shield in a Ladies presence. But *Zelmane* harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes & thrusts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet stil courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perswaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand upon the best defensive gard he could; somtimes going backe, being content in that respect to take on the figure of cowardise; sometime with strong and well-met

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

wards; sometime cunning avoidings of his body; and sometimes faining some blowes, which himself puld backe before they needed to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet dispositiō, determining to kill him if he fought no better; & so redoubling her blowes, drave the stranger to no other shift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and private respectes, who standes onely upon defence, stands upon no defence: For *Zelmane* seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall stept backe as he was accustomed, she stopt her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breast; so as he was driven with the pommell of his sworde (having no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But *Zelmane* retiring her sworde, and seeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily sorie, and even ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could have done more. In so much that she said, truly I am sorie for your hurt, but your selfe gave the cause, both in refusing to deliver the glove, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could have done. But (saide shee) because I perceave you disdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinsman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of *Macedon*, and I give you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this quarell against you. I would (answered *Amphialus*) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I love & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

- 8 But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to whō *Mopsa* (curious in any thing, but her own good behaviour) having followed & seene *Zelmane* fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselves, & the water (with some drops) seemed to weepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of *Zelmane* (assuring themselves

that any *Arcadian* would beare reverence to them) *Pamela* with a noble mind, and *Philoclea* with a loving (hastily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to save *Zelmane*. But already they found them in talke, & *Zelmane* careful of his wound. But whē they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous *Amphialus*; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitterness they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselves were in such sort retired. But he craved pardon, protesting unto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possest him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, where while the dog hunted in the river, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his over-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the smart of his owne doings. But *Philoclea* (that was even jealous of her self for *Zelmane*) would needs have her glove, and not without so mighty a loure as that face could yeeld. As for *Zelmane* when she knew, it was *Amphialus*, Lord *Amphialus* (said she) I have lōg desired to know you, heretofore I must confesse with more good will, but still with honoring your vertue, though I love not your person: & at this time I pray you let us take care of your wound, upon cōdition you shal hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shalbe performed betweene us. *Amphialus* answered in honorable sort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his love to *Philoclea*, & provoked more hate in *Zelmane*. But *Mopsa* had already called certaine shepheards not far of (who knew & wel observed their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away *Amphialus*, whose wound suffered him not without daunger to straine it: and so he leaving himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound up by the sheetes, wherwith *Philoclea* had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and blesse the sword for that favour.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 12.

<sup>1</sup>*How* Basilius found Plangus: <sup>2</sup>*his lamentation.* <sup>3</sup>Philoclea entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.

<sup>1</sup> **H**E being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had seene thẽ) returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so pleasing a company, with going to performe a cūbersome obediẽce, *Zelmane* invited them to the little arbour, only reserved for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, *Pamela* having a while made the lute in his lāguage, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, *Zelmane* delivered up the paper, which *Amphialus* had at first yeelded unto her: and seeing written upon the backside of it, the complaint of *Plangus*, remembring what *Dorus* had told her, and desiring to know how much *Philoclea* knew of her estate, she tooke occasion in the presenting of it, to aske whether it were any secret, or no. No truely (answered *Philoclea*) it is but even an exercise of my fathers writing, upon this occasion: He was one day (somwhile before your comming hether) walking abroad, having us two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of *Megalopolis*, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the proprest and best-graced men that ever I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then under a tree, while his servaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme travaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hasty he was upon his journey: and withall so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, even groanes, teares, and passionate talking to him selfe, moved my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of griefe, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare unto you. *Zelmane* willingly opened the leaves, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

# ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

Plangus.

Basilus.

**A** *Las how long this pilgrimage doth last?  
 What greater ills have now the heavens in store,  
 To couple comming harmes with sorrowes past?  
 Long since my voice is hoarse, and throte is sore,  
 With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,  
 But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.  
 Ah where was first that cruell cunning found,  
 To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,  
 Where it should be to selfe-destruction bound?  
 What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?  
 Or wrapt in flesh what do they here obtaine,  
 But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?  
 Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;  
 Turnd from themselves, infected with their cage,  
 Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.  
 Like players pla'st to fill a filthy stage,  
 Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other shewes,  
 And all but jests, save onely sorrowes rage.  
 The child feesles that; the man that feeling knowes,  
 With cries first borne, the presage of his life,  
 Where wit but serves, to have true tast of woes.  
 A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife  
 This bodie is: this bodie so composed,  
 As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.  
 So divers be the Elements disposed  
 In this weake worke, that it can never be  
 Made uniforme to any state reposed.  
 Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see  
 (Even like a toppes which nought but whipping moves)  
 This man, this talking beast, this walking tree.  
 Griefe is the stone which finest judgement proves:  
 For who grieves not hath but a blockish braine,  
 Since cause of griefe no cause from life removes.*

Plangus.

*How long wilt thou with monefull musicke staine  
 The cheerefull notes these pleasant places yeeld,  
 Where all good haps a perfect state maintaine?*

Basilus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Plangus. *Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build  
 Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire  
 For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.  
 Shall I that saw Eronaes shining haire  
 Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow  
 With losse of purest blood themselves to teare?  
 Shall I that saw those brests, where beauties flow,  
 Swelling with sighes, made pale with mindes disease,  
 And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to shew,  
 Shall I, whose eares her mournefull words did seaze,  
 Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,  
 Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?  
 No, no: Despaire my dayly lesson saith,  
 And saith, although I seeke my life to flie,  
 Plangus must live to see Eronaes death.  
 Plangus must live some helpe for her to trie  
 Though in despaire, so Love enforceth me;  
 Plangus doth live, and must Erona dye?  
 Erona dye? O heaven (if heaven there be)  
 Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?  
 Serve all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?  
 Let doltes in haste some altars faire erect  
 To those high powers, which idly sit above,  
 And vertue do in greatest need neglect.*

Basilus. *O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do move  
 To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.  
 Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do prove.  
 Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist  
 Of our selfe-love (so passions do deceave)  
 We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.  
 To harme us wormes should that high Justice leave  
 His nature? nay, himselfe? for so it is.  
 What glorie from our losse can he receave?  
 But still our dazeled eyes their way do misse,  
 While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,  
 The kindly way to beate us to our blisse.  
 If she must dye, then hath she past the line  
 Of lothsome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,  
 That doost so well their miseries define?*

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

*But such we are with inward tempest blowne  
Of mindes quite contrarie in waves of will:  
We mone that lost, which had we did bemone.*

*And shall shee dye? shall cruell fier spill  
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?  
Hath she not force even death with love to kill?  
Nay even cold Death enflamde with hot desire  
Her to enjoy, where joy it selfe is thrall,  
Will spoile the earth of his most rich attire.  
Thus Death becomes a rivall to us all,  
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,  
In whose decay Vertues faire shrine must fall.  
O Vertue weake, shall death his triumph set  
Upon thy spoiles, which never should lye waste?  
Let Death first dye; be thou his worthy let.  
By what eclipse shall that Sonne be defaste?  
What myne hath erst throwne downe so faire a tower?  
What sacriledge hath such a saint disgrast?  
The world the garden is, she is the flower  
That sweetens all the place; she is the guest  
Of rarest price, both heav'n and earth her bower.  
And shall (ô me) all this in ashes rest?  
Alas, if you a Phœnix new will have  
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.  
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would save  
Such beames so like his owne, which might have might  
In him, the thoughts of Phaëtons damme to grave.  
Therefore, alas, you use vile Vulcans spight,  
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe  
Which while it is, it is all Asias light.  
O Mars, for what doth serve thy armed axe?  
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame  
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?  
O Venus (if her praise no envy frames,  
In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.  
Sweete speaking oft a currish hart reclaimes.  
O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,  
Her face which was more lively in my hart;  
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;*

Plangus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*O hand, which toucht her hand when she did part ;  
 O lippes, that kist her hand with my teares spent ;  
 O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart ;  
 O soule, whose love in her is onely spent,  
 What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or love,  
 Let all for her, and unto her be bent.*

**Basilus.** *Thy wailing words do much my spirits move,  
 They uttred are in such a feeling fashion,  
 That sorrowes worke against my will I prove.  
 Me-thinks I am partaker of thy passion,  
 And in thy case do glasse mine owne debilitie :  
 Selfe-guiltie folke most prone to feele compassion.  
 Yet Reason saith, Reason should have abilitie,  
 To hold these worldly things in such proportion,  
 As let them come or go with even facilitie.  
 But our Desires tyrannicall extortion  
 Doth force us there to set our chiefe delightfulness,  
 Where but a baiting place is all our portion.  
 But still, although we faile of perfect rightfulness,  
 Seeke we to tame the childish superfluities :  
 Let us not winke though void of purest sightfulness.  
 For what can breed more peevish incongruities,  
 Then man to yeeld to female lamentations ?  
 Let us some grammar learne of more congruities.*

**Plangus.** *If through mine eares pearce any consolation  
 By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction ;  
 If ought I cease these hideous exclamations,  
 While that my soule, she, she lives in affliction ;  
 Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,  
 To wretched me, the last worst malediction.  
 Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,  
 For any joy, know fortunes vile displacing her,  
 In morall rules let raging woes contained be ?  
 Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,  
 With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulness  
 She lay for dead, till I helpt with unlasing her ?  
 Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulness  
 With Diamond in window-glasse she graved,  
 Erona dye, and end thy oughly painefulnes ?*



Can I forget in how straunge phrase she craved  
 That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or smother,  
 As if by death she onely might be saved?  
 Then let me eke forget one hand from other:  
 Let me forget that Plangus I am called:  
 Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,  
 But if my memory must thus be thrall'd  
 To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,  
 Can thoughts still thinking so rest unappall'd?

Who still doth seeke against himselfe offences,  
 What pardon can availe? or who employes him  
 To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defenses?  
 Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him ✓  
 In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,  
 He heapes in inward griefe, which most destroyes him.  
 Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled:  
 Thus be our noblest parts dryed up with sorrow:  
 Thus is our mind with too much minding spilled.  
 One day layes up stufte of griefe for the morrow:  
 And whose good haps do leave him unprovided,  
 Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow.  
 Betwixt the good and shade of good divided,  
 We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:  
 So are we from our high creation slided.  
 But Plangus lest I may your sicknesse misse  
 Or rubbing hurt the sore, I here doo end.  
 The asse did hurt when he did thinke to kisse.

Basilus

When *Zelma* had read it over, marveyling verie much of 3  
 the speeche of *Eronas* death, and therefore desirous to know  
 further of it, but more desirous to heare *Philoclea* speake, Most  
 excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading  
 the Dialogue, since it nether sets foorth what this *Plangus* is, nor  
 what *Erona* is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her  
 with death, and him with sorow: therefore I woulde humbly  
 crave to understand the particular discourse thereof: because (I  
 must confesse) some thing in my travaile I have heard of this  
 strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an  
 authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered *Philoclea*) that

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

after he knew my father to be Prince of this cuntry, while he hoped to prevaile something with him in a great request he made unto him, he was content to open fully unto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie; which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare unto you: and first of *Erona*, (being the chiefe Subject of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I liste to spende about it) he recounted.

## CHAP. 13.

*Erona* <sup>1</sup>irreligious gainst Love, <sup>2</sup>must love the base Antiphilus, <sup>3</sup>is loved, pursued, and beleaguered by the great Tiridates. <sup>4</sup>The two Greeke Princes ayde her. <sup>5</sup>They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. <sup>6</sup>Eronas hard-choice to redeeme him. <sup>7</sup>Tiridates slaine, Antiphilus delivered, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, <sup>8</sup>and her hate to them.

1 **O**F late there raigned a King in *Lycia*, who had for the blessing of his mariage, this onely daughter of his, *Erona*; a Princesse worthie for her beautie, as much praise, as beautie may be praise-worthy. This Princesse *Erona*, being 19. yeres of age, seeing the cuntry of *Lycia* so much devoted to *Cupid*, as that in every place his naked pictures & images were superstitiously adored (ether moved thereto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefast consideration of such nakednes) procured so much of her father, as utterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terrible he punished (for to that the *Lycians* impute it) quickly after appeared.

2 For she had not lived a yeare longer, when she was stricken with most obstinate Love, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named *Antiphilus*: so meane, as that he was but the sonne of her Nurse, & by that meanes (without other desert) became knowen of her. Now so evill could she conceale her fire, and so wilfully persevered she in it, that her father offering her the mariage of the great *Tiridates*, king of *Armenia*

(who desired her more then the joyes of heaven) she for *Antiphilus* sake refused it. Many wayes her father sought to withdrawe her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding *Antiphilus*, & giving her to understand that he was fled the countrie: Lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, under the name of *Antiphilus*, whom he kept in prison. But nether she liked perswasions, nor feared threatenings, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him dead, she sought all meanes (as well by poyson as by knife) to send her soule, at least, to be married in the eternall church with him. This so brake the tender fathers hart, that (leaving things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then forthwith *Erona* (being seized of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) sought to advance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before she could accōplish all the solēnities, she was 3 overtakē with a war the King *Tiridates* made upon her, only for her person; towards whom (for her ruine) Love had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruell & tyrannous: for (being far too strōg in the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to set forth the extremitie of his love, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of his Love, in the blood, & tuned thē in the cries of her subjects; although his fair sister *Artaxia* (who would accōpany him in the army) sought all meanes to appease his fury: till lastly, he besieged *Erona* in her best citie, vowing to winne her, or lose his life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull consent, or a ruinous deniall; whē there came thether (following the course which Vertue & Fortune led thē) two excellent yōūg Princes, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, the one Prince of *Macedō*, the other of *Thessalia*: two princes, as *Plāgus* said, (and he witnessed his saying with sighes & teares) the most accomplished both in body & mind, that the Sun ever lookt upon. While *Philoclea* spake those words, O sweete wordes (thought *Zelmane* to her self) which are not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of that mouth issueth.

These 2. princes (said *Philoclea*) aswel to help the weaker 4 (especially being a Ladie) as to save a Greeke people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest *Lycians*, as woulde venture their lives to succour their Princesse: giving order by a secreat

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set upon *Tiridates* campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be overthrown: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* hors-men) especially ayded by the two mightie men, *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, rescued the foot-men, even almost defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

5 Which when *Tiridates* found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and *Antiphilus*: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his fellow: but of whose side the more overcame, with him the victorie should remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he sawe it like enough, that the people (werie of the miseries of war) would rather give him up, if they saw him shrink, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selfe. So it was agreed upon; and against *Pyrocles* was *Euardes*, King of *Bithinia*; *Barzanes* of *Hircania*, against *Musidorus*, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against *Antiphilus* he placed this same *Plangus*, being his own cousin germain, & sonne to the King of *Iberia*. Now so it fell out that *Musidorus* slewe *Barzanes*, & *Pyrocles* *Euardes*; which victory those Princes esteemed above all that ever they had: but of the other side *Plangus* tooke *Antiphilus* prisoner: under which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being overcome of his side) *Tiridates* continued his war: & to bring *Erona* to a cōpelled yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne strike of *Antiphilus* head; without his suite in that space were graunted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectiō) that if in the meane time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be devised should be layed upon *Antiphilus*.

6 Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyranny of our own

thoughts seeme as a God unto us. But whatsoever it was, then it did set foorth the miserablenes of his effectes: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the love of him cōmaunded her to yeeld to no other: the love of him cōmaunded him to preserve his life: which knot might well be cut, but untied it could not be. So that Love in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doost thou love *Antiphilus*, ô *Erona*? and shal *Tiridates* enjoy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke upon *Antiphilus*, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man have thee, thou shalt never have more part of *Antiphilus* thẽ if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affectiō shalbe gnawing, & the remorse still present. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt ever love, and ever lacke. Thinke this beside, if thou marrie *Tiridates*, *Antiphilus* is so excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place married: canst thou suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shall die. But it shalbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him live to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Love had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said he) O *Erona*, and is thy Love of *Antiphilus* come to that point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much love, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but love of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide *Tiridates*: this is but love of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed to looke upō him afterward; this is but feare of shame, & love of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but love of thy selfe: he shalbe married; if he be well, why should that grieve thee, but for love of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, let *Antiphilus* die. Then the images of each side stood before her understanding; one time she thought she saw *Antiphilus* dying: an other time she thought *Antiphilus* saw her by *Tiridates* enjoyed: twenty times calling for a servaunt to carry message

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting; she was pale, whē she remēbred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her hāds, & tearing her haire, were indifferēt of both sides. Easily she wold have agreed to have broken al disputatiōs with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* furdur torments staid her. At lēgh, evē the evening before the day apointed of his death, the determinatiō of yeelding prevailed, especially, growing upō a message of *Antiphilus*; who with all the conjuring termes he could devise, besought her to save his life, upon any cōdition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, & falling downe at their feet, desired thē to trie some way for her deliverance; shewing her selfe resolved, not to over-live *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

- 7 They that knew not what she had done in private, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it fals out, that what is incōstancy, seemes cūning; so did this chāge indeed stand in as good steed as a witty dissimulatiō. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligēt: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne; with whō she would needs go, either to die her self, or reskew *Antiphilus*, having no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what devise (though *Plangus* at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so prevailed, that *Antiphilus* was succoured, and the King slaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedie, cōveied in safety into her country *Artaxia*, now
- 8 Queene of *Armenia*; who with true lamētations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way cōfort her in respect of her brothers losse, whō she studied all meanes possible to revenge upon every one of the occasioners, having (as she thought) overthrowne her brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch, that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to any private man, and her selfe in mariage to any Prince, that would destroy *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus* redeemed, and (though against the consent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which case the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an other adventure) left them.

## CHAP. 14.

<sup>1</sup>Philocleas narration broken of by Miso. <sup>2</sup>Her old-wives tale,  
<sup>3</sup>and ballad against Cupid. <sup>4</sup>Their drawing cuts for tales.  
<sup>5</sup>Mopsas tale of the old cut : <sup>6</sup>cut of by the Ladies to returne  
to their stories.

BUT now me thinkes as I have read some Poets, who when <sup>1</sup> they intēd to tell some horrible matter, they bid men shun the hearing of it: so if I do not desire you to stop your eares frō me, yet may I well desire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treason of *Antiphilus*, that brought her to this misery; and withall wish you al, that frō al mankind indeed you stop your eares. O most happy were we, if we did set our loves one upon another. (And as she spake that worde, her cheekes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.) And therefore since I have named *Plangus*, I pray you sister (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I have helde the stage long inough; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I have done *Eronas*, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falshood; & so betweene us both, my Ladie *Zelmane* shall understand both the cause and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beshrow me then (said *Miso*) I wil none of that, I promise you, as lōg as I have the governmēt, I will first have my tale, & thē my Lady *Pamela*, my Lady *Zelmane*, & my daughter *Mopsa* (for *Mopsa* was then returned frō *Amphialus*) may draw cuts, & the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you, and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil have first, and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestnesse she looked, having threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & *Miso* (sitting on the groūd with her knees up, & her hands upon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quavering cough, thus discoursed unto thē. I tel you <sup>2</sup> true (said she) whatsoever you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennie as good silver, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hasty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might have

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

had an other-gaines husbād, thē *Dametas*. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of *Cupid*: here is *Cupid*, & there is *Cupid*. I will tell you now, what a good old womā told me, what an old wise mā told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gave it him in writing; and here I have it in my praier booke. I pray you (said *Philoclea*) let us see it, & read it. No hast but good (said *Miso*) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a seven and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the streate of our village, but I might heare the young mē talke; O the pretie little eies of *Miso*; O the fine thin lips of *Miso*; O the goodly fat hands of *Miso*: besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, & the other cast daiseys at me: I must cōfesse, seing so many amorous, it made me set up my peacocks tayle with the hiest. Which when this good old womā perceived (O the good wold womā) she cald me to her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her, and taking first a soppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the same wine that comes out of *Candia*, which we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her; Minion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies though I say it) I see a nūber of lads that love you; Wel (said she) I say no more: doo you know what Love is? With that she broght me into a corner, where ther was painted a foule fiēd I trow: for he had a paire of hornes like a Bull, his feete cloven, as many eyes upon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world so placed. This mōster sat like a hāgman upō a paire of gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, & out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a mā & a womā, & such a cōutenance he shewed, as if he would perswade folks by those aluremēts to come thither & be hanged. I, like a tēder harted wench, skrieked out for feare of the divell. Well (sayd she) this same is even Love: therefore do what thōu list with all those fellows, one after another; & it recks not much what they do to thee, so it be in secreat; but upon my charge, never



love none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come frō the belly of the faire *Fenus*? for a few dayes before, our (priest betweene him & me) had tolde me the whole storie of *Venus*. Tush (said she) they are all deceived: and therewith gave me this Booke, which she said a great maker of ballets had given to an old painter, who for a litle pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false *Argus* his father. And so she gave me this Booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weepe, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carkasse of sorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling upon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her praier booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

**P**oore Painters oft with silly Poets joyne,  
To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:  
One brings the stuffe, the other stamps the coine,  
Which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.

Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do  
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.  
Is he a God, that ever flies the light?  
Or naked he, disguis'd in all untruth?  
If he be blind, how hitteth he so right?  
How is he young, that tam'de old Phœbus youth?

But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:  
Some hurt accuse a third with horny head.

No, nothing so; an old false knave he is  
By Argus got on Io, then a cow:  
What time for her Juno her Jove did misse,  
And charge of her to Argus did allow.

Mercury kill'd his false sire for this act,  
His damme a beast was pardon'd beastly fact.  
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,  
With Joves disdain at such a rivals seed,  
The wretch compell'd a runnagate became,  
And learn'd what ill a miser state doth breed,  
To lye, faine, gloze, to steale, pry, and accuse,  
Naught in himselfe ech other to abuse.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,  
A horned head, cloven foote, and thousand eyes,  
Some gazing still, some winking wilye shiftes,  
With long large eares where never rumour dyes.*

*His horned head doth seeme the heaven to spight:*

*His cloven foote doth never treade aright.*

*Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,  
Cloth'd in the shape which soonest may deceave:*

*Thus halfe a beast, ech beastly vice he plants,*

*In those weake harts that his advice receave.*

*He proules ech place stil in new colours deckt,*

*Sucking ones ill, another to infect.*

*To narrow brests he comes all wrapt in gaine:*

*To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:*

*To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;*

*Creeping to ech with flattering of desire.*

*But for that Loves desire most rules the eyes,*

*Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lyes.*

*Millions of yeares this old drivell Cupid lives;*

*While still more wretch, more wicked he doth prove:*

*Till now at length that Jove him office gives,*

*(At Junos suite who much did Argus love)*

*In this our world a hang-man for to be,*

*Of all those fooles that will have all they see.*

- 4 These Ladies made sport at the description and storie of *Cupid*. But *Zelmane* could scarce suffer those blasphemies (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly besought *Pamela* she would perfourme her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered she, beautifying her face with a sweete smiling, and the sweetnes of her smiling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not give example of disobedience. My governesse will have us draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let us do so: and so perhaps it will light upon you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliver. I will thinke (answered *Zelmane*) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to favour me. But *Pamela* pleasantly persisting to have fortune their

judge, they set hands, and *Mopsa* (though at the first for squeamishnes going up & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulour of them) gave her the preheminance: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cause) she thus tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there was a King, the mightiest man in all his country, that had by his wife, the fairest daughter that ever did 5  
eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great house, that every body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was sitting in her window, playing upon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her head with a combe all of precious stones, there came in a Knight into the court, upō a goodly horse, one haire of gold, & the other of silver; and so the Knight casting up his eyes to the window, did fall into such love with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a sorry day going over his head, with Dayly Diligence and Grisly Groñes, he wan her affection, so that they agreed to run away together. And so in May, when all true hartes rejoyce, they stale out of the Castel, without staying so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as they went together, often all to kissing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought up among the water Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were ever askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and therefore charged her upon his blessing, that she never aske him what he was, nor whether he would. And so a great while she kept his commandement; til once, passing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not choose but aske him the question. And then, he making the greevousest cōplaints that would have melted a tree to have heard them, vanisht quite away: & she lay down, casting forth as pitifull criès as any shrich-owle. But having laien so, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) five dayes, & five nights, she gat up and went over many a high hil, & many a deepe river; till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, & cried to her for helpe: and she for pittie gave her a Nut, and bad her never open her Nut, til she was come to the extremest misery that ever tongue could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & never rested the evening, wher she wēt in the morning; til she came to a second Aunt; and she gave her another Nut.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

6 Now good *Mopsa* (said the sweete *Philoclea*) I pray thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shalbe thine. *Mopsa* was very glad of the bargaine, especially that it shuld grow a festival Tale: so that *Zelmane*, who desired to finde the uttermost what these Ladies understood touching her selfe, and having understood the danger of *Erona* (of which before she had never heard) purposing with her selfe (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the story of *Plangus*, as of *Erona*. *Philoclea* referred it to her sisters perfecter remēbrāce, who with so sweet a voice, and so winning a grace, as in themselves were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condiscended.

### CHAP. 15.

<sup>1</sup> *Plangus-his parentage.* <sup>2</sup> *His trick of youth,* <sup>3</sup> *espied,* <sup>4</sup> *ſ turned over by, and to his old father.* <sup>5</sup> *An inveagling-womans arts.* <sup>6</sup> *A guilty stepmothers divellish practises against Plangus.* <sup>7</sup> *Her ministers false informations.* <sup>8</sup> *Plangus perplexities.* <sup>9</sup> *His fathers jealousies.* *The Queenes complots* <sup>10</sup> *to feede the ones suspicion,* <sup>11</sup> *ſ work the others overthrow.* <sup>12</sup> *Plangus taken;* <sup>13</sup> *delivered flieth:* <sup>14</sup> *is pursued with old hate, & new treason.* <sup>15</sup> *Yet must he serve abroad, while a new heire is made at home.* <sup>16</sup> *This story broken off by Basilius.*

1 **T**He father of this Prince *Plangus* as yet lives, and is King of *Iberia*: a man (if the judgement of *Plangus* may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing evill, without himselfe mistake the evill, seeing it disguised under some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princesse (who both from her auncesters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, *Plangus*. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had perfourmed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again unto her maker. The King (sealing up al thoughts of

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

love under the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after; recompensing the griefe of that disjoyning from her, in conjoyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, *Plangus*. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may judge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused 2 by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault upon it selfe) loved a private mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called love, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly. then by which he was takẽ forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man perswaded himself he loved her: she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possible, that the outside onely can justly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectiõ with her to that point, which ought to engrave remorse in her harte, & to paint shame upon her face. And so possest he his desire without any interruption; he constantly favouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I have seene one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his minde (unworthie so to be loste) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leaving of the court (in 3 undue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came unto the King; who (carefull of his onely sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie evill servauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diverted.

Whereupon, the King (to give his fault the greater blow) 4 used such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings upon her, and upon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceived with that young opinion, that if it be ever lawfull to lie, it is for ones Lover,) employed all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

he coulede possible, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set foorth her chastitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie prevayled, his father beleevd; and so beleevd; that ere long (though he were alredy stept into the winter of his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gave himselfe over unto it; and (because he would avoide the odious comparison of a yong rivall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Province lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse worke, thẽ of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaved him so worthilie, as even to this country the fame therof came, long before his own cõming: while yet his father had a speedier succes, but in a far unnobler conquest. For while *Plangus* was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectiõ) folowed his suite with all meanes of dishonest servants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to countervaille his owne unlovelines.

- 5 And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent *Plangus*, or at lest not hoping of him to obtaine so aspiring a purpose, lefte no arte unused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the fishe was alredy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself upon the hooke, which he had greedely swallowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenance, yet neither forgetting hansomnes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were ever seasoned with sighes; and any favour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might perswade  
 > cause of affection. And being growen skilfull in his humors, she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: never suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loved him; and a certaine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he straight was encountred with a maske of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible unto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as *Plangus* tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo; & weep when she would, as (they say) some can doo; but (being most impudent in her

hart) she could, when she would, teach her chekes blushing, and make shamefastnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leave out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely use so the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but so the bit, that it ran on, evē in such a careere as she would have it; that within a while, the king, seeing with no other eyes but such as she gave him, & thinking no other thoghts but such as she taught him; having at the first liberall measure of favors then shortned of thē, when most his Desire was inflamed; he saw no other way but mariage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) loving, but chastly loving. So that by the time *Plangus* returned from being notably victoriorious of the Rebels, he foūd his father, not only married, but alredy a father of a sonne & a daughter by this womā. Which though *Plāgus* (as he had every way just cause) was grieved at; yet did his grief never bring forth ether cōtemning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was growen 6 a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condēnation: so much the more, as that she (unchastly attempting his wōted fācies) foūd (for the reverēce of his fathers bed) a bitter refusall: which breeding rather spite then shame in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not onely (as hating him) thirst for a revenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeavoured to doo harme unto him. Therefore did she trie the uttermost of her wicked wit, how to overthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the favour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cūning how to undermine it. ✓ And therfore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her ad-vauncing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neerer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excellēcies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his successes: so as the father might finde in her a singular love towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe sparkes of jelousie in him. Thus having gotten an opinion in his father, that she was farre from meaning mischiefe to the sonne, then fell she to praise

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

him with no lesse vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets forth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fitnessse in him to beare rule, the singular love the Subjects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their favors, or his courage in employing their favours: that he was not borne to live a subject-life, each action of his bearing in it Majestie, such a Kingly entertainment, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprises: especially remembering those vertues, which in a successor are no more honoured by the subjects, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by putting-of objectiōs, bring in objectiōs to her husbands head, alredy infected with suspitiō. Nay (would she say) I dare take it upon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might have bene, who loved greatnes so well, as to build their greatnes upon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Love, can abide no lingring, & ever urgeth on his own successes; hating nothing, but what may stop thē. But the Gods forbid, we should ever once dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praise, that he wil not hurt. Then ever remembering to strengthen the suspition of his estate with private jelousie of her love, doing him excessive honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speeches and graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be imploied in all such dangerous matters, as ether he should perish in them, or if he prevailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to wound him, untill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into every accident.

- 7 Then tooke she help to her of a servant neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hasty ambitiō, and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischiefe. Him she useth to deale more plainly in alleaging causes of jealousy, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with divers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musitians, that singing divers parts, make one musicke. He



sometime with fearefull countenaunce would desire the King to looke to himselfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation of some suddaine change, upon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the King to make much of his sonne, and holde his favour, for that it was too late now to keepe him under. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he said) *Plangus* loved none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful countenance, & an humble gesture beare false witnesse for his true meaning) that he foūd, not only souldiery, but people weary of his government, & al their affections bent upon *Plangus*. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment: so that within a while, all *Plangus* actions began to be translated into the language of suspicion.

Which though *Plangus* foūd, yet could he not avoid, even 8 cōtraries being driven to draw one yoke of argumēt: if he were magnificēt, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mused upon some dangerous plot. In summe, if he could have turned himself to as many formes as *Proteus*, every forme should have bene made tedious.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gave thē occasion of 9 further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy superstitious through suspitiō) amazed him streight, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answeres, as while they strave, strave to be overcome. But even while the doubt es most boiled, she thus nourished them.

She (under-hand dealt with the principall mē of that cōtry, 10 that at the great Parliamēt (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates perswade the King (being

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

now stept deeply into old age) to make *Plangus*, his associate in governmēt with him : assuring thē, that not only she would joine with them, but that the father himself would take it kindly ; chargeing thē not to acquaint *Plangus* withal ; for that perhaps it might be harmful unto him, if the King should find, that he wer a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loved him, & truly, because such indeed was the minde of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed therto) accōplished her coūsell : she indeed keeping promise of vehement perswading the same : which the more she & they did, the more she knew her husbād would fear, & hate the cause of his feare. *Plangus* fōūd this, & hūbly protested against such desire, or wil to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he dissēbled, accōūting his integritie to be but a cūning face of falshood : and therfore delaying the desire of his subjects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands upon his sonne : which his wife thus brought to passe.

- II She caused that same minister of hers to go unto *Plāgus*, & (enabling his words with great shew of faith, & endearing them with desire of secresie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conspired by his stepmother, with certain of the noble men of that cōūtry, the King himselfe giving his consent, and that few daies should passe, before the putting it in practize : with all discovering the very truth indeed, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreing with *Plangus* his owne opiniō, made him give him the better credit : yet not so far, as to flie out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see further. Wherupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistresse) told him one day, that the same night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to have his wife, & those noble mē together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding against *Plangus* : & therfore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he should heare all that passed ; & so have the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safetie. The poore *Plāgus* (being subjeēt to that only disadvantage of honest harts, credulitie) was perswaded by him : & arming himself (because of his late going) was closely conveyed into the place appointed. In the meane time his stepmother

making all her gestures cunningly counterfait a miserable afflictiō, she lay almost groveling on the flower of her chāber, not suffering any body to cōfort her; untill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, she told him (even almost crying out every word) that she was wery of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husbāds murther, or accuse her sonne, who had ever bene more deare, then a sonne unto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne *Plangus* (solliciting her in the old affection betweene them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; assuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were against it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitifull 12 digressiōs, whē in comes the same fellow, that brought *Plāgus*: & runing himself out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beseeching him to save himself, for that there was a man with sword drawen in the next roome. The King affrighted, wēt out, & called his gard, who entring the place, fōūd indeed *Plangus* with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but stāding suspiciously inough, to one already suspicious. The King (thinking he had put up his sworde because of the noise) never tooke leasure to heare his answer, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the eies & eares of his 13 friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, and by force delivered him; although nūbers on the other side (abused with the fine framing of their report) tooke armes for the King. But *Plangus*, though he might have used the force of his friends to revenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall love of his father, and hate to make their suspition seeme just, caused him rather to choose a volūtarie exile, thē to make his fathers death the purchase of his life: & therefore went he to *Tiridates*, whose mother was his fathers sister, living in his Court eleven or twelve yeares, ever hoping by his intercession, and his owne desert, to recover his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of *Erona* happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discoursed unto you.

But his father had so deeply engraved the suspicion in his 14

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulness; & therefore continued his hate, with such vehemencie, that he did ever hate his Nephew *Tiridates*, and afterwards his neece *Artaxia*, because in their Court he received countenance, leaving no meanes unattēpted of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked servant of his, who undertooke to empoysen him. But his cūning disguised him not so well, but that the watchful servāts of *Plāgus* did discover him. Wherupō the wretch was taken, & (before his well-deserved execution) by torture forced to confesse the particularities of this, which in generall I have told you.

- 15 Which cōfession autenticallly set downe (though *Tiridates* with solemne Embassage sent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King having put the reines of the government into his wives hande, never did so much as reade it; but sent it streight by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred upon *Plangus*, for the death of their servaunt. And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the wavering peoples affection towards *Plangus*, with advauncing fit persons for faction, and graunting great immunities to the commons, they prevailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called *Palladius*, to be proclaymed successour, and *Plangus* quite excluded: so that *Plangus* was driven to continue his serving *Tiridates*, as he did in the warre against *Erona*, and brought home *Artaxia*, as my sister tolde you; when *Erona* by the treason of *Antiphilus*, But at that word she stopped. For *Basilus* (not able longer to abide their absence) came sodainly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling *Zelmane* he was affraid she had stollen away his daughters) invited them to follow the Sunnes counsel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to set. They yeelded, *Zelmane* meaning some other time to understand the storie of *Antiphilus* treason, and *Eronas* daunger, whose case she greatly tendred. But *Miso* had no sooner espied *Basilus*, but that as spitefully, as her rotten voice could utter it, she set forth the sawcinesse of *Amphialus*. But *Basilus* onely attended what *Zelmanes* opinion was, who though she hated *Amphialus*, yet the nobilitie of her courage prevailed over it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error;

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he governed himselfe, as one remembring his fault. *Basilius* giving the infinite tearmes of praises to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

### CHAP. 16.

<sup>1</sup>*The cumber of Zelmanes love and lovers.* <sup>2</sup>*Gynecias love-lamentations.* <sup>3</sup>*Zelmanes passions* <sup>4</sup>*& sonet.* <sup>5</sup>*Basilius-his wooing, and Zelmanes answers.* <sup>6</sup>*Philoclea feed attorney to plead her fathers cause.*

SO brought he them up to visite his wife, where betweene <sup>1</sup>her, & him, the poore *Zelmane* receaved a tedious entertainemēt; oppressed with being loved, almost as much, as with loving. *Basilius* not so wise in covering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Lover thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heavens. But *Gynecia* (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes use the advantage of her sexe in kissing *Zelmane*, as she sate upon her bedde-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast upon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once *Zelmane* could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whose motion stooode onely upon her pleasure) *Basilius* with serviceable steppes, *Gynecia* with greedie eyes would follow her. *Basilius* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could have found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could have borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Basilius*, as proceeding from jealousie of his amorousnesse. *Zelmane* betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beates him, will make him beleewe it is for love; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tasting wallowish medicine he profers, is of a good taste) their love was hatefull, their courtesie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to her selfe) deare *Dorus*, what ods is there betweene thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to doo in thy pursuite but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little envious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I have now *Misa*, the worst of thy divels, let loose upon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Love and Jealousie. Alas, incomparable *Philoclea*, thou ever seest me, but dost never see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who ever but I was imprisoned in libertie, and banished being still present? To whom but me have lovers bene jailours, and honour a captivitie?

- 2 But the night comming on with her silent steps upon thẽ, they parted ech from other (if at lest they could be parted, of whom every one did live in another) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally upon such eies which by their will would ever be looking: and in lest measure upon *Gynecia*, who (when *Basilus* after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights removed from her) kneeling up in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renue the curses of her birth; & thẽ in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chastest bed of mine (said she) which never heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receave this desastred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feele, that thou hast no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here ô forgotten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice; while my soule was clothed with modestie, that was a comely ornament: now why should nature crowne that head, which is so wicked, as her onely despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would have said, but that *Basilus* (awaked with the noise) tooke her in his armes, & begã to cõfort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a jealous love of him: which humor if she would a litle have maintained, perchance it might have weakned his new conceived fancies. But he finding her answeres wandring frõ the purpose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the advãtage of a sleepe, which a little before day, overwatched

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

with sorrow, her teares had as it were sealed up in her eyes) to have the more conference with *Zelmane*, who baited on this fashion by these two lovers, & ever kept from any meane to declare herselfe, found in her selfe a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a river the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was 3  
sometime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her unhap. There would she kisse the ground, and thanke the trees, blisse the aier, & do dutifull reverence to every thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; sometimes despaire darkning all her imaginations, sometimes the active passion of Love cheering and cleering her invention, how to unbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-matched lovers. But this morning *Basilus* himself gave her good occasion to go beyond them. For having combd and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, comming where *Zelmane* was, he found her given over to her musicall muses, to the great pleasure of the good old *Basilus*, who retired himself behinde a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did utter these passionate verses.

**L**oved I am, and yet complaine of Love: 4  
*As loving not, accus'd, in Love I die.*  
*When pittie most I crave, I cruell prove:*  
*Still seeking Love, love found as much I flie.*

*Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:*  
*What I call wrong, I doo the same, and more:*  
*Bard of my will, I have beyond desire:*  
*I waile for want, and yet am chokte with store.*

*This is thy worke, thou God for ever blinde:*  
*Though thousands old, a Boy entit'led still.*  
*Thus children doo the silly birds they finde,*  
*With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.*  
*Yet thus much Love, O Love, I crave of thee:*  
*Let me be lov'd, or els not loved be.*

*Basilus* made no great haste from behind the tree, till he 5  
perceaved she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

12  
 loose the pretious fruite of time, he presented himselfe unto her, falling downe upon both his knees, and holding up his hands, as the old governesse of *Danae* is painted, when she sodainly saw the goldē shoure, O heavly womā, or earthly Goddess (said he) let not my presence be odious unto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend upon this miserable old-mā, whose life hath hitherto bene maintained but to serve as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only have over throwne me, & in my bondage cōsists my glory. Suffer not your owne worke to be despised of you: but looke upon him with pittie, whose life serves for your praise. *Zelmane* (keeping a cōūtenāce ascanses she understood him not) told him, It became her evil to suffer such excessive reverence of him, but that it worse became her to correct him, to whom she owed duetie: that the opinion she had of his wisdom was such, as made her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themselves sounded so, as she could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (said *Basilus*, proud that that was brought in question) what may they intend, but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat, and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life is upheld, and my death threatned? *Zelmane* lifting up her face as if she had receaved a mortall injurie of him, And is this the devotion your ceremonies have bene bent unto? said she: Is it the disdaine of my estate, or the opinion of my lightnesse, that have emboldned such base fancies towards me? enjoying quoth you? now little joy come to them that yeeld to such enjoying. Poore *Basilus* was so appalled, that his legges bowed under him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to his hart, a generall shaking all over his bodie possessed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to give a stammering answer, when it came into *Zelmanes* head by this devise to make her profite of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus said unto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were unfit either for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large testimonie I see of your affection makes me willing to suppress a great number of errors. Onely thus much I thinke good to say, that the same words in my Ladie *Philocleas* mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by)



## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

might have had a better grace; and perchance have found a gentler receipt.

*Basilus* (whose senses by Desire were held open, and conceit was by Love quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answer out, but that (as if speedie flight might save his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speede his bodie would suffer him, towardes his daughter *Philoclea*: whom he found at that time duetifully watching by her mother, and *Miso* curiouslie watching her; having left *Mopsa* to doo the like service to *Pamela*. *Basilus* foorthwith calling *Philoclea* aside, (with all the conjuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie utter) besought her she would preserve his life, in whō her life was begonne; she would save his graye haire from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth over-burdened with him, she would coole his fierie grieffe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoever he was, he was nothing but what it pleased *Zelmane*; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitfull in the Sunnes continuall absence. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdain any service (though never so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. *Philoclea* more glad then ever she had knowen her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enjoy the private conference of *Zelmane*, yet had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast over her faire thoughts; but with humble grace answered her father: That there needed nether promise nor perswasion to her, to make her doo her uttermost for her fathers service. That for *Zelmanes* favour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she would not pearce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interprete all his doinges to be accomplished in goodnes: and therefore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he would not imparte it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had ever beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprong out of passion, and contrarie to the former. *Basilus* content to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

take that, since he could have no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free accesse unto *Zelmana*) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer thākfully, desiring onely a speedy returne of comfort. *Philoclea* was parting, and *Miso* streight behind her, like *Aleſto* following *Proserpina*. But *Basilus* forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharp-set upon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in over-looking *Philoclea*: and so said to *Basilus*, that she did as she was comanded, and could not answere it to *Gynecia*, if she were any whitte from *Philoclea*: telling him true, that he did evill to take her charge from her. But *Basilus*, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stird a foote to trouble his daughter) gave her a stoppe for that while.

### CHAP. 17.

<sup>1</sup> *Zelmanes teares,* <sup>2</sup> *and tearefull dittie.* <sup>3</sup> *Philoclea enters conference with her.* <sup>4</sup> *She shues, and shewes her selfe Prince Pyrocles.* <sup>5</sup> *Philoclea feares much, but loves more.* <sup>6</sup> *Their conclusion,* <sup>7</sup> *with reentrie to their intermitted historiologie.*

SO away departed *Philoclea*, with a new field of fancies for her travayling mind. For well she sawe, her father was growen her adverse partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must favour her Rivall; and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

I But she walkt but a little on, before she saw *Zelmana* lying upon a banke, with her face so bent over *Ladon*, that (her teares falling into the water) one might have thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the under-running river. But by and by, with speech she made knowen, as well that she lived, as that she sorrowed. Faire streames (said she) that do vouchsafe in your cleerenes to represent unto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares unto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleasure doo not flie away from me. But if the

violence of your spring commaund you to haste away, to pay your duties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you these fewe wordes, and let the uttermost ends of the world know them. A Love more cleer then you selves, dedicated to a Love (I feare) more cold then your selves, with the cleerenes layes a night of sorow upon me; and with the coldenes enflames a worlde of fire within me. With that she tooke a willowe stick, and wrote in a sandie banke these fewe verses.

**O** *Ver these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes,* 2  
*(Mine eyes even great in labour with their teares)*  
*I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes*  
*Clusters of cloudes, which no Sunne ever cleares.*  
*In watry glasse my watrie eyes I see:*  
*Sorrowes ill easde, where sorrowes painted be.*

*My thoughts imprisonde in my secreat woes,*  
*With flamie breathes doo issue oft in sound:*  
*The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,*  
*But that it dooth with Echoes force rebound.*  
*And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:*  
*Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.*

*Now in this sande I would discharge my minde,*  
*And cast from me part of my burdnous cares:*  
*But in the sand my tales foretolde I finde,*  
*And see therein how well the writer fares.*  
*Since streame, aier, sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:*  
*What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?*

And assoon as she had written them (a new swarme of 3 thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her foot to give the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But *Philoclea* (to whom delight of hearing and seeing was before a stay from interrupting her) gave her self to be seen unto her, with such a lightning of Beauty upō *Zelmane*, that nether she could looke on, nor would looke of. At last *Philoclea* (having a little mused how to cut the threede even, betweene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers unbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each sange their parte, to make up the harmonie of bashfulnesse) began to say, My Father to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whom I owe my self, & therefore, When *Zelmane* (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giving up her life to the lippes of *Philoclea*, and taking it againe by the sweetnesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for a while within the Paradise of her minde. For well she knew her fathers errād, who should soon receive a sufficient answere. But now she demaunded leave not to loose this long sought-for commoditie of time, to ease her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her destinie was to be condemned by *Philocleas* mouth, at lest *Philoclea* might know, whom she had condemned. *Philoclea* easily yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the river the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Nature, *Zelmane* doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the unworthinesse of every worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

- 4 Most beloved Ladie, the incomparable excellencies of your selfe, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning, and many circumstaunces in the uttering my speech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the small opportunitie of envious occasion (by the malicious eie hateful Love doth cast upon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by respects due unto you, in respect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or never to be preserved. I doo therefore vowe unto you, hereafter never more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If ever the sound of Love have come to your eares, or if ever you have understood, what force it hath had to conquere the strongest hartes, and change the most setled estates: receive here an example of those straunge Tragedies; one, that in him selfe containeth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleve that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see (I say) a living image, and a present storie of what Love can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goest thou my tongue? or how doth my

harte consent to adventure the revealing his nearest touching secrete? But peace Feare, thou comdest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a miserable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes *Pyrocles*, Prince of *Macedon*, whome you onely have brought to this game of Fortune, and unused *Metamorphosis*: whome you onely have made neglect his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake to be *Pyrocles*: the same *Pyrocles*, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, *Pyrocles* was drowned. O most true presage: for these traytors, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betraied me, will never leave till they have drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whome vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddess of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred upon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may be waied in the ballances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the highest Love in no base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwise you be (alas but let it never be so) resolved, yet shall not my death be comfortles, receiving it by your sentence.

The joy which wrought into *Pygmalions* mind, while he found his beloved image was softer, & warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accōplished his gladnes with a perfect womans shape (still beautified with the former perfections) was even such, as by each degree of *Zelmanes* wordes creepingly entred into *Philoclea*: till her pleasure was fully made up with the manifesting of his being; which was such as in hope did over-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine have playd his parte in her minde, and cald in question, how she should be assured that *Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Love streight stood up & deposed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of *Zelmane*. Besides, a certain sparke of honour, which rose in her well-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

✓ disposed minde, made her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone she desired to be (with all the other cōtradictions growing in those minds, which nether absolutly clime the rocke of Vertue, nor freely sinke into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soone gave place, or at lest gave no more light in her mind, then a cādle doth in the Sunnes presence. But even sicke with a surfet of joy, and fearefull of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge treasures, doubteth whether he sleepe or no; or like a fearfull Deere, which then lookes most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of tremor through all her principall partes, she gave these affectionate wordes for answeere. Alas, how painefull a thing it is to a devided minde to make a wel-joynd answeere? how harde it is to bring inwarde shame to outward confession? and what handsomnes trow you can be observed in that speeche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I say ô *Zelmane*? Alas your wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince *Pyrocles*? wretch that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, *Philoclea*, you had either never bene, or ever bene *Zelmane*: you had either never attempted this change, set on with hope, or never discovered it, stopt with despaire. But I feare me, my behaviour ill governed, gave you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath givẽ you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my government before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull unto me: & my weaker governmēt since, makes you to pull of the visar. What shall I doo then? shal I seeke far-fetched inventions? shall I labour to lay marble coulours over my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is, ô *Zelmane* (for so I love to call thee, since in that name my love first began, and in the shade of that name my love shall best lie hidden,) that even while so thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sory, or that my love must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to *Pyrocles*? how may that wel be, since when thou wert *Zelmane*, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: use it with vertue. Thy vertue

wan me; with vertue preserve me. Doost thou love me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloved.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing 6  
looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affectiō, a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded to have done. But *Pyrocles* so caried up with joy, that he did not envy the Gods felicitie, presented her with some jewels of right princely value, as some litle tokens of his love, & qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King *Euarchus*, unto him, which even in the Sea had amongst his jewels bene preserved. But little needed those proofes to one, who would have fallen out with her selfe, rather then make any contrarie conjectures to *Zelmanes* speeches; so that with such imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine *Pyrocles* would have sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but *Philoclea* commaunded the contrary; and yet they passed the promise of mariage.

And then at *Philocleas* entreaty, who was willing to pur- 7  
loine all occasions of remayning with *Zelmana*, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their departing from *Erona*, for the rest she had already understood of her sister. For (saide she) I have understood, how you first in the companie of your Noble cousin *Musidorus* parted from *Thessalia*, and of divers adventures, which with no more daunger then glory you passed through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene *Erona*; and the ende of that warre (you might perceive by my selfe) I had understood of the Prince *Plangus*. But what since was the course of your doings, until you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof having rather shewed it by pieces; then delivered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere *Pyrocles* (for what can mine eares be so sweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall unto me of those things which have made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I have you here out of them, even the remembrance of them is pleasaunt. *Pyrocles* easily perceived she was content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Love shewed himselfe a cowardly boy, that durst not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Love proved him selfe

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

valiant, that durst with the sworde of reverent dutie gaine-stand the force of so many enragèd desires. But so it was, that though he knewe this discourse was to entertaine him from a more streight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod, and gladly make much of the entertainment which she allotted unto him: and therefore with a desirous sigh chastning his brest for too much desiring, Sweete Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophees, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories may ever make my fame yeeld so sweete a Musicke to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching *Pyrocles*, onely therefore of value, because he is your *Pyrocles*? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to give it hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of *Tiridates*, and settling *Erona* in her government; for settled we left her, howsoever since (as I perceivèd by your speech the last day) the ungrateful treason of her ill-chosen husband overthrew her (a thing in trueth never till this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without having such a minde as *Antiphilus*, that so great a beautie as *Eronas* (indeed excellent) could not have held his affection? so great goodnes could not have bound gratefulnessse? and so high advancement could not have satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottomlesse pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to give ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my Cosen, and me, upon this cause we parted from *Erona*.

### CHAP. 18.

<sup>1</sup> *Anaxius-his surcuidrie*; <sup>2</sup> *and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted.*

<sup>3</sup> *The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-love.* <sup>4</sup> *Pyrocles-his intercession in the cause.* <sup>5</sup> *The lewd parts of that light lecher.* <sup>6</sup> *His scoffing excuses.* <sup>7</sup> *Didos revenge on him stopped,*  
<sup>8</sup> *and his revenge on her stayed by Pyrocles.*

<sup>1</sup> **E***Vardes* (the brave & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the cōbat for *Erona*) had three Nephewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set among the



foremost rācks of Fame for great minds to attēpt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; especially the eldest, by name *Anaxius*; to whom al men would willingly have yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to bestow it upon himselfe, before any could give it. For of so unsupportable a pride he was, that where his deede might well stirre envie, his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the *Gyants* ever made war against heaven, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing unjust, while his liking was his justice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid; because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince *Plāgus* was by his cosen *Tiridates* preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the sword & speare in judging of desert, how-much he esteemed himselfe before *Plangus* in that, so much would he have had his allowance in his service.

But now that he understood that his uncle was slaine by 2 me, I thinke rather scorne that any should kil his uncle, then any kindnesse (an un-used guest to an arrogant soule) made him seeke his revenge; I must confesse in manner gallant enough. For he sent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of *Lycia*; where he would prove upon me, that I had by some trecherie overcome his uncle, whom els many hundreds such as I, could not have withstood. Youth & successe made me willing enough to accept any such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that your cosen *Amphialus* (who for some yeares hath universally borne the name of the best Knight in the world) had divers times fought with him, & never bene able to master him; but so had left him, that every man thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of curtesie far short of him, in al other his match; *Anaxius* stil deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, because so I understood for certaine, he was; and (I must confesse) desirous to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince *Musidorus*, because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to any thing in my self, whatsoever before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as received, what ever there is, or

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

may be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giving me in him so lively an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist over mine eyes, as not to see, and to love it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as (ô heavens) how cā my life ever requite unto him? which made me indeed find in my selfe such a kind of depending upon him, as without him I found a weakenesse, and a mistrustfulnes of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiving to over-rulé me, I strave against it; not that I was unwilling to depend upon him in judgemēt, but by weakenesse I would not; which though it held me to him, made me unworthy of him. Therfore I desired his leave, and obtained it: such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tendernes; and so privately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in secreat maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to prevent any foule play that might be offered unto me. Full loth was *Erona* to let us depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from those combers of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes journey in my way toward *Anaxius*) met an adventure, (though in it selfe of small importance) I will tell you at large, because by the occasion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

- 3 As I past through a Laund (ech side whereof was so bordred both with high tymber trees, and copeses of farre more humble growth, that it might easily bring a solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgesses of the forrest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawses to mine eares from within the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie unmanlike voice, so to crie. But making mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I saw at the bottome of one of them a gentle-man bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might tomble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Upō him (like so many Eagles upon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such, as one might well enough say, they were handsome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, having bene before-hand unarmed of

any defence from the wast upward, but onely of his shirte: so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported themselves in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moved to compassion, and so much the more that he 4 straight cald to me for succour, desiring me at lest to kill him, to deliver him from those tormenters. But before my-self could resolve, much lesse any other tell what I would resolve, there came in cholericke hast towards me about sevẽ or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due revenge, but with so over-mastring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therfore (answering them, that how I would have defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate first with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) joyntly. But such was the end of it, that I kept the field with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ranne away; saving onely one; who was so flesht in malice, that neither during, nor after the fight, she gave any truce to her crueltie, but still used the little instrument of her great spight, to the well-witnest paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eies, which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort of seeing who prevailed over him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her to some conference, (for some time it was before she would harken, more before she would speake; & most, before she would in her speech leave off that remembrance of her bodkin) but at length whẽ I puld off my head-peece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increased in his owne exercise) thẽ with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gave her grieve unto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to forbear any time the executing of my just revẽge upon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceaving women; But because I see you are young, and like enough to have the power (if you would have the mind) to do much more mischief, then he,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

I am content upon this bad subject to reade a lecture to your vertue.

- 5 This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I must confesse is noble (but what is that to him, if it shalbe a staine to his deade auncestors to have left such an off[s]pring?) in shape as you see not uncomely (indeed the fit maske of his disguised falshood) in conversation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie simplicitie, his words of hartie companableness; and such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed, as to thinke mischievously: delighted in al such things, which by imparting their delight to others, makes the user therof welcome; as, Musicke, Daunsing, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede never wish a better cōpaniō. But under these qualities lies such a poysonous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say truely) he flies so into the favour of poore sillie women, that I would be too much ashamed to confesse, if I had not revenge in my hande, as well as shame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholly delighted in deceiving us, we could never be warned, but rather, one bird caught, served for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gave away to his new mistresse, whē he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakest threedes of his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Masters part of cunning, making us now jealous, now envious, now proud of what we had, desirous of more; now giving one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subject to her; now with an estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that minde, which indeede could never be had: never ceasing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked us in some such disadvantage, as we could not return dry-shod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he use his imperiousnes, that we had a delightfull feare, and an awe which made us loath to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when sometimes with late repentance I thinke of it)

I must confesse, even in the greatest tempest of my judgemēt was I never driven to think him excellent, and yet so could set my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though therein had laien my felicitie: like them I have seene play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde have the ball, and yet every one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had ether our hartes broken with sorrow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for ever lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie using of our faults. For never was there man that could with more scornefull eyes beholde her, at whose feete he had lately laine, nor with a more unmanlike braverie use his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had song Sonets of her praises: being so naturally inconstant, as I marvell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene so long united. For so hath he dealt with us (unhappie fooles,) as we could never tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enjoy, or after he once enjoyed, to forsake. But making a glorie of his own shame, it delighted him to be challenged of unkindnesse: it was a triumph unto him to have his mercie called for: and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Lovers: yet so farre had we engaged our selves, (unfortunate soules) that we listed not complaine, since our complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accusation to our selves. But everie of us (each for her selfe,) laboured all meanes how to recover him, while he rather daily sent us companions of our deceit, then ever returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so unworthie a changeablenesse; leaving us nothing but remorse for what was past, and despaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common injurie made us all joyne in friendshippe, who till that time, had employed our endeavours one against the other. For; we thought nothing was a more condemning of us, then the justifying of his love to her by mariage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Revenge gave Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) devised how to get him among us alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easilie gave us opportunitie to doo.

6 And a man may see, even in this, how soone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authoritie among us, as if the Planets had done inough for us, that by us once he had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his unkindnesse unto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to justifie his cruell falshood, and all with such jestes, and disdainfull passages, that if the injurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it.

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall never forgette, how he woulde proove it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Love to an other, but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I ever loved my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Lovely: and where-soever I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly folowed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will love her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their love from fairenes to foulennesse, and from lovelines to his contrarie; like one not content to leave a friend, but will streight give over himself to his mortall enemy: where I (whom you call inconstant) am ever constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this jollie scoffing braverie he went over us all, saying, He left one, because she was over-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough; a fourth, because she was over-game-some; the fifth, because she was growen with griefe subject to sicknesse; the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be jelous of him; the seventh, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loved; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth, because she was not liberall: but to me, who am named *Dido*, (and indeede have mette with a false *Ænæas*) to me, I say, (ô the ungratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to object, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

7 But when he had thus plaide the carelesse Prince, we

(having those servants of ours in readines, whom you lately so manfully overcame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that trifling revenge, in which you found us busie; but meaning afterwardes to have mangled him so, as should have lost his credit for ever abusing more. But as you have made my fellowes flie away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong overshadowes in my judgement the greatnesse of any daunger. For was it not inough for him, to have deceived me, & through the deceit abused me, & after the abuse forsaken me, but that he must now, of al the company, & before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge? Many fairer? I trow evē in your judgemēt, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many fairer; & I know (whosoever saies the cōtrary) there are not many fairer. And of whom should I receive this reproch, but of him, who hath best cause to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how-soever my fellowes pardon his injuries, for my parte I will ever remember, & remember to revenge this scorne of al scornes. With that she to him afresh; & surely would have put out his eies (who lay muet for shame, if he did not sometimes crie for feare) if I had not lept from my horse, & mingling force with intreaty, staid her furie.

But, while I was perswading her to meekenes, comes a 8 number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they should kill that womā, that had thus betraied and disgraced him. But then I was faine to forsake the ensigne; under which I had before served, and to spend my uttermost force in the protecting of the Ladie; which so well prevailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of all sides. And so I leaving her in a place of securitie (as she thought) went on my journey towards *Anaxius*, for whom I was faine to stay two daies in the apointed place, he disdaining to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 19.

<sup>1</sup>*The monomachie betweene Anaxius and Pyrocles; <sup>2</sup>adjourned by Pyrocles to resuccour Dido. <sup>3</sup>The course of Didos daunger. <sup>4</sup>The miserableness of her father. <sup>5</sup>His carlish entertainment to Pyrocles; <sup>6</sup>and his treason against him. <sup>7</sup>Pyrocles hard bestead. <sup>8</sup>succoured by Musidorus: <sup>9</sup>both saved by the King of Iberia. <sup>10</sup>The execution of the traitors, and death of Dido.*

I Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont to say too much) like a man, whose courage was apt to clime over any daunger. And assoone as ever he came neere me, in fit distaunce for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran upon me; which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, having kept my selfe ready for him, because I had understood, that he observed but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite unto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit ech other upon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I must confesse) I never received the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonished, my minde forced them to quicken themselves, because I had learned of him, how little favour he is woont to show in any matter of advantage. And indeede<sup>h</sup> he was turned, and comming upon me with his sworde drawne, both our staves having bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to answeere him, that truely I know not who gave the first blowe. But whosoever gave the first, it was quickly seconded by the second. And indeed (excellentest Ladie) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought betweene us; he undoubtedly being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much loftinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, winning and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horse happened to come upon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand upward; so as it lighting upon his hart, the horse died. He driven to dismount, threatned, if I



did not the like, to doo as much for my horse, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such sort, that we were well <sup>2</sup> entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that unconstant *Pamphilus*, whom I had delivered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a dozen armed men after him; but before him he had *Dido* (that Ladie, who had most sharpely punished him) riding upon a palfrey, he following her with most unmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pittifull a sight unto me, that it mooved me to require *Anaxius* to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distressed Ladie. But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he cals his mind) bad me leave of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would be long betweene us (longing in my hart to deliver the poore *Dido*) giving him so great a blowe, as somewhat staid him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the cōpanie, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that use made me nimble unto it. But as I followed my horse, *Anaxius* followed me: but his prowde harte did so disdaine that exercise, that I had quickly over-run him, & overtaken my horse; being (I must cōfesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that ever shewed his shoulders to his enemie. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, O see how feare gives him wings) I turned to *Anaxius*, & aloud promised him to returne thether again, as soone as I had relieved the injured Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the base wordes angry contempt could endite; I said no more, but, *Anaxius*, assure thy self, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so using no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurres, I ranne in my knowledge after *Pamphilus*, but in al their conceits from *Anaxius*, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testified with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moved to turne backe againe.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

3 But the Ladies misery over-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horse sometimes, then of my selfe, so rightly to hit the way) I overgat thẽ a little before night, neere to an old il-favoured castle, the place where I perceived they meant to perfourme their unknighly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the first with a laũce, the justnesse of the cause so enhabled me against the rest (falsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only *Anaxius*, delivered her from those injurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left unpunished. As for *Pamphilus*, he having once seene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, even from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to give them thanks for their paines. But when I had delivered to the Ladie a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had layd so vehement apprehension of death upon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcilment) *Pamphilus* had set upon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such māner as I had seene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father; to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his castle windowe (for this castle, she said, was his) he might have the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approaching crueltie. I was glad I had done so good a deede for a Gentlewoman not unhandsome, whome before I had in like sorte helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, even out of countenance before she began her speach, much after this manner invited me to lodge that night with her father.

4 Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but abased by wordes, since the life I have, I holde it now the second time of

you: and therefore neede not offer service unto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your servaunt: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment unto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in truth this cuntry is very dangerous for murdering theeves, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I must confesse, that as the love I beare you makes me thus invite you, so the same love makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spokẽ by ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With that she tolde me, that though she spake of her father (whom she named *Chremes*) she would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions, and riches, so was he either by nature, or an evill received opinion, given to sparing, in so unmeasurable a sorte, that he did not onely barre him selfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie use thereof; scarcely allowing him selfe fitte sustenance of life, rather then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake onely he seemed to joye in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe upon her) had driven her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that cuntry, by which occasion she had stumbled upon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserved, yet she could not denie, but she was driven thereby to receive more then decent favours. She concluded, that there at lest I should be free from injuries, & should be assured to her-wards to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of 5  
foode and rest, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well stored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, having a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose unthrifte sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne up, where we were faine to crie a good while before we coulde have answeare, and to dispute a good while before answeare

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a joy to receave his daughter, whome hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his heade by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take us in; for my part by that time growne so wearie of such entertainment, that no regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this *Chremes*, a driveling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarcely would give me thankses for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulness might have an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giving me a false welcome, I might perceave in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not over-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (served onely by a company of rusticall villaines, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so sluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his povertie, for feare belike lest I should have proved a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not wish him worse, then to be himselfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; over-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates under his roofo: which she grieving at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindnesse to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make even his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demaunded my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Love had not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladd then her father, as I might well perceave by some ill-favoured cheerefulnessse, which then first began to wrinkle it selfe in his face.

But the causes of their joyes were farre different; for as the 6  
shepherd and the butcher both may looke upon one sheepe  
with pleasing conceipts, but the shepherd with minde to  
profite himselfe by preserving, the butcher with killing him:  
So she rejoyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me  
to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and  
lovingly rejoyced: but his joy grew, (as I to my danger after  
perceived) by the occasion of the Queene *Artaxias* setting my  
head to sale, for having slaine her brother *Tiridates*; which  
being the summe of an hundreth thousand crownes (to who-  
soever brought me alive into her hands) that old wretch, (who  
had over-lived all good nature) though he had lying idly by  
him much more then that, yet above all things loving money,  
for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well  
deserving of him, for to have that which he was determined  
never to use. And so knowing that the next morning I was  
resolved to go to the place where I had left *Anaxius*, he sent in  
all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it  
belonged to the King of *Iberia*, (yet knowing the Captaines  
humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how  
he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not, that to be  
halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in  
the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of the fittest  
places where they might surprise me in the morning, the old  
caitiffe was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs ac-  
companie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me,  
if Nature had made me apte to suspect; since a churles curtesie  
rathely comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered  
him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which  
purpose he came out with all his clownes, horst upon such  
cart-jades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with my  
selfe, if that were thrift, I wisht none of my friends or subjectes  
ever to thrive. As for his daughter (the gentle *Dido*) she would  
also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong  
the time of farewell, as long as he.

So we went on together: he so old in wickednes, that he 7  
could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life  
he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of  
a way which ledde us into a place, of each-side whereof men  
might easily keepe themselves undiscovered, I was encompassed

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

sodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horse and foote, who willed me to yeelde my selfe to the Queene *Artaxia*. But they coulde not have used worse eloquence to have perswaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will *Artaxia* bare me. And therefore making necessitie and justice my best sword and shield, I used the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little ease of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, and „ valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltlesnesse is not alwayes with ease oppressed. As for *Chremes*, he withdrew himselfe, yet so guilding his wicked conceits with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

8 But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent *Musidorus* came to my succour; who having followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with *Anaxius*, came to the niggards Castell, where he found all burnd and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that covetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leave monuments of their malice therein: which *Musidorus* not staying either to further, or impeach, came upon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant unto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cosen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath *Musidorus* by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not straunger for the number, then for the straunge blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserved death, might well delight me to speake off, but I should so holde you too long in every particular. But in trueth, there if ever, and ever, if ever any man, did *Musidorus* shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

9 Yet what the unmeasurable excesse of their number woulde have done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of *Iberia*, that same father of that worthy *Plangus*, whom it hath pleased you somtimes to mention: who, (not yeelding over to

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

old age his country delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this injurie offred unto us: and having great numbers of Courtiers waiting upon him, was straight known by the souldiers that assaulted us, to be their King, and so most of them with-drew themselves.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motive of this mischievous practise; misliking much such violēce should be offred in his countrie to men of our ranke: but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confesse wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne *Plangus* against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be stricken off, and the old bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chaunce slaine among his clownes, while she over-boldly for her weake sex sought to hold thẽ from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations upon.

### CHAP. 20.

<sup>1</sup>*The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court.* <sup>2</sup>*Andromanas omniregencie.* <sup>3</sup>*Her parti-love to them both.* <sup>4</sup>*Her faire and foule meanes to inveigle them.* <sup>5</sup>*Palladius love to Zelmane.* <sup>6</sup>*Zelmanes love to Pyrocles, and practise with her Lover to release her beloved.*

**T**His justice thus done, and we delivered, the King indeede in royall sorte invited us to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining us so, as truely I must ever acknowledge a beholdingnesse unto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some dayes being there (curing our selves of such wounds as we had

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

received, while I, causing diligent search to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boasting in everie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receive the favour of acquaintāce with this Queene *Andromana*, whom the Princesse *Pamela* did in so lively colours describe the last day, as still me thinkes the figure therof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

2 And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rarenes of affection, and after with the very use of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a-while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to govern, without being governed by her: but finding an ease in not understanding, let loose his thoughtes wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckely fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was nether guided by wisdome, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slipte insensiblie into such an estate, that he lived at her undiscreete discretion: all his subjectes having by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely frō her, that it should have neded a stronger vertue thē his, to have unwound so deeply an entred vice. So that either not striving (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not strive) he scarcely knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

3 Now we being brought knowen unto her (the time that we spent in curing some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were sooner then our selves expected) she continuallie almost haunted us, till (and it was not long a doing) we discovered a most violent bent of affection: and that so strangely, that we might well see, an evill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely folow the sway of  
“the desires already within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected us both: and so did her greatnes disdain shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (having many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seemed, for a laste delight,



that she delighted in infamy: which often she had used to her husbands shame, filling all mens eares (but his) with reproch; while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) lest of al mē knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting foorth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be misliked, but as much advāced to the eye, as abased to the judgemēt by arte) thereby to bring us (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-diligēt ministers, who oftē cloyed our eares with her praises, & would needs teach us a way of felicitie by seeking her favor. But when she found, that we were as deaf to thē, as dumb to her; then she listed no lōger stay in the suburbs of her foolish desires, but directly entred upō thē; making her self an impudent suter, authorizing her selfe very much with making us see that all favor & power in that realm, so depēded upon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or lose our liberty, at her discretio; which yet she so tēpred, as that we might rather suspect, thē she threatē. But whē our woūds grew so, as that they gave us leave to travell, & that she found we were purposed to use all meanes we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatnes) craved that, which in all good maners was ether of us to be desired, or not granted. Truely (most faire & every way excellēt Lady) you would have wondred to have seene, how before us she would confes the contentio in her own mind, between that lovely (indeed most lovely) broūnes of *Musidorus* his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in the deceivable stile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her wordes would beginne halfe of the sentence to *Musidorus*, & end the other half to *Pyrocles*: not ashamed (seeing the friendship betweene us) to desire either of us to be a mediator to the other; as if we should have played a request at Tennis betweene us: and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendship might meet; and be the knotte which might tie our hartes together. Which proceeding of hers I doo the more largely set before you (most deare Lady) that by the foyle therof, you may see the noblenes of my desire to you, & the warrantablenes of your favour to me.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

4 At that *Philoclea* smiled, with a little nod. But (saide *Pyrocles*) when she perceived no hope by suite to prevaile, then (perswaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to doo any thing) she founde meanes to have us accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to overthrowe him in his owne estate. Which, because of the straunge successes we had in the kingdomes of *Phrigia, Pontus & Galatia*) seemed not unlikely to him, who (but skimming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leave the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who foorthwith caused us to be put in prison, having (while we slept) deprived us of our armour: a prison, indeede injurious, because a prison, but els well testifying affection, because in all respectes as commodious, as a prison might be: and indeede so placed, as she might at all houres, (not seene by many, though she cared not much how many had seene her) come unto us. Then fell she to sause her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so unworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by Love, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claimes an answering. And how much that love might moove us, so much, and more that faultines of her mind removed us; her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes. But that which did (as it were) tie us in captivitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly injurious to him, that saved our lives: and to accuse a Ladie that loved us, of her love unto us, we esteemed almost as dishonorable: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be injurious to your eares, which should expresse the manner of her suite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnes; and wanton languishing borrowed of her eies the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time far from loving her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes saving of our lives; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende us worde, that upon our lives, we should doo whatsoever she commaunded us: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preservation of his estate. But when that made us rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel she to servile entreating us, as though force could have bene the

schoole of Love, or that an honest courage would not rather strive against, then yeelde to injurie. All which yet could not make us accuse her, though it made us almost pine awaie for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was 5 past, and doubt of what was to follow, Love (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes to poison me with roses, sometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy unto us: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the cōclusion was such, as I must ever while I live, think it worse then a wracke, so to have bene preserved. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought up in the hope of themselves, & already acceptation of the inconstant people, as successour of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as unworthie, in respect of the wrong was therby done against the most worthy *Plangus*: whose great desertes now either forgotten, or ungratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the favourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giving *Plangus* (who some yeares before was their only chāpion) the poore cōfort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regiō, by name *Palladius*, did with vehement affection love a young Ladie, brought up in his fathers court, called *Zelmane*, daughter to that mischievously unhappie Prince *Plexirtus* (of whom already I have, and sometimes must make, but never honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene *Andromana*, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Love (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so fel it out that this *Zelmane*, (though truely reason there was inough to love *Palladius*) yet could not ever perswade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to *Palladius*, as they feele, that feele an unloved love. Yet loving indeede, and therefore constant, he used still the intercession of diligēce and faith, ever hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: untill the time of our being come, and captived there, brought foorth this ende,

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whiche truely deserves of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

- 6 Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie *Zelmane* (like some unwisely liberall, that more delight to give presentes, then pay debtes) she chose (alas for the pittie) rather to bestowe her love (so much undeserved, as not desired) upon me, then to recōpence him, whose love (besides many other things) might seeme (even in the court of Honour) justly to claime it of her. But so it was (alas that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preserve, and benefite doth follow unfained affection) she felt with me, what I felte of my captivitie, and streight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by using the helpe therein of *Palladius*: who (true Lover) considering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed she concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his uttermost credite to relieve us: which though as great, as a beloved son with a mother, faulty otherwise, but not hard-harted toward him, yet it could not prevaile to procure us libertie. Wherefore he sought to have that by practise, which he could not by praier. And so being allowed often to visit us (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her passion was either in the fit, or intermission) he used the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliver us.

## CHAP. 21.

- <sup>1</sup> *The cause of the Iberian yearely justes.* <sup>2</sup> *Queene Helens prayses.*  
<sup>3</sup> *The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reverse.* <sup>4</sup> *The inventions and actions of seven tilters.* <sup>5</sup> *Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it.* <sup>6</sup> *Andromanas pursuite of them* <sup>7</sup> *to the death of her sonne* <sup>8</sup> *and her selfe.*

- 1 **T**He time of the maryinge that Queene was every year, by the extreame love of her husband, & the serviceable love of the Courtiers, made notable by some publike honours, which

indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then justs, both with sword and launce, mainteined for a seven-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to strive, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that divers famous Knights came thither frō the court of *Helen*, Queene of *Corinth*; a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to joyne with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparision (for as for the two sisters of *Arcadia*, they are farre beyond all conceipt of comparision) so hath her government bene such, as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens judgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to governe a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so used to hard governours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were drawne. Yet could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of cōtempt: & which was notable, even in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to *Corinth* were thought still would conclude there) yet so hādled she the matter, that the threatens ever smarted in the threatners; she using so straūge, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Love, chast. For by continuall martiall exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloody art. Her sportes were such as caried riches of Knowledge upō the streame of Delight: & such the behaviour both of her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not upon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to have bene the mariage place of Love and Vertue, & that her selfe was a *Diana* apparelled in the garments of *Venus*. And this which Fame onely delivered unto me, (for yet I have never seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

selfe wise, and of others beloved) that neither follie is the cause of vehement Love, nor reproch the effect. For never (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more unremoveable determinatiō gave her selfe to the coicell of Love, after she had once set before her mind the worthines of your cousin *Amphialus*; & yet is nether her wisdome doubted of, nor honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisdome, then to discerne, what is worthy the loving? what more agreable to goodnes, then to love it so discerned? and what to greatnesse of hart, then to be constant in it once loved? But at that time, that Love of hers was not so publikely knowne, as the death of *Philoxenus*, and her search of *Amphialus* hath made it: but then seemed to have such leasure to sende thither diverse choyse Knights of her court, because they might bring her, at lest the knowledge, perchaunce the honour, of that Triumph.

3 Wherein so they behaved themselves as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from so farre a place to disgrace her servaunts, *Palladius* (who himselfe had never used armes) persuaded the Queene *Andromana* to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer us two to have our horse and armour, that he with us might undertake the recoverie of their lost honour: which she graunted; taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, and never to abandon him. Which she did not more for saving him, then keeping us: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to have eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the young Prince, who (we saw) loved us. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the field: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the strangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

4 The first that ran was a brave Knight, whose devise was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his *Impresa* was

Against him came forth an *Iberian* whose manner of entring was, with bagpipes in steed of trumpets; a shepheards boy before him for a Page, and by him a dosen apparelled like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in

stuffe, who caried his launces, which though strong to give a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretily represēted shephooks. His own furniture was drest over with wooll, so enriched with Jewels artificially placed, that one would have thought it a mariage betweene the lowest and the highest. His *Impresa* was a sheepe marked with pitch, with this word *Spotted to be knowne*. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they say) that was the *Star*, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending upō *PHILISIDES* went amōg thē, & sāg an eclogue; one of thē answering another, while the other shepheards pulling out recorders (which possesse the place of pipes) accorded their musick to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise: I onely remember sixe verses, while having questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepheards sodaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

**M**E thought some staves be mist: if so, not much amisse:  
 For where he most would hit, he ever yet did misse.  
 One said he brake acrossse; full well it so might be:  
 For never was there man more crossely crost then he.  
 But most cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest:  
 Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I have digrest, because his maner liked me wel: But when he began to run against *Lelius*, it had neere growne (though great love had ever bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For *Philisides* breaking his staves with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne ever over his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his staffe came swimming close over the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of *Mars*. But *Philisides* was much moved with it, while he thought *Lelius* would shew a contempt of his youth: till *Lelius* (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose injuries he could never otherwise returne, then honours.

But so by *Lelius* willing-missing was the odds of the *Iberian* side, and continued so in the next by the excellent rüning of a Knight, though fostred so by the *Muses*, as many times the verie rustick people left both their delights and profites to harken to his songs; yet could he so well perfourme all armed sports, as if he had never had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildnes, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaves, which though they fell not, still threatned falling. His *Impresa* was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, *Data fata sequutus*. But after him the *Corinthian* Knights absolutely prevailed, especially a great noble man of *Corinth*; whose devise was to come without any devise, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a live bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure lively representing the *Phœnix*: the fire tooke so artificially; as it consumed the birde, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frozen Knight, frozen in despaire; but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so lively answering therto, as yet did I never see any thing that pleased me better.

- 5 But the delight of those pleasing sights have carried me too farre in an unnecessary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the *Corinthians* that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; *Palladius* neither suffering us, nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the afternoone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall *Palladius* (especially led by *Musidorus*, and somewhat aided by me) himselfe truely behaving himselfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of the *Iberian* side: And the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept



by our party, He (that saw the time fitte for that deliverie he intended) called unto us to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-wil, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt us (he commanding passage) we went after him upon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obay *Zelmane*.

But his mother (as I learned since) understanding by the 6 gard her sonnes convaying us away (forgetting her greatnes, & resining modesty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for she her-selfe would follow us. But what she did (being rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently she commanded, as a good while no body knew what she cōmanded; so as we had gotten so far the start, as to be alredy past the confines of her kingdome before she over-tooke us: and overtake us she did in the kingdome of *Bythinia*, not regarding shame, or daunger of having entred into anothers dominions: but (having with her about a three score hors-men) streight commaunded to take us alive, and not to regard her sonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, first by speach, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a just defence, able to resist any unjust assaulters. And so *Musidorus* incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and *Palladius*, so good way, that we had little to doo to overcome weake wrong. - 74

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when 7 *Palladius* (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursued our assaylers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a speciall minion of *Andromanas*, and hated us for having dispossessed him of her hart) taking him to be one of us, with a traiterous blow slew his yōūg Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had delivered, judge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called justice in such a case: once, so it wrought in us, that many of his subjects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world. 30

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

8 All this while disdaine, strengthened by the furie of a furious love, made *Andromana* stay to the last of the combat: & whē she saw us light down, to see what help we might do to the helplesse *Palladius*, she came runing madly unto us, then no lesse threatning, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she perceived it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that alredy his life had loste the use of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglinesse upon his faulte, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especiallie, finding in us rather detestation then pittie (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to depart, which stil she laboured to stay. But deprived of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else could have stayed it) strake her selfe a mortall wound. But then her love, though not her person, awaked pittie in us, and I went to her, while *Musidorus* labored about *Palladius*. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could but receave some few of her dying words; which were cursings of her ill set affection, and wishing unto me many crosses & mischances in my love, whēsoever I should love, wherin I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from above granted. But the noise of this fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country people to some noble-mē thereabouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered us, let us go on our journey, we having recommended those royal bodies unto thē to be conveyed to the King of *Iberia*. With that *Philoclea*, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remembrance of *Palladius*, but much more of that which therupon grew, she would needs drinke a kisse from those eyes; and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she blushed, & yet kissed him againe to hide her blushing. Which had almost brought *Pyrocles* into another discourse, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie: for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know how to disobey.

## CHAP. 22.

- <sup>1</sup> *A new complaint of Pamphilus new change,* <sup>2</sup> *to a gracelesse curtisan.* <sup>3</sup> *Zelmane loves, and as a Page serves Pyrocles.*  
<sup>4</sup> *The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers.*  
<sup>5</sup> *The unbrotherly brave combat of Tydeus and Telenor.*  
<sup>6</sup> *Plexirtus his viperine unkindnes to the kindest Leonatus.*  
<sup>7</sup> *His conquest by the two brothers,* <sup>8</sup> *and his dogtrick to destroy them by themselves.* <sup>9</sup> *The regreete of the dying brothers.*

SO (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sitting upon the drie sandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much sorow, & every way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide under so much agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, and yet she not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might understand her at times, say, Thou doost kill me with thy unkind falshood: and, It grieues me not to die, but it grieues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine so much vexe me, as thy error. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it tormēts me to be slain by thee. Thou art untrue *Pamphilus*, thou art untrue, and woe is me therefore. How oft didst thou sweare unto me, that the Sun should loose his light, and the rocks runne up and down like little kiddes, before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for *Pamphilus* is false. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darckned; the rockes stand still, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graspe water, and binde the winde. I might well have knowē thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my love helped thy wordes to deceive me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise, when thou didst forsake thy unfortunate *Leucippe*. But it is no matter, *Baccha* (thy new mistres) will revenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*, let *Pamphilus* live happie, though I die.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

2 And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that *Pamphilus*) stept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the same *Leucippe*, to whom the unconstante *Pāphilus* had betrothed himselfe, which had moved the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endear affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his marriage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whom she complayned; one, that in divers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie unchaste woman of all *Asia*; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them (whom she made unhappie with her favour) to draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by brave souldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, because extreameley faultie: and yet having no good thing to redeeme both these, and other unlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and unwaied speeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, and withall, left his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one looke (in a cleere judgement) would have bene more acceptable, then all her kindenesses so prodigallie bestowed. For my selfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to *Dido*, joyned to this, stirred me to seeke some revenge upon him, but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leaving him to be punished by his owne election) we conveyed *Leucippe* to a house thereby, dedicated to *Vestall* Nunnes, where she resolved to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised shoulde be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-dooer.

3 But the next morning, we (having striven with the Sunnes earlines) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there overtoke us a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to us, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmane*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom unconsulting affection (unfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leave her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of *Andromanas* tumultuous pursuing us, had

apparrelled her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leaving nothing, but the short curles, to cover that noble head, but that she ware upon it a faire head-peece, a shielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought upon with broken knöts, her horse, faire & lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did give such a grace to what she did, that it did make handsome the unhansomes, and make the eye force the minde to beleewe, that there was a praise in that unskilfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borrowed the help of her countenance to make themselves understood) she desired me to accept her in my service; telling me, she was a noble-mans sonne of *Iberia*, her name *Daiphantus*, who having seene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of *Andromanas* following me, which by her I understood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be) admitted this *Daiphantus* about me: who well shewed, there is no service like his, that serves because he loves. For, though borne of Princes blood, brought up with tenderest education, unapt to service (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate;) yet Love enjoyed such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondslave could ever be by feare more readie at all commaundementes, then that yong Princessesse was. How often (alas) did her eyes say unto me, that they loved? and yet, I (not looking for such a matter) had not my conceipt open, to understand them. How oftẽ would she come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I marvailing, to see her receive my cõmandements with sighes, and yet do them with cheerefulness: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experiẽce: but since returning to my remẽbrance, they have come more neere unto my knowledge: & pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I use many words: for her affection to me deserves of me an affectionate speach.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

- 4 In such sort did she serve me in that kingdom of *Bythinia*, for two moneths space.] In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the King of *Bythinia* and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (dividing our selves to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our selves) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene thēselves, as love towards us, for having made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of *Galatia*, towarde *Thrace*, to ease the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly past, should have litle rest in their thoughts, till they saw us.
- 5 But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whē by the noise of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasaunt valey, which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities somewhere doth give a pleasant spectacle of rüning horses; so of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by wooddy hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruellest fights betweene two Knights, that ever hath adorned the martial storie. So as I must cōfesse, a while we stood wondring, another while delighted with the rare bravery therof; till seing such streames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them to part them. But we were prevented by a dosen armed Knights, or rather villains, who using this time of their extreame feeblenesse, all together set upon them. But common daunger brake of particular discorde, so that (though with a dying weakenes) with a lively courage they resisted, and by our help drave away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take alive the principall. But going to disarme those two excellent Knights, we found with no lesse wonder to us, then astonishment to themselves, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, *Tydeus* and *Telenor*; whose adventure (as afterwarde we made that ungratious wretch confesse) had thus fallen out.
- 6 After the noble Prince *Leonatus* had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdome of *Galatia*, he (forgetting all former injuries) had received that naughtie *Plexirtus* into a streight

degree of favour, his goodnesse being as apt to be deceived, as the others crafte was to deceive. Till by plaine prooffe finding, that the ungratefull man went about to poyson him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse to be overcome, not by justice it selfe: but calling him to him, used wordes to this purpose. *Plexirtus* (said he) this wickednesse is founde by thee. No good deedes of mine have bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring forth nothing, but as daungerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remembring what fathers sonne thou arte. But since it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce puls thee from thine owne judgement, I will see, whether the satisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy spirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie of *Trebisonde*; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained unto this crowne, now unjustly possessed, and as unjustly abused by those, who have neither title to holde it, nor vertue to use it. To the conquest of that for thy selfe I will lende thee force, and give thee my right. Go therefore, and with lesse unnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be possible, learne vertue.

*Plexirtus*, mingling forsworne excuses with false-meant 7 promises, gladly embraced the offer: and hastilie sending backe for those two Brothers (who at that time were with us succouring the gracious Queen *Erona*) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obteyned the conquest of that goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gave them such an authoritie, that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, most men honouring them, because they onely deserved honour; and many, thinking therein to please *Plexirtus*, considering how much he was bound unto them: while they likewise (with a certaine sincere boldnesse of selfe-warranting friendship) accepted all openly and plainely, thinking nothing should ever by *Plexirtus* be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could cōstrue no 8 other end of mē's doings, but self seking) sodēly feared what they could doo; and as sodainely suspected, what they would doo, and as sodainely hated them, as having both might, and minde to doo. But dreading their power, standing so strongly in their owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open way against them: and as harde it was to take a secrete, they

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

being so continually followed by the best, & every way habblest of that region: and therefore used this diuelish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most wicked man) to turne their owne friēdship toward him to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the new King of *Pontus*, never since he succoured *Leonatus* and us, to his overthrow) gave them to understand that of late there had passed secrete defiance betweene them, to meete privately at a place apointed. Which though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himself weake by some counterfait infirmitie, the day drawing neere, he requested each of them to go in his stead; making either of thē sweare, to keep the matter secret, ever ech frō other, delivering the selfe same particularities to both, but that he told *Tydeus*, the King would meet him in a blew armour; & *Telenor*, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subiltie (as if it had bene so apointed) caused *Tydeus* to take a black armour, & *Telenor* a blew; appointing them waies how to go, so as he knew they should not meet, til they came to the place appointed, where each had promised to keep silence, lest the King should discover it was not *Plexirtus*: and there in await had he laied these murtherers, that who overlived the other, should by them be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselves by themselves were weakened.

- 9 This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose love was no lesse, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their mismeeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo unto them) striving who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breastes for not sooner suffering: detesting their unfortunately-spent time in having served so ungrateful a Tyraunt: and accusing their folly in having beleevd, he could faithfully love, who did not love faithfulness: wishing us to take heed, how we placed our good wil upon any other ground, then prooffe of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor



height of benefits could binde a savage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beseeching us to leave the cure of him that besought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselves, and us, no possibilitie, they desired to be joined; and so embracing and craving that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselves, they gave us a most sorrowfull spectacle of their death; leaving fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull hartes, we caused those bodies to be conveyed to the nexte towne of *Bythinia*, where we learning thus much (as I have tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to cōclude his history, with his owne well-deserved death.

## CHAP. 23.

<sup>1</sup> *Zelmanes grieffe for Plexirtus fault.* <sup>2</sup> *Otaves, and his Gyants warre on Pontus.* <sup>3</sup> *Plexirtus endangered, needes helpe of the dead brothers.* <sup>4</sup> *Zelmane thought-sicke, unmasks her selfe.* <sup>5</sup> *Her dying teares* <sup>6</sup> *and last requestes.* <sup>7</sup> *Musidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to save Plexirtus.* <sup>8</sup> *The sourse and course of his deaths-dooome,* <sup>9</sup> *stayed by Pyrocles.* <sup>10</sup> *The combat of Pontus well ended.* <sup>11</sup> *The Asian Princes meeting, to honour the two Greekes.*

**B**UT then (I must tell you) I found such wofull countenances in *Daiphantus*, that I could not but much marvaile (finding them continew beyond the first assault of pittie) how the cause of strangers (for further I did not conceive) could so deeply pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame & sorrow she tooke of her fathers faultinesse, partly with the feare, that the hate I cōceived against him, would utterly disgrace her in my opinion, whensoever I should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour decayed; and dayly, and hastily grew into the very extreme working of sorrowfulnesse: which oft I sought to learne, & helpe. But she, as fearefull as loving, still concealed it; and so decaying

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

still more and more, in the excellencie of her fairenesse, but that whatsoever weakenesse took away, pitie seemed to adde : yet still she forced her selfe to waite on me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other schoole, but Love. }

2 While we returning againe to embarke our selves for *Greece*, understood that the mighty *Otaves* (brother to *Barzanes* slaine by *Musidorus*, in the battaile of the six Princes) had entred upō the kingdome of *Pontus*, partly upon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, because he would revenge upon him (whom he knew we loved) the losse of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cause) that wheresoever we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieve him; in spite whereof he doubted not to prevaile, not onely upon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially because he had in his cōpany two mighty *Giants*, sonnes to a couple whom we slue in the same realme: they having bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his service, hating (more then he) both us, and that King of *Pontus*. We therefore withall speede went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell out, which whensoever I remember without sorrow, I must forget withall, all humanitie.

3 Poore *Daiphantus* fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquere the delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to waite on me: till one day going towarde *Pontus*, we met one, who in great hast went seeking for *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, whose death as yet was not knowne unto the messenger; who (being their servaunt and knowing how deerely they loved *Plexirtus*) brought them word, how since their departing, *Plexirtus* was in pre[se]nt daunger of a cruel death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were not reskewed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he should now to his losse finde what an unprofitable treason it had bene unto him, to dismember himselfe of two such friendes) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to make him know his masters destruction, by the falshood of *Plexirtus*.

4 But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the last degree of weakenesse) so overwhelmed the little remnant of the spirits left in *Daiphantus*, that she fell sodainely into deadly soundings; never comming to her selfe, but that withall

she returned to make most pittifull lamentations; most straunge unto us, because we were farre from gheſſing the ground thereof. But finding her sickneſſe ſuch, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al haſt poſſible to convey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, & ſhe might find in herſelfe, that the harbinger of over-haſtie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which ſhe undoubtedly feeling, with a weake chearefulneſſe, ſhewed cōfort therin; and then deſiring us both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be preſent; with pale, and yet (even in palenes) lovely lippes, Now or never, and never indeed, but now it is time for me (ſaid ſhe) to ſpeake: and I thanke death which gave me leave to diſcover that, the ſuppreſſing whereof perchance hath bene the ſharpeſt ſpur, that hath haſted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and eſpecially you my Lord and maſter, *Pyrocles*, that your page *Daiphantus* is the unfortunat *Zelmane*, who for your ſake cauſed my (as unfortunate) lover, and coſen, *Palladius*, to leave his fathers court, and cōſequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to looſe their lives. For your ſake my ſelfe have become, of a Princeſſe a Page: and for your ſake have put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you judge not more mercifully) modeltie. We were amazed at her ſpeech, and thẽ had (as it were) new eyes givẽ us to perceve that which before had bene a preſent ſtrāger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of *Zelmane*, whõ before we had knownen in the court of *Iberia*. And ſorrow and pittie laying her paine upon me, I comforted her the beſt I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recovery.

But ſhe that had inward ambassadors from the tyrāt that ſhould ſhortly oppreſſe her. No, my deere maſter (ſaid ſhe) I neither hope nor deſire to live. I know you would never have loved me (& with that ſhe wept) nor, alas, had it bene reaſon you ſhould, conſidering manie wayes my unworthines. It ſufficeth me that the ſtrange courſe I have takẽ, ſhall to your remembrance, witneſſe my love: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would diſcover my paine, will make you (I hope) thinke I was not altogether unmodest. Thinke of me ſo, deare Maſter, and that thought ſhal be my life: and with that, languiſhingly looking upon me; And I pray you (ſaid ſhe)

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

even by these dying eies of mine (which are onely sorrie to dye, because they shall lose your sight) and by these pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my sex, now in their short curles, the testimonie of my servitude) and by the service I have done you (which God knowes hath beene full of love) thinke of me after my death with kindnes, though ye cannot with love. And whensoever ye shall make any other Ladie happie with your placed affectiō, if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princesse of my life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her manners, with the lively consideration of her love, so pearced me, that I, though I had diverse griefes before, yet me thought I never felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth all resolution. For I coulde not chuse, but yeeld to the weakenes of abundant weeping; in trueth with such grieve, that I could willingly at that time have chaunged lives with her.

- 6 But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests unto you. I besought her to doo, vowing the performance, though my life were the price therof. She shewed great joy: The first (said she) is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you have justly conceived against him, and for this once succour, him out of the daunger wherein he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you, whensoever you remember him to be the faultie *Plexirtus*, remember withall that he is *Zelmanes* father. The second is, that when you come into *Greece*, you will take unto your selfe this name (though unlucky) of *Daiphantus*, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shal I be sure, you shall have cause to remember me: and let it please your noble cousin to be called *Palladius*, that I doo that right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet live upon the earth in so excellent a person: and so betwene you, I trust sometimes your unluckyie page shall be (perhaps with a sigh) mencioned. Lastly, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your own countrie) you cause my bones to be conveied thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for

such a suter; which yet she so earnestly craved, that I was faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing me, & often desiring me not to condemne her of lightnesse, in mine armes she delivered her pure soule to the purest place: leaving me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and sorow could make an honest harte. For I must confesse for true, that if my starres had not wholly reserved me for you, there els perhaps I might have loved, & (which had bene most strange) begun my love after death: whereof let it be the lesse marvaile, because somewhat shee did resemble you: though as farre short of your perfectiō, as her selfe dying, was of her flourishing: yet somthing there was, which (when I saw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my remembrance, and made my harte as apte to receive the wounde, as the power of your beauty with unresistable force to pearce.]

But we in wofull (& yet privat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was presentlie to be succoured, or by death to passe the neede of succour. Therfore we determined to divide our selves; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and *Musidorus* toward the King of *Pontus*, who stood in no lesse need then immediate succour, and even readie to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him, who after some enquirie found us, giving us to understand, that he trusting upon us two, had apointed the combat betweene him & us, against *Otaves*, and the two *Gyants*. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour *Plexirtus*, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged so far, but (by the straunge working of unjust fortune) I was to leave the standing by *Musidorus*, whom better then my selfe I loved, to go save him whom for just causes I hated. But my promise given, & given to *Zelmane*, & to *Zelmane* dying, prevailed more with me, then my friendship to *Musidorus*: though certainly I may affirme, nothing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because *Musidorus* himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heavy mindes (more careful each of others successe, thẽ of our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I understood *Plexirtus* was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely governing a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whereof he acknowledged no other soveraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to *Plexirtus*, grew for a kinsman of his, whō he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he raigned in *Galatia*, he found him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother *Leonatus*. This old Knight, still thirsting for revenge, used (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had married *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of *Armenia*; where (as he was comming to winne favour) he obtained great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he falsly got his fathers kingdom; and then neglected his former love: till throwen out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in *Trebisonde*, understanding that *Artaxia* by her brothers death was become Queen of *Armenia*, he was hotter then ever, in that pursuit, which being understood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as might be written from *Artaxia*, entreating his present (but very privie) repaire thether, giving him faithfull promise of presente marriage: a thing farre from her thought, having faithfully, and publicly protested, that she would never marrie any, but some such Prince who would give sure prooffe, that by his meanes we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to judge hopes) bitte hastely at the baite, and in private maner poasted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruell inough, if any thing may be both cruell and just. For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliver him to be devoured by a monstrous beast, of most ugly shape, armed like a *Rhinoceros*, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre: whom he having kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastly monster with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any so well loved him, as to venture their lives against this beast, for him, if they overcame, he should be saved: not caring how many they were (such confidence he had in the monsters strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of

*Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principall instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if *Zelmane* had knowen what daunger I should 9 have passed, she would rather have let her father perishe, then me to have bidden that adventure. But my word was past, and truely, the hardnes of the enterprise, was not so much a bitte, as a spurre unto me; knowing well, that the jorney of “ high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that *Plexirtus* should be delivered if I were victorious, I undertooke the combatte: and (to make shorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakenes blessed from above, that without dangerous wounds I slewe that monster, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order given, to have the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of *Asia*. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loved me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imployed to save a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith given) he delivered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of *Pontus*, whether I would needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous *Leonatus* understanding two so good friends of 10 his were to be in that danger, would perforce be one him selfe: where he did valiantly, and so did the King of *Pontus*. But the truthe is, that both they being sore hurt, the incomparable *Musidorus* finished the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of *Otaves* prisoner. To whom as he gave his life, so he gotte a noble friend: for so he gave his worde to be, and he is well knowen to thinke him selfe greater in being subject to that, then in the greatnes of his principalitie.

But thither (understanding of our being there) flocked great 11 multitudes of many great persons, and even of Princes; especially those, whom we had made beholding unto us: as, the Kings of *Phrygia*, *Bythinia*, with those two hurte, of *Pontus* and *Galatia*, and *Otaves* the prisoner, by *Musidorus* set free; and thither came *Plexirtus* of *Trebisonde*, and *Antiphilus*, then King of *Lycia*; with as many mo great Princes, drawen ether

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them selves obliged unto us, for what we had done for the others. So as in those partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not seene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo us the highest honors, which such persons (who might commaund both purses and inventions) could perfourme. All from all sides bringing unto us right royall presents (which we to avoide both unkindnes, and importunitie, liberally received,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from us, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of us: with many other excessive honors, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe unto you.

### CHAP. 24.

<sup>1</sup> *The causes and provisions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia.*

<sup>2</sup> *Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by one,* <sup>3</sup> *at-tempted by another of his ministers.* <sup>4</sup> *Sedition and slaughter in the shippe about it.* <sup>5</sup> *Their shipwrack by fire.* <sup>6</sup> *Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea.* <sup>7</sup> *The amarus concluding the olde, and beginning a newe storie, both broken of by Miso.*

**B**Ut wee quickly aweary thereof, hasted to Greece-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I understoode that *Anaxius* with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to *Peloponnesus* where from Court to Court he made enquiry of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deedes, as might hap to auſthorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renoumed over the worlde, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renoumed indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the having in it *Argalus* and *Amphialus* (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you



and your sister, which makes all indifferent judges, that speake thereof, account this cuntry as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed moving us to come by this land, we embarked our selves in the next porte, whether all those Princes (saving *Antiphilus*, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from *Erona*) conveied us. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by *Plexirtus*, who made all thinges so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repētance in his eies, friendship in his gesture, & vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete *Zelmane* to pardon him, now not onely forgave, but began to favour; perswading our selves with a youthfull credulitie, that perchance things were not so evil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous *Leonatus*, who with the king of *Pōtus*, would have come with us, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdomes) would not suffer it. Then would they have sent whole fleets to guard us: but we, that desired to passe secretly into *Greece*, made them leave that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing unto us. But so cōmitting our selves to the uncertaine discretiō of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to *Greece*, to take the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*, as well for our owne promise to *Zelmane*, as because we desired to come unknowne into *Greece*) left the *Asian* shore full of Princely persons, who even upon their knees, recommended our safeties to the devotion of their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his unfaithfulnes) as *Plexirtus*.

So having sailed almost two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke upon the land, a grave man (whom we had seene of great trust with *Plexirtus*, and was sent as our principall guide) came unto us, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentaunce, began to tell us, that he had taken such a love unto us (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a servaunt, and a servaunt of such trust about *Plexirtus*, as that he had committed unto him

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

even those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reveale at this time a most pernicious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde us, that *Plexirtus* (in hope thereby to have *Artaxia*, endowed with the great Kingdome of *Armenia*, to his wife) had given him order, when we were neere *Greece*, to finde some opportunitie to murder us, bidding him to take us a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now sirs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then have my remembrance (while I lived) poysoned with such a mischief: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippe, *Plexirtus* hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather upon old grudge, then his hope of *Artaxia*. And my selfe, (before the consideration of your excellencies had drawne love and pittie into minde) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischief. Therefore, I wishe you to stand upon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see (if it come to the pushe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deserved, and from that time would no more disarme our selves, nor the one sleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: so that it delaied the going forward of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then providence, which made us so behave our selves.

- 3 But when we came within halfe a daies sayling of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done. Then (and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Councillour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) dissuading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if *Plexirtus* bad him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take us, alive or dead; encouraging thẽ with the spoile of us, which he said, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich jewels. But the Councillour (according to his promise)

commanded them they should not cōmit such a villany, protesting that he would stād betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) thē we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gave him a sore blow upon the head, who honestly did the best he could to revenge himselfe.

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite 4 for mischief. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was environned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of us, made draw their swords of our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the uncertainty in such a tumult how to know friēds from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we never perfourmed lesse in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our selves, and succouring them who came for it, drave us to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against us, we thought it lesse evill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hiest to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdred persons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driven to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who received a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & wish peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gave them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceive hope of living, but being lefte alive: and therefore every one was willing to make him selfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselves.

But while even in that little remnant (like the children of 5 *Cadmus*) we continued still to slay one an other, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

separate, or accidentally while all things were cast up and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but never heeded of us, (who onely thought to preserve, or revenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principall partes of the ship. Then necessitie made us see, that, a common enemy sets at one a civill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) streight went to resist that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and devoure from the sterne, to the wast of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driven to get up to the prow of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preserve life, as long as we could: while truely it was a straunge and ougly sight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light us to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell over boord, and the fire growing neerer us, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

- 6 So that we were constrained to bide it no longer, but disarming and stripping our selves, and laying our selves upon such things, as we thought might help our swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength to beare us) my cousin and I threw our selves into the Sea. But I had swomme a very little way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the travaile, and therefore seeing the maste (whose tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ship, I swamme unto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peece of canvas) had honge to the maste. I was glad, because I loved it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship, and of all this mischiefe; who having a long pike, belike had borne him selfe up with that, till he had set him selfe upon the mast. But when I perceived him, Villaine (said I) doost thou thinke to overlive so many honest men, whom thy falsehood hath brought to destruction? with that bestriding the mast, I gat by little and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are wont (if ever you saw that

sport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiving my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honestie, set him selfe to resist. But I had in short space gotten within him, and (giving him a sound blowe) sent him to feede fishes. But there my selfe remainde, untill by pyrates I was taken up, and among them againe taken prisoner, and brought into *Laconia*.

But what (said *Philoclea*) became of your cousin *Musidorus*? 7  
 Lost said *Pyrocles*. Ah my *Pyrocles*, said *Philoclea*, I am glad I have takē you. I perceive you lovers do not alwaies say truely: as though I know not your cousin *Dorus*, the sheepeheard? Life of my desires (saide *Pyrocles*) what is mine, even to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceive, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare *Pyrocles*, I lōg to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-warde is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet *Philoclea* (said *Pyrocles*) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leysure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale upon? Is my love quiet enough to be an historian? Deare Princesse, be gracious unto me. And then he faine would have remembred to have forgot himselfe. But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her desire (once for ever) might serve, that no spotte might disgrace that love which shortly she hoped shold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not have heard, til she threatned anger. And then the poore lover durst not, because he durst not. Nay I pray thee, deare *Pyrocles* (said she) let me have my story. Sweet Princesse (said he) give my thoughts a little respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the lesse harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene *Erona* was betraied into such dāger, and why *Plangus* sought me. For in deede, I should pitie greatly any mischance fallen to that Princesse. I will, said *Philoclea* smiling, so you give me your worde, your handes shall be quiet auditours. They shal, said he, because subject. Then began she to speake, but with so prettie and delightfull a majestie, when she set her countenance to tell the matter, that *Pyrocles* could not chuse but

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

rebell so far, as to kisse her. She would have puld her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fedde upon her wordes: but shee gate away. Howe will you have your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (said he) will I revenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by *Miso*: who taking her time, while *Basilus* backe was turned, came unto them: and told *Philoclea*, she deserved she knewe what, for leaving her mother, being evill at ease, to keepe companie with straungers. But *Philoclea* telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandemēt, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

### CHAP. 25.

<sup>1</sup> *Gynecias divining dreame.* <sup>2</sup> *Her passionate jelousie in actions,*  
<sup>3</sup> *speech, and* <sup>4</sup> *song described* <sup>5</sup> *Her troubling Philoclea and*  
*Zelmane,* <sup>6</sup> *The rebels troubling her.* <sup>7</sup> *Rebels resisted by*  
*Zelmane.* <sup>8</sup> *Zelmane assisted by Dorus.* <sup>9</sup> *Dorus and Zel-*  
*manes five memorable strokes.*

<sup>1</sup> SO went up *Miso* to *Gynecia*, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed unto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor treade safely going forward. In this case she thought *Zelmane*, being upon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and easie in apparance, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, *Zelmane* was vanished, and she found nothing but a dead bodie like unto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was redie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes, and said, *Gynecia*, leave all; for here is thy onely rest.

<sup>2</sup> With that she awaked, crying very loud, *Zelmane, Zelmane.* But remembring her selfe, and seeing *Basilus* by, (her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected) she turned

her call, and called for *Philoclea*. *Miso* forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at *Basilius*, as though she would speake though she died for it) tolde *Gynecia*, that her daughter had bene a whole houre together in secrete talke with *Zelmane*: And (sayes she) for my part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are brought up in such awe) though I tolde her of your pleasure sufficiently. *Gynecia*, as if she had heard her last doome pronounced agaynst her, with a side-looke and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (said she) what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? *Basilius* (that aymed nothing at the marke of her suspition) smilingly tooke her in his armes, sweete wife (said he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but they must be youthes of other mettall, then *Zelmane*, that can endaunger her. O but; cryed *Gynecia*, and therewith she stayed: for then indeede she did suffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of love, and rage of jealousye. Manie times was she about to satisfie the spite of her minde, and tell *Basilius*, how she knewe *Zelmane* to be farre otherwise then the outwarde appearance. But those many times were all put backe, by the manifold objections of her vehement love. Faine she would have barde her daughters happe, but loth she was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set uppon a wager of quicke rysing, as weake as she was, she gat up; though *Basilius*, (with a kindnesse flowing onely from the fountaine of unkindnesse, being in deede desirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he sawe sickennesse in her face, and therefore was loath she should adventure the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie *Gynecia*, possessed with 3 those devils of Love and Jealousie, did rid herselfe from her tedious husbände: and taking no body with her, going toward thẽ; O Jealousie (said she) the phrensie of wise folkes, the well-wishing spite, and unkinde carefulnesse, the selfe-punishment for others faults, and selfe-miserie in others happinesse, the cousin of envie, daughter of love, & mother of hate, how couldest thou so quietly get thee a seate in the unquiet hart of *Gynecia*, *Gynecia* (said she sighing) thought wise, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling accesse of thy fever, in such sort, that nature gives place; the growing

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

of my daughter seemes the decay of my selfe; the blessings of a mother turne to the curses of a cōpetitor; and the faire face of *Philoclea*, appeares more horrible in my sight, then the image of death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought tooke a right measure of her present mind.

**W***Yth two strange fires of equall heate possesst,  
The one of Love, the other Jealousie,  
Both still do worke, in neither finde I rest:  
For both, alas, their strengthes together tie:  
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.  
Love wakes the jealous eye least thence it moves:  
The jealous eye, the more it lookes, it loves.*

- 4 *These fires increase: in these I dayly burne:  
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:  
My lovely joyes to dolefull ashes turne:  
Their flames mount up, my powers prostrate lie:  
They live in force, I quite consumed die.  
One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:  
The fuell small: how be the fires so great?*

5 But her unleasured thoughtes ran not over the ten first wordes; but going with a pace, not so much too fast for her bodie, as slowe for her minde, she found them together, who after *Misos* departure, had left their tale, and determined what to say to *Basilius*. But full abashed was poore *Philoclea*, (whose conscience nowe began to knowe cause of blushing) for first salutation, receyving an eye from her mother, full of the same disdainfull scorne, which *Pallas* shewed to poore *Arachne*, that durst contende with her for the prize of well weaving: yet did the force of love so much rule her, that though for *Zelmanes* sake she did detest her, yet for *Zelmanes* sake she used no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompanie her solitarie father.

6 Then began she to display to *Zelma* the storehouse of her deadly desires, when sodainly the confused rumor of a mutinous multitude gave just occasion to *Zelma* to breake of any such conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conveniently they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne



the lodge by twentie paces, they were overtaken by an unruly sort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themselves knewe not whether. But assoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beastes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a great advancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; some, Kill; some, Save: but even they that cried save, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Everie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief Captain, that was most ragefull.

*Zelmane* (whose vertuous courage was ever awake) drew out 7 her sword, which upon those il-armed churls giving as many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almost as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering smart upon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got thēselves into the lodge: out of the which, *Basilus* (having put on an armour long untried) came to prove his authoritie among his subjects, or at lest, to adventure his life with his deare mistresse, to whō he brought a shield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the issue of this dangerous adventure. But *Zelmane* made them perceive the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with such a nimble stayednes, and such an assured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her sword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased 8 by the comming of *Dorus*, who having been making of hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and having streight represented before the eies of his carefull love, the perill wherein the soule of his soule might be, he went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a cave hard by, with *Mopsa* and *Dametas*, who at that time would not have opened the entrie to his father. And therefore leaving them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and unknowen) he ranne as the noise guded him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that overthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

from him, and withall, helpt him from ever being ashamed of losing it. Then lifting up his brave head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how evill their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, lest in long fight they should be conquered with cōquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in such sort, that still their terror went forward: like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull imbrace-ment) though his pace be backward, his gesture is foreward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the advancing: so guided they themselves homeward, never stepping steppe backward, but that they proved themselves masters of the ground where they stept.

- 9 Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to *Zelmane*. But as he came within her distāce, turning his swerd very nicely about his crown, *Basilus*, with a side blow, strake of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters daughter, and therfore not a little grieved for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because he had hard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleave on againe. But as his hand was on the ground to bring his nose to his head, *Zelmane* with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted up a great leaver, calling *Zelmane* all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But she (letting slippe the blowe of the leaver) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether jawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters remēbrance had served. O (said a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitch-forke at *Dorus*: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it over-runne his feet, so that he fell withall, just betwene the legs of *Dorus*: who setting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the other; which toke it very unkindlie, to feele such newes

before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But *Dorus* (leaving the miller to vomit his soul out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake of another quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed he was growen a couple, and (interpreting it he should be married) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow astonished quite a poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfette the skirmishing betwene the *Centaures* and *Lapithes*, and had bene very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more lively to expresse them; and this morning (being caried by the streame of this companie) the foolish fellow was even delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last, (hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still, while *Dorus* (with a turne of his sword) strake of both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with never a hand to performe his skill.

## CHAP. 26.

<sup>1</sup> *Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie.* <sup>2</sup> *A bone of division cast by her,* <sup>3</sup> *and caught by them.* <sup>4</sup> *Her pacificatorie oration.* <sup>5</sup> *The acceptation and issue of it.*

IN this manner they recovered the lodge, and gave the rebels a face of wood of the out-side. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themselves entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with love, especially *Philoclea*, who ever caught hold of *Zelmane*, so (by the follie of love) hindering the help which she desired. But *Zelmane* seeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of those villaines still encreasing, and their madnesse still encreasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an unused boldnesse, and with danger to avoide danger: and therfore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Basilus* standing redie for her defence) she issued againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all in generall were

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them sodainly over-neere her, so that she had time to gette up to the judgement-seate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that cuntry) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand unto them, & withall, speaking aloud, that she had something to say unto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries; and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the cuntry sort, and was caught in a little affection towards *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindenesse to have some good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I sweare unto you by no little ones, I had rather give my teeme of oxen, then we should shewe our selves so uncivill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I have heard it of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say little. His sententious speech so prevailed, that the most parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulness, & such a quiet magnanimitie represented in her face in this uttermost perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks upon her, in this sorte began unto them.

- 2 It is no small comfort unto me (said she) having to speake something unto you for your owne behoofs, to find that I have to deale with such a people, who shew indeed in thēselves the right nature of valure, which as it leaves no violence unattempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subject of their wrath, doth of it self unloked-for offer it self into their hands, it makes thē at lest take a pause before they determine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) have I to say unto you; that your Prince *Basilius* himselfe in person is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, whō a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but because she would have them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I sent unto you, as frō a Prince to his well approved subjects, nay as from a father to beloved children, to know what it is that hath bred

just quarrell among you, or who they be that have any way wrōged you? what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulness) he commaunds you presently to set downe, & to choose among your selves some one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes unto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince)<sup>3</sup> asswaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demaūds that he might have *Zelmane* for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieves, never Bees made such a cōfused hūming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of cōmons: some would have the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. Al cried out to have new coūcellors: but when they should think of any new, they liked thē as well as any other, that they could remēber, especially they would have the treasure so looked unto, as that he should never neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarieties. For the Artisans, they would have corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so stil: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The coūtrimen demaunded that every man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like of. The peasāts would have the Gentlemē destroied, the Citizens (especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that lived most on Gentlemen) would but have them reformed. And of ech side were like divisions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one dispraising such a one, whō another praised, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would have exalted. No lesse ado was there about choosing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses, as Marchants Prentises, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdaining them: all they scorning the countrimens ignoraunce, & the countrymen suspecting as much their cūning: So that *Zelmane* (finding that their united rage was now growne, not only to a dividing, but to a crossing one of another, & that the mislike growne among thēselves did

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

wel allay the heat against her) made tokēs againe unto thē (as though she tooke great care of their wel doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake unto thē. They now growne jealous one of another (the stay having ingēdred divisiō, & divisiō having manifested their weaknes) were willing inough to heare, the most part striving to show themselves willinger then their fellowes: which *Zelmane* (by the acquaintaunce she had had with such kinde of humors) soone perceiving, with an angerles bravery, & an unabashed mildnes, in this manner spake unto them.

- 4 An unused thing it is, & I think not heretofore seene, ô *Arcadians*, that a womā should give publike coūsel to men, a strāger to the coūtry people, & that lastly in such a presence by a private person, the regall throne should be possessed. But the straungenes of your action makes that used for vertue, which your violent necessitie imposeth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to such men, who have forgottē al manlike government: a straunger may with reason instruct such subjects, that neglect due points of subjection: and is it marvaile this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares government) dare not shew his face unto his faithfull people? Heare therefore ô *Arcadians*, & be ashamed: against whō hath this rage bene stirred? whether have bene bent these māfull weapons of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge are harbourd no *Argians* your ancient enemies, nor *Laconians* your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting usurers. Here lodge none, but such as either you have great cause to love, or no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princesse, and their children, but my self. Is it I then, ô *Arcadians*, against whom your anger is armed? Am I the marke of your vehemēt quarrell? if it be so, that innocencie shall not be a stop for furie; if it be so, that the law of hospitalitie (so long & holily observed among you) may not defend a straunger fled to your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiaunt mens courages can be enflamed to the mischief of one silly woman; I refuse not to make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignatiō, so it go no further, I am content to pay the great favours I have received amōg you, with my life, not ill deserving I present it here unto you, ô *Arcadians*, if that may satisfie you; rather

thē you (called over the world the wise and quiet *Arcadians*) should be so vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the rest of your countrie wil abhor; thē you should shew your selves so ungratefull, as to forget the fruite of so many yeares peaceable government; or so unnaturall, as not to have with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any furie over-maistred. For such a hellish madnes (I know) did never enter into your harts, as to attēpt any thing against his person; which no successor, though never so hatefull, wil ever leave (for his owne sake) unrevenge. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to such a basenes, as in stead of a Prince, delivered unto you by so many roiall ancestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subject, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth ravenous covetousnes, and the newnes of his estate, suspectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more wish unto you, then to see your owne estate with your owne handes undermined? O what would your fore-fathers say, if they lived at this time, & saw their offspring defacing such an excellent principalitie, which they with so much labour & bloud so wisely have establisht? Do you thinke them fooles, that saw you should not enjoy your vines, your cattell, no not your wives & children, without government; and that there could be no government without a Magistrate, and no Magistrate without obedience, and no obediēce where every one upon his owne private passion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your present exāple to you. What sweetnes (in good faith) find you in your present condition? what choise of choise finde you, if you had lost *Basilus*? under whose ensigne would you go, if your enimies should invade you? If you cannot agree upon one to speake for you, how wil you agree upō one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tel what, one is troubled, and with that passed wrong another is grieved. And I pray you did the Sunne ever bring you a fruitfull harvest, but that it was more hote then pleasant? Have any of you childrē, that be not sometimes cumbersome? Have any of you fathers, that be not sometime weerish? What, shall we curse the Sonne, hate our children, or disobey our fathers? But what need I use these wordes, since I see in your countenances (now vertuously settled) nothing els but love and dutie to him, by whom for your only sakes the governmēt

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

is embraced. For al what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; judging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the actiō. Your grieves, and desires, whatsoever, & whensoever you list, he wil consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to cōclude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same love lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must cōfesse over-vehement affection: the only continuauce might prove a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very wel, you begā with zeale, & wil end with reverēce.

5 The action *Zelmane* used, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures beyng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they served as a shadow, to make the picture more lively and sensible, with the sweete cleernesse of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felte, whose beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gave such a way unto her speach through the rugged wildernesse of their imaginations, who (besides they were stricken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a cōfused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leave: most of them could have bene cōtent, it had never bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to lōose knots. But *Zelmane* thinking it no evil way in such mutinies, to give the mutinous some occasiō of such service, as they might thinke (in their own judgement) would countervaille their trespassse, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which she feared might begin to waver, Loiall *Arcadians* (said she) now do I offer unto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that have taken armes for the Princes safetie, let thē turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie onely doth guide to well



doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie fellow among them, named *Clinias*, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of *Zelmanes* mouth, but that there were some shouts of joy, with, God save *Basilus*, and divers of them with much jollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before mēt to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

<sup>1</sup> *A verball craftie coward purtrayed in Clinias.* <sup>2</sup> *His first raising, and with the first, relenting in this mutinie,* <sup>3</sup> *punished by the farmer.* <sup>4</sup> *The uprore reenforced, & weakned by themselves.* <sup>5</sup> *Clinias-his Sinon-like narration of this drūken rebellions original.* <sup>6</sup> *The kings order in it.*

**T**HIS *Clinias* in his youth had bene a scholler so farre, as to learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had used to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquaintance with many passions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long used to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in privie practises.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to *Cecropia*, <sup>2</sup> *Amphialus*-his mother, so that he was privy to al the mischievous devises, wherewith she went about to ruine *Basilus*, and his children, for the advauncing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his love to be doing, taught him in any evill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene used (ever since the strange retiring of *Basilus*) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the uprore (though quite without the cōsent of *Amphialus*, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so have advētered the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the first of the tide, so that no mā cried lowder then he, upon *Basilius*. And som of the lustiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his cōmandement to lift him up, & then as if he had had a prologue to utter, he began with a nice gravitie to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the stars from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowde, that not onely *Zelmane*, but *Basilius* might heare him. O unhappie men, more madde then the Giants that would have plucked *Jupiter* out of heaven, how long shal this rage continue? why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and submit your selves to our good Prince, our good *Basilius*, the *Pelops* of wisdom, & *Minos* of all good governmēt? when will you begin to beleve me, and other honest and faithfull subjects, that have done all we could to stop your furie?

3 The farmer that loved *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of cōditions, hoping to have gotten great soverainties, & among the rest *Zelmane*: so now perceiving, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would never stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yeelding, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such advancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefest make-bates, strake him a great wound upon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

4 But as soone as that blow was given (as if *Æolus* had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being divided in minds & not divided in cōpanies, they that would yeeld to *Basilius* were intermingled with thē that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood upō it; those men to get favor of their Prince, converted their ungracious motion into their owne bowels, & by a true judgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed thē those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by being

so, had taught them, that they did leade disobediēce to the same leaders. And many times it fel out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe *Zelmane*; and *Basilus* with *Dorus* issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such havocke (amōg the rest *Zelmane* striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods upon the frontiers; where feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were disciplined for their drunken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score onely escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe souldiers, were returned from the chase, *Basilus* calling them together, partly for policy sake, but principally because *Zelmane* before had spoken it (which was to him more thē a divine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and therafter be more circūspect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with share-marks of their folly. But imagining *Clinias* to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gave him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

*Clinias* purposing indeede to tell him the trueth of al, saving 5 what did touch himself, or *Cecropia*, first, dipping his hand in the blood of his woūd, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me, then al the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this tōgue (perchance unfortunate, but never false) shall not now begin to lie unto my Prince, of me most beloved. Then stretching out his hand, and making vehement countenāces the ushers to his speches, in such maner of tearms recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of *Enispus*, to do honour to the day, were a four or five thousand people (of all conditions, as I thinke) gathered together, spending al the day in dancings and other exercises: and when night came, under tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to observe a wassaling watch all that night for your sake. *Bacchus* (the learned say) was begot with thunder: I

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

think, that made him ever since so full of stur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which soüded the first trüpet to this rude alarũ. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to thinke with vice to do honor, & with activitie in beastlines to shew abundāce of love, made most of thẽ seeke to shew the depth of their affectiõ in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (having spent al the night, & some peece of the morning in such revelling) & imboldned by your absented maner of living, there was no matter their eares had ever heard of that grew not to be a subject of their winie conference. I speake it by prooffe: for I take witnes of the gods (who never leave perjuries unpunished) that I oftẽ cried out against their impudency, & (whẽ that would not serve) stopt mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their blasphemies, till with buffets they forced me to have mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were mingled with private grudges, neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretende some cause of mislike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and saying nothing had his uttermoste prayse in ignoraunce. At the length, your sacred person (alas why did I live to heare it? alas how do I breath to utter it? But your cõmandement doth not onely enjoin obedience, but give me force: your sacred person (I say) fell to be their table-talk: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatnes, having put on the shew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very unbrideled use of words having increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to cõdemne their own want of knowledge) they descended (O never to be forgotten presumption) to a direct mislike of your living from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched constructions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes, change could not impaire) began to say, that your government was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had levied amög thẽ) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into

## ARCADIA, LIB. 2.

counsel, that the cōmons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opiniōs: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you lived? nay whether you did live or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see; and if you were here, to know (if *Arcadia* were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the governement an adherent to the countrie, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (said they) let us beginne that, which all *Arcadia* will followe. Let us deliver our Prince from daunger of practises, and our selves from want of a Prince. Let us doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which have their force but in our force. Lastly, to have saide & heard so much, was as dāgerous, as to have attēpted: & to attēpt they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These words being spokē (like a furious storme) presently caried away their wel inclined braines. What I, and some other of the honester sort could do, was no more, then if with a puffe of breath, one should goe about to make a saile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sounde of so many voīces, was the chiefe token of their unmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life, to monstrous threatning of your estate; the solemnizing your birth-day, tended to have been the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seekes to hurt, the lesse it considers how to be able to hurt: they never weyed how to arme thēselves, but tooke up every thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, converting husbandrie to souldierie: some caught hold of spittes (things serviceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to use it (as he could) to your mischief. Thus

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

armed, thus governed, forcing the unwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong towarde this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolved in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo when he came hether. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthning one evill by an other, and so multiplie in it selfe, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preserve you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preserve you for the preservation of *Arcadia*) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not used for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as mine) and some (I must confesse) honest minds, (whō alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred part of our duetie?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we have cause to rejoyce that we are *Arcadians*.

- 6 With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: so as *Basilius*, that was not the sharpest pearcer into masked minds, toke a good liking to him; & so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therfore ptying his woūd, willed him to get him home, and looke well unto it, & make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the shepheards being come (for that day was appointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to *Philanax*, and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities there abouts, to make through-inquirie of this uprore, and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes & villages neere unto him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more security, upō the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, having them in a redines for him.

<sup>1</sup> *The praises of Zelmanes act.* <sup>2</sup> *Dametas his caroll for saving himself, and his charge.* <sup>3</sup> *Basilius his conference with Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.)* <sup>4</sup> *His wrong-construction of it.* <sup>5</sup> *His hymne to Apollo.* <sup>6</sup> *His courting turnde over to tale-telling.*

**T**His, *Clinias* (having his eare one way when his eye was in an other) had perceived; & therefore hasted away, with mind to tell *Cecropia* that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discover, & ruine her: and so went his way, leaving that little companie with embracements, and praising of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to shew, that no decking sets foorth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she stooode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, everie angrie countenance any of them made, seemed a knife layde upon their owne throates; so unspeakable was now their joy, that they saw (besides her safetie & their owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed all their delightes. What examples *Greece* could ever alledge of witte and fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those unfained ceremonies, <sup>2</sup> a Gitterne, ill-played on, accompanied with a hoarse voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses, and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noysed song. The song was this.

**A** *Hatefull cure with hate to heale:*  
*A bloody helpe with blood to save:*  
*A foolish thing with fooles to deale:*  
*Let him be bold that bobs will have.*  
*But who by meanes of wisdoms hie*  
*Hath sav'd his charge? it is even I.*

*Let other deck their pride with skarres,*  
*And of their wounds make brave lame shoves:*  
*First let them die, then passe the starres,*  
*When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.*  
*But eye from blade, and eare from crie:*  
*Who hath sav'd all? it is even I.*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

They had soone found it was *Dametas*, who came with no lesse lifted up countenance, then if he had passed over the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point he thought he had perfourmed, in using the naturall strength of a cave. But never was it his dooing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storme there ever fell a fewe droppes before it be  
“fully finished. But *Pamela* (who had now experienced how  
| much care doth sollicite a Lovers hart) used this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed aswel for that cause, as being unquiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepheard had gone through the daunger. But *Basilus* with the sight of *Pamela* (of whom almost his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was sodainly stricken into a devout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne best, and with the willing blindness of affection (because his minde ran wholly upon *Zelmane*) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

3 But as he was deeply thinking of the matter, one of the shepherds tolde him, that *Philanax* was already come with a hundred horse in his company. For having by chaunce rid not farre of the little desert, he had heard of this upre, and so was come upon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. *Basilus* was glad of it; but (not willing to have him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giving order unto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters; and *Philanax* with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreate him to leave of his solitarie course (which already had bene so daungerous unto him) Well (said *Basilus*) it may be ere long I wil cōdiscend unto your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my solitarinesse. But, (said he) doo you remember, how earnestly you wrote unto me, that I should not be moved by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered *Philanax*) for though it pleased you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputatiō, it suffised me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you frō



your owne course. Well (said *Basilius*) I will now tell you the wordes; which before I thought not good to doo; because when al the events fall out (as some already have done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sorte.

**T***Hy elder care shall from thy carefull face  
By princely meane be stolne, and yet not lost.  
Thy yonger shall with Natures blisse embrace  
An uncouth love, which Nature hateth most.  
Both they themselves unto such two shall wed,  
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;  
Why thee (a living man) they had made dead.  
In thy owne seate a forraine state shall sit.  
And ere that all these blowes thy head doo hit,  
Thou, with thy wife, adultry shall commit.*

For you forsoth (said he) when I told you, that some supernaturall cause sent me strange visiōs, which being cōfirmed with presagious chaunces, I had gone to *Delphos*, & there received this answer: you replied to me, that the onely supernaturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceits, apt to make presages of things, which in thēselves were meerly chaungeable: & with all as I say, you remēber what you wrot unto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I have some notable triall of the truth therof, which hereafter I wil more largely cōmunicate unto you. Only now, know that the thing I most feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine state should possesse my throne. For that hath ben done by *Zelmane*, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preservatiō. But whē he had once named *Zelmane*, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praises run on in such sort, that (*Philanax* found) was more exquisite then the only admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at, made him shrink away as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which *Basilius* had enjoyned unto him.

*Basilius* returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe construing the oracle, that in that he said, his elder care should by Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

was now perfourmed, since *Zelmane* had as it were robd from him the care of his first begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger should with Natures blisse embrace the love of *Zelmane*, because he had so commaunded her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the jealousie hee thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his seate he deemed by her already perfourmed: but that which most cōforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should commit with *Zelmane*, whom afterwards he should have to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, because it threatned his death withall, he determined to prevent, with keeping them unmarried while he lived. But having as he thought, gotten thus much understanding of the Oracle, he determined for three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to *Apollo*: and even then began with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearely used.

- 5 *A* Pollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,  
*And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,*  
*Which ever shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,*  
*Whose lights do ever live, but in our darknesse fade;*  
*Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythōs skin:*  
 “*(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakish kinne)*  
*Latonas sonne, whose birth in paine and travaile long*  
*Doth teach, to learne the good what travailes do belong:*  
 “*In travaile of our life (a short but tedious space)*  
*While brickle houreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:*  
*Give us foresightfull mindes: give us minds to obaye*  
*What foresight tels; our thoughts upon thy knowledge staye.*  
*Let so our fruites grow up, that nature be maintaine:*  
*But so our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not staine.*  
*Let this assured holde our judgements overtake,*  
 “*That nothing winnes the heaven, but what doth earth forsake.*

- 6 Assone as he had ended his devotion (all the priviledged shepheards being now come) knowing well inough he might lay all his care upon *Philanax*, he was willing to sweeten the tast of this passed tumult, with some rurall pastimes. For which while the shepheards prepared themselves in their best

māner, *Basilus* tooke his daughter *Philoclea* aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found *Zelmane*. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake *Zelmane* was content to descend from her former resolutiō, as to heare him, whēsoever he would speake; & further then that (she said) as *Zelmane* had not graunted, so she nether did, nor ever would desire. *Basilus* kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine have used the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sicknes before his onely physition. But *Zelmane* (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words understand, that the time in respect of the cōpanie was unfit for such a parley, & therfore to keep his braines the busier, letting him understand what she had learned of his daughters, touching *Eronas* distresse (whom in her travaile she had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for so far as *Plāgus* had told him; Because she said (& she said truly) she was full of care for that Ladie, whose desart (onely except an over-base choise) was nothing agreable to misfortune. *Basilus* glad that she would commaund him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the unfittnesse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

## CHAP. 29.

<sup>1</sup> Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie. <sup>2</sup> His unkinde hating the loving Erona, and fond loving of hating Artaxia. <sup>3</sup> Artaxias trap to take them both. <sup>4</sup> The mans weaknesse, and the womans strength in bearing captivitie. <sup>5</sup> Plangus love to her, employed by her to save Antiphilus, <sup>6</sup> who againe betraies himselfe and them. <sup>7</sup> His execution by women. <sup>8</sup> Plangus hardy attempts to save Erona. <sup>9</sup> The conditions of her death. <sup>10</sup> Her sorrow for Antiphilus, <sup>11</sup> and Plangus travaile for her: with his crosses, and course therein.

**M** Adame (said he) it is very true, that since yeares enhabled me to judge what is, or is not to be pitied, I never saw anything that more moved me to justifie a vehemēt com-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

passion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceave you have heard) yet true and noble love had so pulled downe, as to lie under sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subject, which I perceive you have seene. But then to leave that unrepeatd, which I finde my daughters have told you, It may please you to understād, since it pleaseth you to demaūd, that *Antiphilus* being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes *Musidorus* & *Pyrocles* (led thēce by the challenge of *Anaxius*, who is now in these provinces of *Greece*, making a dishonorable enquire after that excellent prince *Pyrocles* already perished) *Antiphilus* (I say) being crowned, and delivered from the presence of those two, whose vertues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had not strēgth of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discovering what maner of man he was. But streight like one caried up to so hie a place, that he looseth the discerning of the ground over which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyōd the levell of his owne discourse, that remembring only that himselfe was in the high seate of a King, he coulde not perceive that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at injuries. But imagining no so true propertie of sovereigntie, as to do what he listed, and to list whatsoever pleased his fansie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniscourt, where his subjects should be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far upon himselfe, that what he did was liked of every bodie: nay, that his disgraces were favours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyve the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an unknowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as everie winde of passions puffed him. Whereto nothing helped him better, then that poysonous sugar of flatterie: which some used, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning upon the greatest; others secretly hating him, and disdayning his great rising so suddenly, so undeservedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his overthrow; like the bird that caries the shell-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall. But his minde (being an apt matter to receive what forme their

amplifying speeches would lay upon it) daunced so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthiest, and best beloved, that ever gave honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out unblushing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, unjustly dispossessed by *Eronas* auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selfe, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his basenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought 2 him so to despise *Erona*, as of whom he had received no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres mariage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an unlawfull law of having mo wives then one, he still keeping *Erona*, under-hād, by message sought *Artaxia*, who no lesse hating him, then loving (as unluckie a choise) the naughtie King *Plexirtus*, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of *Armenia*, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gottē-eies to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of al the Princes of *Asia* being to do honour to the never sufficiently praised *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to have bene yong master among those great estates, as he was amōg his abusing underlings. But so many valorous Princes, in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing upon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-cōfortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was envie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him hast away frō that company, & without further delay appointed the meeting with *Artaxia*; so incredibly blinded with the over-bright shining of his roialty, that he could thinke such a Queene could be content to be joined-patent with an other to have such an husband. Poore *Erona* to all this obeyed, either vehemēcy of affection making her stoop to so overbase a servitude, or astonished with an unlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful resolutiō, or (as many times it falles out even in great harts when they can accuse none but thēselves) desperatly

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

bent to maintaine it. For so went she on in that way of her love, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-set affection, she was brought to write to *Artaxia*, that she was content, for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and even woo *Artaxia* for him.

3 But *Artaxia* (mortally hating them both for her brothers sake) was content to hide her hate, til she had time to shewe it: and pretending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of vertue, *Musidorus* & *Pyrocles*, even met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-side, driven to what they did by the ever-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she promised nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promised himselfe all that she woulde have him thinke. And so a solemne enter-view was appointed. But (as the Poets say) *Hymen* had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For *Artaxia* laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since *Antiphilus* thought she overran him in love) when he came even readie to embrace her, shewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (having much advauntage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the sword; but such as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* she caused him and *Erona* both to be put in irons, hasting backe toward her brothers tombe, upō which she ment to sacrifice them; making the love of her brother stand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

4 But great diversitie in them two quickly discovered it selfe for the bearing of that affliction. For *Antiphilus* that had no greatnesse but outwarde, that taken away, was readie to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolved) and weake bemoaning his fortune, to give his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manie promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But *Erona* sadde indeede, yet like one rather used, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the joyes of her hart already broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for *Antiphilus*, remembring his guiltles-

nesse, being at that time prisoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant princes slue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to judge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by her 5 birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made this noble prince *Plangus*, who (never almost from his cousin *Artaxia*) was now present at *Eronaes* taking, to perceyve the shape of lovelinesse more perfectly in wo, then in joyfulnessse (as in a picture which receives greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeing to like; and liking to love; and loving straight to feele the most incident effects of love, to serve and preserve. So borne by the hastie tide of short leysure, he did hastily deliver together his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mencioned her life, to which she had not leisure to attend) desired him if he loved her, to shew it, in finding some way to save *Antiphilus*. For her, she found the world but a wearisom stage unto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought him, not to cast his love in so unfruitfull a place, as could not love it selfe: but for a testimonie of constancie, and a sutablenes to his word, to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her sake *Antiphilus* were saved. He tolde me how much he argued against her tendering him, who had so ungratefully betraied her, and foolishly cast away himselfe. But perceiving she did not only bend her very goodwits to speake for him against her-selfe, but when such a cause could be allied to no reasō, yet love would needs make it-self a cause, & barre her rather frō hearing, then yeeld that she should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in whō the power of Love (as they say of spirits) was subject to the love in her, with grieve cōsented, & (though backwardly) was diligēt to labor the help of *Antiphilus*: a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to *Erona*, but envied as a possessor of *Erona*. Yet Love sware, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a servant to his rivall. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading *Artaxia*, which the authority of so neere, and so vertuous a kinsmā would give unto him. But she to whom the eloquence of hatred had given revenge the face of delight, rejected all such motions;

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of *Tiridates* (which was very nere) to execute *Antiphilus*, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to use the same rigor towar[ds] *Erona*. *Plangus* much grieved (because much loving) attempted the humors of the *Lycians*, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is used in the game of kingdōs) had no sooner his mistres in captivity, but he had usurped her place, & making her odious to her people, because of the unfit electiō she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to *Artaxia*, perswading the justicing her, because that unjustice might give his title the name of justice. Wāting that way, *Plangus* practised with some deere friends of his, to save *Antiphilus* out of prison, whose day because it was much neerer then *Eronaes*, & that he wel found, she had twisted her life upō the same threed with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: & to that end having prepared al matters as wel as in such case he could, where *Artaxia* had set many of *Tiridates* old servants to have well-marking eyes, he cōferred with *Antiphilus*, as (by the aucthoritie he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time and maner, how he should by the death of some of his jaylors escape.

- 6 But all being well ordered, and *Plangus* willinglie putting himselfe into the greatest danger, *Antiphilus* (who, like a bladder, sweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that being out, was so abjected, as apt to be trode on by every bodie) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in apparant likelihoode to avoide the uttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) gat a conceite, that with bewraying his practise, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, even a little before *Plangus* should have come unto him, opened the whole practise to him that had the charge, with unpittyed teares idly protesting, he had rather die by *Artaxias* commaundement, then against her will escape: yet begging life upon any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she woulde lay upon him. His keeper provided accordingly, so that when *Plangus* came, he was like, himself to have bene



entrappud: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discovered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) stood upon his guard, as he had good cause. For, *Artaxia* (accounting him most ungrateful considering that her brother and she, had not onely preserved him against the malice of his father, but ever used him much liker his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great love, that he could not onely keepe himself from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of *Eronas* adversitie.

But for the succour of *Antiphilus* he could gette no bodie to 7  
joyne with him, the contempt of him having not bene able to qualifie the hatred; so that *Artaxia* might easilie upon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble suite of all the women of that citie) to deliver him to their censure, who mortally hating him for having made a lawe of *Polygamie*, after many tortures, forste him to throwe himselfe from a high *Pyramis*, which was built over *Tiridates* tombe, and so to end his false-harted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be unkinde.

But *Plangus* well perceiving that *Artaxia* staid onely for 8  
the appointed day, that the faire *Eronas* bodie, (consumed to ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeply her brothers death was engraven in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friendes, whō his vertue (though a stranger) had tied unto him, by force to give her libertie. Contrariwise, *Artaxia*, to whom Anger gave more courage then her sexe did feare, used her regall authoritie (the most she could) to suppress that sedition, and have her will: which (she thought) is the most princely thing that may be. But *Plangus*, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour) that are trained in the schoole of *Mars*, in a conflict overthrew *Artaxias* power, though of far greater number: and there toke prisoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she deerly affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune (whatsoever it was) that *Erona* did: & happy was that threatning for her; for els *Artaxia* had hastened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-mē of that countrie inter-9  
posing thēselves) it was agreed, that all persons els fullie

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

pardoned, and all prisoners (except *Erona*) delivered, she should be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, upon oath, that if by the day two yeare frō *Tiridates* death, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* did not in person combat, & overcome two knights, whō she appointed to maintain her quarrell against *Erona* and them, of having by treason destroyed her brother, that thē *Erona* should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be delivered; but upon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all toke solemne oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of *Plangus* partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condiscended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resist. But *Artaxia* was more, and upon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had even newly received newes frō *Plexirtus*, that upon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held her selfe sure of the match.

10 But poore *Plangus* knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it falles out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them; & then obtained leave of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite *Erona*, whom he founde full of desperate sorowe, not suffering, neither his unwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the naturall conclusion of all worldly acts) either to cover with forgetfulnes, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but even glorying in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to have no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie. So that when *Plangus* came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had seene the death of *Antiphilus*, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striving) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe injured; in steede of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht her to doo) craving nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of just hate) beloved *Antiphilus*.

11 So that *Plangus* having nothing but a ravisht kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towarde *Greece*, whetherward he understoode the Princes were embarked. But by the

way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by *Artaxia* to *Plexirtus*: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had ever favoured, so much the rather, as he had performed the conditions of her marriage, in bringing to their deserved end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes, as he might well perceive, it was by some treason wrought in *Plexirtus* shippe. Whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippe himselfe, and came into *Laconia*, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shippe was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, it was assuredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in *Greece*) would quickly els have bene a large witnesse to the contrarie. Full of grieve with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sorie for *Eronas* sake, who now by them could not be relieved. A new advertisement from *Armenia* overtooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguish. It was a message, from the Nobleman who had *Erona* in ward, giving him to understād, that since his departure, *Artaxia* (using the benefite of time) had besieged him in his castell, demaunding present delivery of her, whom yet for his faith given, he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he foresaw, lōg he should not do for want of victuall, which he had not so wisely provided, because he trusted upon the generall oth taken for two yeares space: & therfore willed him to make hast to his succour, & come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in *Armenia*, were consumed, & *Artaxia* had encreased her might by mariage of *Plexirtus*, who now crowned King there, stickt not to glory in the murder of *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, as having just cause thereto, in respect of the deaths of his sister *Andromana*, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter *Zelmane*, all whose losse he unjustly charged them withal, & now openly stickt not to cōfesse, what a revenge his wit had brought forth. *Plangus* much astonished herewith, bethought himselfe what to doo. For to returne to *Armenia* was vaine, since his friends there were utterly overthrowne. Thē thought he of going to his father; but he had already (even since the death of his stepmother, & brother) attempted the recovering his favour, &

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

all in vaine. For they, that had before joined with *Andromana* to do him the wrong, thought now no life for thẽ if he returned, & therfore kept him stil (with new forged suspicions) odious to his father. So that *Plangus* reserving that for a worke of longer time, then the saving of *Erona* could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King *Euarchus*: who lately having (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enimies, but established good government in their countries, he hoped he might have present succour of him, both for the justnes of the cause, & revenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murdered. Therefore with diligence he went to him; & by the way (passing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the most overthrowne mã with griefe, that ever I hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had *Erona* at a stake before his eies; such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the comfort I could give him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was moved not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I have delivered unto you. Fayne he would have had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great *Euarchus*: for my parte having had some of his speeches so feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wise, in such manner as you have seene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I have obeyed you in this storie; wherein if it well please you to consider, what is the straunge power of Love, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercise therein the true noblenesse of your judgement, and doo the more right to the unfortunate Historian. *Zelmane* (sighing for *Eronaes* sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, *Euarchus* would not spare to take in hande the just delivering of her, joyned with the just revenge of his childrens losse) having now what she desired of *Basilius*, to avoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

### The second Eclogues.

**T**He rude tumulte of the *Enispians* gave occasion to the honest shepherds to beginne their pastorals this day with a daũce, which they called the skirmish betwixt *Reason* and *Passion*. For seven shepherds (which were named the Reasonable shepherds) joined thēselves; foure of them making a square, and the other two going a litle wide of either side, like winges for the maine battell; and the seventh man foremost, like the forlorne hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seven appassioned shepherds; all keeping the pase of their foote by their voice, and sundry consorted instrumēts they held in their armes. And first, the formost of Reasonable side began to sing.

*R. Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde.*

And the other that met with him answered.

*P. No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine shall be the field.*

*Reason. Can Reason then a Tyraunt counted be?*

*Passion. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.*

*R. But Reason will, that Reason governe most.*

*P. And Passion will, that Passion rule the rost.*

*R. Your will is will; but Reason reason is.*

*P. Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.*

*R. Whom Passion leads unto his death is bent.*

*P. And let him die, so that he die content.*

*R. By nature you to Reason faith have sworne.*

*P. Not so, but fellowlike together borne.*

*R. Who Passion doth ensue, lives in annoy.*

*P. Who Passion doth forsake, lives void of joy.*

*R. Passion is blinde, and treades an unknowne trace.*

*P. Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.*

Then as they approached neerer, the two of *Reasons* sides, as if they shot at the other, thus sange.

*R. Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?*

*P. And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?*

*R. O foolish thing, which glory doth destroye.*

*P. O glorious title of a foolish toye.*

*R. Weakenes you are, dare you with our strength fight?*

*P. Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

R. *O sacred Reason, helpe our vertuous toiles.*

P. *O Passion, passe on feeble Reasons spoiles.*

R. *We with ourselues abide a daily strife.*

P. *We gladly use the sweetnes of our life.*

R. *But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede.*

P. *We now have peace, your peace we doo not neede.*

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in steed of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.

R. *We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood.*

P. *Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good.*

R. *Though we cannot orecome, our cause is just.*

P. *Let us orecome, and let us be unjust.*

R. *Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reasons stroke.*

P. *What shall we winne by taking Reasons yoke?*

R. *The joyes you have shall be made permanent.*

P. *But so we shall with grieve learne to repent.*

R. *Repent indeed, but that shall be your blisse.*

P. *How know we that, since present joyes we misse?*

R. *You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.*

P. *No Reason yet had ever skill to show it.*

R. P. *Then let us both to heavenly rules give place,  
Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface.*

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praises of thē according to *Zelmanes* liking; whose unrestrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free course to the delicate *Philoclea*, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her jealous mother. But *Dicus* (that had in this time taken a great liking of *Dorus* for the good partes he found above his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subject which he him selfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus.

Dorus.

Dicus. **D**Orus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion  
To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?  
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy devotion.

## ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

*For who doth holde his love in estimation,  
To witnes, that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,  
Thinks to make ech thing badge of his sweet passion.*

*But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicious  
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?  
Who others vertue doubt, themselves are vicious.*

Dorus.

*Not so; although my mettall were most mutable,  
Her beames have wrought therein most faire impression:  
To such a force some chaunge were nothing sutable.*

*The harte well set doth never shunne confession:  
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:  
Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.*

Dicus.

*Who glories in his love, doth make Love glorious:  
But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,  
Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his state opprobrious.*

*Thou then, that framste both words & voice most skilfully,  
Yeeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation,  
If Love tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.*

*If Sunnie beames shame heav'nly habitation;  
If three-leav'd grasse seeme to the sheepe unsavorie,  
Then base and sower is Loves most high vocation.*

Dorus.

*Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne braverie,  
Then may I hope, my pipe may have abilitie,  
To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slaverie.*

*No, no: no wordes ennoble selfe-nobilitie.  
As for your doubts; her voice was it deceaved me,  
Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.*

*Thy words well voic'd, well gra'ste had almost heaved me  
Quite from my selfe to love Loves contemplation;  
Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende bereaved me.*

Dicus.

*Goe on therefore, and tell us, by what fashion  
In thy owne prooffe he gets so straunge possession,  
And how possesseth he strengthens his invasion?*

*Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression,  
His childhood woonder, prenticeship attention,  
His youth delight, his age the soules oppression:*

Dorus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in invention;  
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes;  
Beautie his boote, his play lovers dissention:*

*His eyes are curious search, but vailde with warefulness:  
His wings desire oft clipt with desperation:  
Largesse his hands could never skill of sparefulness.*

*But how he doth by might, or by persuasion  
To conquere, and his conquest how to ratifie,  
Experience doubts, and schooles holde disputation.*

Dicus. *But so thy sheepe may thy good wishes satisfie  
With large encrease, and wooll of fine perfection,  
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,  
As thou wilt give our soules a deare refection,  
By telling how she was, how now she framed is  
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.*

Dorus. *Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:  
Whose wounds are salves, whose yokes please more then pleasure doth:  
Her staines are beames; vertue the fault she blamed is.*

*The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:  
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:  
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.*

*Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,  
Yet harvest brings. Doth she alas absent herselfe?  
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadows cumber not.*

*But when to give some grace she doth content herselfe,  
O then it shines; then are the heav'ns distributed,  
And Venus seemes, to make up her, she spent herselfe.*

*Thus then (I say) my mischiefes have contributed  
A greater good by her divine refection;  
My harmes to me, my blisse to her attributed,*

*Thus she is framde: her eyes are my direction;  
Her love my life; her anger my destruction.  
Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.*

Dicus. *Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:  
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.  
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,  
Makes Reason lie a slave to servile Sense.  
A weake defence where weakenesse is thy force:  
So is remorse in follie dearely bought.*



*If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,  
My brest to swords, my soule to hell have solde  
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile  
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.  
O heards take heed; for I a woolfe have found;  
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,  
His breast doth fill with earth of others joyes,  
And loden so puls downe, puld downe destroyes.  
O sheepeheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,  
Which do envenome both the soule and senses.  
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.  
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,  
Who judge that honour, which hath scope to slander.*

Dorus.

*Dorus you wander farre in great reproches;  
So love encroches on your charmed reason,  
But it is season for to end our singing.  
But anger bringing: as for me, my fancie  
In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,  
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,  
Thou soone may have some helpe, or change of passion.  
She oft her lookes, the starres her favour bend to thee:  
Fortune store, Nature health, Love grant perswasion.  
A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,  
Thus I commend to thee all our former love,*

Dicus.

*Well do I prove, errour lies oft in zeale,  
Yet it is seale, though errour, of true hart.  
Nought could impart such heates to friendly mind.  
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,  
Whose onely face the little heaven is,*

„ Dorus.

„

*Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,  
Barr'd from their chiefest object of delightfulnessse,  
Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confusions.*

*As for thy wish to my enraged spitefulnessse,  
The lovely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is  
Thou mayest love her that I may see thy sightfulnessse.*

\*

*The quiet mind (whereof my selfe empairer is,  
As thou doest thinke) should most of all disquiet me  
Without her love, then any mind who fairer is.*

*Her onely cure from surfet-woes can diet me:*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*She holdes the ballance of my contentation:*

*Her cleared eyes, nought els, in stormes can quiet me.*

*Nay rather then my ease discontentation*

*Should breed to her, let me for aye dejected be*

*From any joy, which might her grieve occasion.*

*With so sweete plagues my happie harmes infected be:*

*Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:*

*For though life irkes, in life my loves protected be.*

*Thus for ech change my changelesse hart I fortifie.*

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants, especially of *Zelmane*, who never forgot to give due cōmēdations to her friend *Dorus*, the more to advance him in his pursute (although therein he had brought his matters to a more wished conclusion then yet she knew of) out starte a jolly yonker, his name was *Nico*, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And having spied one *Pas*, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this maner of salutation upon him, and was with like revērence requited.

Nico.

Dorus.

Nico. **A**nd are you there old *Pas*? in troth I ever thought,  
*Among us all we should find out some thing of nought.*

Pas. *And I am here the same, so mote I thrive and thee,  
Despairde in all this flocke to find a knave, but thee.*

Nico. *Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind:  
Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.*

Pas. *My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray,  
Not like the scrippe thou stol'ste, while Dorcas sleeping lay.*

Nico. *Mine was the scrippe: but thou, that seeming raid with love,  
Didst snatch from Cosmas hand her greeny wroughtē glove.*

Pas. *Ah foole; so Courtiers do. But who did lively skippe,  
When for a treene-dish stolne, thy father did thee whippe?*

Nico. *In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred,  
For pilfring *Lalus lambe*, with crouch to blesse thy head.*

# ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

*My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our judge:  
Of singing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge.* Pas.

*Couldst thou make Lalus flie? so nightingales avoide,  
When with the kawing crowes their musicke is annoide.* Nico.

*Nay like to nightingales the other birds give eare:* Pas.

*My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forswear.*

*I thinke it well: such voice would make one musicke hate:  
But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.* Nico.

*Another sure as is a gander from a goose:  
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.* Pas.

*Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day;  
The neighbours all did crie, alas what asse doth bray?* Nico.

*But here is Dicus old; let him then speake the woord,  
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers afford.* Pas.

*Content: but I will lay a wager hereunto,  
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.  
I have (and long shall have) a white great nimble cat,  
A king upon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,  
Fine eares, long taile he hath, with Lions curbed clawe,  
Which oft he lifteth up, and stayes his lifted pawe,  
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-mewing showes,  
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.  
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,  
And if I better sing, let me thy Cosma kisse.* Nico.

*Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse. I have a better match;  
A prettie curre it is; his name iwis is Catch,  
No eare nor taile he hath, least they should him disgrace,  
A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long speckled face:  
He never musing standes, but with himselfe will play  
Leaping at every flie, and angrie with a flea:  
He eft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,  
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt upright.  
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus judgement show:  
Such oddes I willing lay; for him and you I know.* Pas.

*Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,  
Or else who singeth worst, my skill will hardly hit.* Dicus.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

- Nico. *Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring  
The auncient prayse to Arcad shepheards skill?  
Pan is not dead, since Pas beginnes to sing.*
- Pas. *Who evermore will love Apollos quill,  
Since Nico doth to sing so widely gape?  
Nico his place farre better furnish will.*
- Nico. *Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape  
Raging in woes teach pastors first to plaine?  
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?*
- Pas. *This is not he that failed her to gaine,  
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:  
But this is one that doth his musicke staine.*
- Nico. *O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,  
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trowe,  
That Nico must with Pas compared be?*
- Pas. *O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:  
While I was warbling out your wooanted praise,  
Nico would needes with Pas his bagpipe blowe.*
- Nico. *If never I did faile your holy-dayes,  
With daunces, carols, or with barlybreake:  
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes.*
- Pas. *If each day hath bene holy for your sake,  
Unto my pipe, O Nymphes, helpe now my pipe,  
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.*
- Nico. *Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,  
Me thinkes I see the lippes my Leuca hath,  
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.*
- Pas. *Alas, when I in spring meete roses rathe,  
And thinke from Cosmas sweet red lips I live,  
I leave mine eyes unwipte my cheekes to bathe.*
- Nico. *As I of late, neer bushes usde my sive,  
I spied a thrush where she did make her nest,  
That will I take, and to my Leuca give.*
- Pas. *But long have I a sparrow gailie drest,  
As white as milke, and comming to the call,  
To put it with my hand in Cosmas brest.*

# ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

*I oft doo sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,  
But when I did come neere with heate and hope,  
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.*

Nico.

*Cosma once said, she left the wicket ope,  
For me to come, and so she did: I came,  
But in the place found nothing but a rope.*

Pas.

*When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame  
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,  
If Leuca live, she darken will my fame.*

Nico.

*When Cosma doth come forth, the Sun displaies  
His utmost light: for well his witte doth know,  
Cosmas faire beames emblemish much his raies.*

Pas.

*Leuca to me did yester-morning showe  
In perfect light, which could not me deceave,  
Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.*

Nico.

*But yesternight by light I did receave  
From Cosmas eyes, which full in darkenes shine,  
I sawe her arme, where purest Lillies cleave.*

Pas.

*She once starke nak'd did bathe a little tine;  
But still (me thought) with beauties from her fell,  
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.*

Nico.

*She once, to coole her selfe, stood in a well,  
But ever since that well is well besought,  
And for Rose-water sould of rarest smell.*

Pas.

*To rivers banke, being on walking brought,  
She bad me spie her babie in the brooke,  
Alas (said I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.*

Nico.

|| *As in a glasse I held she once did looke,  
I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,  
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.*

Pas.

*O if I had a ladder for the skies,  
I would climbe up, and bring a prettie starre,  
To weare upon her neck, that open lies.*

Nico.

*O if I had Apollos golden carre,  
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,  
That (shining now) she then might shine more farre.*

Pas.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

- Nico. *Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy fame deface,  
While shepheards tunes be heard, or rimes be read,  
Or while that shepheards love a lovely face.*
- Pas. *Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,  
As farre as any shepheards piping be:  
As farre as Love possesseth any head.*
- Nico. *Thy monument is layd in many a tree,  
With name engrav'd: so though thy bodie die,  
The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.*
- Pas. *So oft these woods have heard me Cosma crie,  
That after death, to heav'n in woods resound,  
With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma flie.*
- Nico. *Peace, peace good Pas, thou weeriest even the ground  
With sluttish song: I pray thee learne to blea,  
For good thou mayst yet proove in sheepish sound.*
- Pas. *My father hath at home a prettie Jay,  
Goe winne of him (for chattering) praise or shame:  
For so yet of a conquest speake thou may.*
- Nico. *Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,  
That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,  
That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.*
- Pas. *Tell me (and Phœbus be) what monster growes  
With so strong lives, that bodie cannot rest  
In ease, untill that bodie life forgoes.*
- Dicus. *Enough, enough: so ill hath done the best,  
That since the having them to neither's due,  
Let cat and dog fight which shall have both you.*

SOME speech there streight grew among the hearers, what they should meane by the riddles of the two monsters. But *Zelmane*, whose harte better delighted in wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, she desired *Lamon*, he would againe repeate some other lamentation of the still-absent *Strephon* and *Klaius*. *Basilus* (as soone as he understood *Zelmanes* pleasure) commaunded *Lamon* upon paine of his life (as though every thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained to his mistresse service) immediately to sing it: who with great

cunning, varying his voice according to the diversitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, answered in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon.

Klaius.

**I** *Joye in grieve, and doo detest all joyes:  
Despise delight, and tyrde with thought of ease  
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,  
And with the chaunge of them my fancie please.  
I studie that which may me most displease,  
And in despite of that displeasures might,  
Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes.  
Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my sight:  
Dole on my ruine feedes, with sucking smarte,  
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.*

Strephon.

*I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,  
And loth this time, calld life, nay thinke, that life  
Nature to me for torment did emparte;  
Thinke, my harde haps have blunted deaths sharpe knife,  
Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:  
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death  
Place Sorowes triumph on my conquered brest:  
Whereto I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,  
But from the sent of some infectious grave:  
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischief crave.*

Klaius.

*Nor of my fortune ought but mischief crave,  
And seeke to nourish that, which now contaynes  
All what I am: if I my selfe will save,  
Then must I save, what in me chiefly raignes,  
Which is the hatefull web of Sorowes paines.  
Sorow then cherish me, for I am sorowe:  
No being now, but sorowe I can have:  
Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I borowe,  
Since thou my riches arte, and that thou haste  
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste.*

Strephon.

*Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste  
Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:  
Hailestones of teares, of sighes a monstrous blast,*

Klaius.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,  
The darkened heav'n my soule which nought can see;  
The flying sprites which trees by rootes up teare  
Be those despaires, which have my hopes quite wast.  
The diffrence is; all folkes those stormes forbear:  
But I cannot; who then my selfe should fie  
So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie.*

Strephon. *So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie;  
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende  
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?  
My ship, my selfe; whose course to love doth bende,  
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:  
Her cable, Reason, breakes from anchor, Hope:  
Fancie, her tackling, torne away doth fie:  
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:  
Bruised with waves of Cares, but broken is  
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse.*

Klaius. *On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse  
I long doo plowe with plough of deepe Desire:  
The seed Fast-meaning is, no truth to misse:  
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire  
Favour to make my chiefe and onely hire.  
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,  
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this,  
Hate fully growne, Absence new sprongen out.  
So that I see, although my sight empaire,  
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.*

Strephon. *Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.  
For so did I, when with my angle, Will,  
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.  
Ev'n then Despaire did Hope already kill:  
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,  
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,  
Lamde with the angle, which it selfe did beare,  
And unto death, quite drownde in Dolours, brought  
To death, as then disguise in her faire face.  
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.*



*Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,  
When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,  
Whose footesteps I with kisses oft did trace,  
Till by such hap, as I must ever rewe,  
Mine eyes did light upon her shining hewe,  
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.  
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,  
Infected so with her sweet poysons might,  
That, leaving me for dead, to her it went:  
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.*

Klaius

*But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,  
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,  
Yet living still in her, while her beames lent  
Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.  
But now those living lights absented be,  
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,  
But that eternall paines my soule should hent,  
And keepe it still within this body thrall:  
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,  
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.*

Strephon.

*In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell  
Alas I doo; from which to finde release,  
I would the earth, I would the heavens fell.  
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease,  
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.  
O faire, ô onely faire, from thee, alas,  
These foule, most foule, distresses to me fell;  
Since thou from me (ô me) ô Sunne didst passe.  
Therefore esteeming all good blessings toys  
I joy in griefe, and doo detest all joyes.*

Klaius.

*I joye in griefe, and doo detest all joyes.  
And now an ende, (ô Claius) now an ende  
For even the hearbes our mournfull musique stroyes,  
And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.*

Strephon

SO wel did Lamons voice expresse the passiôs of those shepheards, that all the Princely beholders were stricken in a silent cōsideration of them; indeed every one making, that

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

he heard of another the balāce of his own troubles. And *Basilius* perceiving such melancholique musique best consorted to the humor of his mistresse, entreated againe the young melancholy shepheard, that he would emparte some part of the sorow his coūtenaunce so well witnessed unto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an *Eclogue* betwixt himself and the *Echo*: framing his voice in those deserte places, as what words he would have the *Echo* replie, unto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these *Hexameters* in the following order he uttered.

Echo.

**F***Aire rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace.  
Peace? who debars me my tongue? who is it that comes me so  
nie?*

*O I doo know what guest I doo meete: it is Echo.*

*Well mett Echo; aproch, and tell me thy will too.*

*Echo, what doo I get yeelding my sprite to my grieves?*

*What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death?*

*O pois'nous medicine: what worse to me can be then it?*

*In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease?*

*And what maner a minde, which had to that humor a vaine?*

*Hath not reason enough vehemence the desire to reprove?*

*Oft prove I: but what salve, when Reason seeks to be gone?*

*O what is it? what is it, that may be a salve to my love?*

*What doo lovers seeke for, long seeking for t' enjoye?*

*What be the joyes, for which t'enjoye they went to the paines?*

*Then to an earnest love what doth best victorie lende?*

*Ende? but I can never ende: Love will not give me the leave.*

*How be the mindes disposde, that cannot taste the Physicke?*

*Yet say againe th'advice for th'ills that I tolde thee.*

*Doth th'infectd wretch of his ill th'extremitie know?*

*But if he know not his harmes, what guids hath he whilst he be  
blind?*

*What blinde guides can he have that leades to a fancie?*

*Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that steppeth aloft?*

*What causes first made these torments on me to light?*

*Can then a cause be so light, that forceth a man to goe die?*

*Yet tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die?*

*Eie-sight made me to yeeld: but what first pearst to my eyes?*

I.

T'is Echo.

I will too.

Grieves.

Death.

It.

Ease.

Vaine.

Prove.

One.

Love.

Joye.

Paines.

Ende.

Leave.

Sicke.

I tolde thee.

No.

Blinde.

A fancie.

Oft.

Light.

I.

Eye.

Eyes.

<i>Eyes hurters ? eyes hurte ? but what from them to me falls ?</i>	<i>Falls.</i>
<i>But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my harte ?</i>	<i>Arte.</i>
<i>Arte ? what can be that arte, which thou doost meane by thy speach ?</i>	<i>Speach.</i>
<i>What be the fruites of speaking arte, what growes by the wordes ?</i>	<i>Wordes.</i>
<i>O much more then wordes : those wordes serv'd more me to blesse.</i>	<i>Lesse.</i>
<i>O when shall I be knowne, where most to be known I doo long ?</i>	<i>Longe.</i>
<i>Long be thy woes for such bad newes : how reckes she my thoughts ?</i>	<i>Oughts.</i>
<i>Then, then what doo I gayne, since unt' her will I doo winde ?</i>	<i>Winde.</i>
<i>Winde, tempests, and stormes : yet in ende what gives she desire ?</i>	<i>Ire.</i>
<i>Silly rewarde : yet above women hath she a title.</i>	<i>A tittle.</i>
<i>What great name may I give to so heav'nly a woman ?</i>	<i>A two-ma</i>
<i>Woe, but seems to me joye, that agrees to my thought so.</i>	<i>I thought</i>
<i>Thinke so : for of my desired blisse it is onely the course.</i>	<i>Course.</i>
<i>Curst be thy selfe for cursing that, which leades me to joyes.</i>	<i>Toyes.</i>
<i>What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde ?</i>	<i>Harde.</i>
<i>Harde to be gott, but got constant, to be helde very steeles.</i>	<i>Eeles.</i>
<i>How be they helde unkinde ? speake, for th' hast narrowly pry'de.</i>	<i>Pride.</i>
<i>How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence ?</i>	<i>Thence.</i>
<i>Horrible is this blasphemie unto the most holie.</i>	<i>O lye.</i>
<i>Thou list, false Echo ; their mindes, as vertue, be juste.</i>	<i>Juste.</i>
<i>Mockst thou those Diamonds, which onely be matcht by the Godds ?</i>	<i>Odds.</i>
<i>Odds ? what an odds is there, since them to the heav'ns I preferre ?</i>	<i>Erre.</i>
<i>Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made evill ?</i>	<i>A devill</i>
<i>Devill ? in hell where such Devill is, to that hell I doo goe.</i>	<i>Goe.</i>

**A**FTER this well placed *Echo*, the other shepherds were offering themselves to have continued the sports: But the night had so quietly spent most part of her selfe, that the King for that time licensed them: & so bringing *Zelma* to her lodging, who would much rather have done the same for *Philoclea*, of all sides they went to counterfaint a sleep in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afford them. Yet there lay they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which *Basilus* was to continue his *Apollo* devotions, and the other to meditate upon their private desires.

*The end of the second Booke.*

# THE THIRDE BOOKE

## OF THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

### CHAP. I.

*Dorus-his* <sup>1</sup>*faire and* <sup>2</sup>*foule weather in his love.* <sup>3</sup>*His forlorne agonies.* <sup>4</sup>*His doubts to write,* <sup>5</sup>*and Pamelaes to reade,* <sup>6</sup>*his elegie.*

I **T**His last dayes daunger, having made *Pamelaes* love discern, what a losse it should have suffered, if *Dorus* had bene destroyed, bredde such tendernesse of kindnes in her toward him: that she coule no longer keepe Love from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed; so as finding not only by his speeches & letters, but by the pitifull oratiō of a languishing behavior, & the easily discyphered character of a sorrowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruccion, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former iciness of her behaviour, as by entertaining his discourses (whensoever he did use them) in the third person of *Musidorus*; to so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuously loved, she would have requited his faith with faithfull affection: „ finding in her hart, that nothing could so hartily love as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble favour, & chaste plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine upon *Dorus*; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, over-hastily brought to a great fire, rather oppressed, then relieved with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetnesse of joyfulness, that again being a child of Passion, & never acquainted with mediocrity, could not set boūds upon his happines, nor be cōtent to give Desire a kingdome, but that

it must be an unlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he stood upon being over-high in happines, & slipperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe frō falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all cōfort out of his brest, & washt away all cheerfulness of his cheere, with teares. For this favour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (*Mopsa* being called away by her mother, & he left alone with *Pamela*) the sudden occasion called Love, & that never staid to aske Reasons leave; but made the too-much loving *Dorus* take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and, as it were, to establish a trophee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent 2 tast & colour, which suddenly she perceived had poison in it, so did she put him away frō her: loking first unto heaven, as amazed to find herselfe so beguiled in him; then laying the cruel punishment upon him of angry Love, and lowring beautie, shewing disdain, & a despising disdain, Away (said she) unworthy man to love, or to be loved. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being so deceived; judge then what I doo thee, for deceiving me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my judgement, and staine of my conscience. With that she called *Mopsa*, not staying for any answer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which she semed not to mark (much lesse to pity) & chid her for having so left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it was 3 even a death, which then laid hold of *Dorus*: which certainly at that instant would have killed him, but that the feare to tary longer in her presence (contrary to her cōmandement) gave him life to cary himselfe away frō her sight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieving for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding himselfe not onely unhappy, but unhappie after being false from all happinesse: and to be false from all happines, not by any misconceiving, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to *Pamela*: he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedily drawing into his minde, all concepts which might more and more torment him. And so

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

remained he two dayes in the woods, disdainig to give his bodie food, or his mind comfort, loving in himselfe nothing, but the love of her. And indeed that love onely strave with the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed *Dorus*, it should also destroy the image of her that lived in *Dorus*: and when the thought of that was crept in unto him, it begā to win of him some cōpassion to the shrine of the imāge, & to bewaile not for himselfe (whō he hated) but that so notable a love should perish. Thē began he onely so farre to wish his owne good, as that *Pamela* might pardon him the fault, though not the punishment: & the uttermost height he aspired unto, was, that after his death, she might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of love, and not of boldnesse.

4 That conceipt found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yelded, since he was banished her presēce, to seeke some meanes by writing to shew his sorrow, & testifie his repentance. Therfore getting him the necessarie instruments of writing, he thought best to cōūterfaite his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she would cast it away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in vers, hoping, that would draw her on to read the more, chusing the *Elegiac* as fittest for mourning. But pen did never more quakingly performe his office; never was paper more double moistned with inke & teares; never words more slowly married together, & never the *Muses* more tired, then now with changes & rechanges of his devises: fearing howe to ende, before he had resolved how to begin, mistrusting ech word, condemning eche sentence. This word was not significant, that word was too plain: this would not be cōceived; the other would be il conceived. Here Sorow was not inough expressed; there he seemed too much for his owne sake to be sory. This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly moving. At last, marring with mending, and putting out better, then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, & diverse times ready to teare it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the worse it grew, he folded it up, devoutly invoking good acceptation unto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (saving *Mopsa*) to the other lodge, stale up into *Pamelaes* chamber, and in her stādish (which first he kissed; and craved of it a safe and friendly

keeping) left it there, to be seene at her next using her inke (himselfe returning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorrow) leaving her standish upon her beds head, to give her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in another 5 place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw the letter, her hart gave her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthie to be receyved; and yet the paper (she thought) was not guiltie. At last, she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it over, that she might out of his wordes picke some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and threwe it away, and tooke it up againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, conteining this matter.

U Nto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction boldeth, 6  
and now fully beleeves helpe to be quite perished;  
Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monumēt of his anguish,  
O you (alas so I find) cause of his onely ruine.  
Dread not a whit (O goodly cruell) that pittie may enter  
into thy hart by the sight of this Epistle I send:  
And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall,  
least it might th' allure home to thy selfe to returne,  
(Unto thy selfe I do meane those graces dwell so within thee,  
gratefulness, sweetnes, holy love, hartie regard)  
Such thing cannot I seeke (Despaire hath giu'n me my answer  
despaire most tragicall clause to a deadly request)  
Such thing cānot be hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;  
hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.  
Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in most harty flowing teares,  
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse;  
Can those eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a sorrow,  
which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies?

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Ah, that, that I do I not conceive (though that to my blisse were)*  
*more then Nestors yeares, more then a Kings diademe.*  
*Ah, that, that I do not cōceive; to the heavē when a mouse climes*  
*then may I hope t'atchieve grace of a heavenly tiger.*  
*But, but alas, like a man cōdemn'd doth crave to be heard speake*  
*not that he hopes for amends of the desaster he feeles,*  
*But finding th' approch of death with an ougly relenting,*  
*gives an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:*  
*Right so my boiling hart, enflam'de with fire of a faire eye,*  
*bubling out doth breath signes of his bugie dolours:*  
*Now that he finds to what end his life and love be reserved,*  
*and that he hence must part where to live onely he lov'd.*  
*O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairness?*  
*can death beautie become? must be such a monument?*  
*Must I be onely the marke, shall prove that Vertue is angrie?*  
*shall prove that fierceness can with a white dove abide?*  
*Shall to the world appeare that faith and love be rewarded*  
*with mortall disdain, bent to unendly revenge?*  
*Unto revenge? O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be revenged?*  
*shall such high Plannets ende to the losse of a worme?*  
*And to revenge who doo bend, would in that kind be revenged,*  
*as th' offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.*  
*All my' offence was Love: with Love then must I be chastned,*  
*and with more, by the lawes that to Revenge doo belong.*  
*If that love be a fault, more fault in you to be lovely:*  
*Love never had me opprest, but that I saw to be lov'd.*  
*You be the cause that I lov'd: what Reason blameth a shadowe,*  
*that with a body't goes? since by a body it is.*  
*If that Love you did hate, you should your beautie have hidden:*  
*you should those faire eyes have with a veile covered.*  
*But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine frō a dark cave.*  
*what veiles then doo prevaile, but to a more miracle?*  
*Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,*  
*torne you should disperse unto the blasts of a winde.*  
*But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head fōūd,*  
*ev'n as I am, so I should unto that haire be a thrall.*  
*Or with fair hāds-nailes (ô hād which nailes me to this death)*  
*you should have your face (since Love is ill) blemished.*  
*O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?*  
*should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?*



## ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

*First let Cimmerian darknes be my onel' habitacion :*  
*first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished ;*  
*Ere that I should consent to doo such excessive a dammage*  
*unto the earth, by the hurt of this her heavenly jewell.*  
*O no : but such love you say you could have asfoorded,*  
*as might learne Temp'rance voyde of a rages events.*  
*O sweet simplicitie : from whence should Love so be learned ?*  
*unto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found ?*  
*Well : but faultie I was : Reason to my Passion yeilded,*  
*Passion unto my rage, Rage to a hastie revenge.*  
*But what's this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,*  
*such faith, so staineles, inviolate, violent ?*  
*Shall I not ? ô may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,*  
*what sweete joyes I had once, and what a place I did hold ?*  
*Shall I not once object, that you, you graunted a favour*  
*unto the man, whom now such miseries you awarde ?*  
*Bēd your thoghts to the dear sweet words which thē to me giv'n were :*  
*think what a world is now, think who hath altred her hart.*  
*What ? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such evill ?*  
*now fled, then cherished ? then so nie, now so remote ?*  
*Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,*  
*say, that I should well finde in what a care I was had ?*  
*With much more : now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,*  
*Care that I sinke in griefe, Care that I live banished ?*  
*And banished doo I live, nor now will seeke a recov'rie,*  
*since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lawe.*  
*If then a man in most ill case may give you a farewell ;*  
*farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.*

### CHAP. 2.

<sup>1</sup>The young Ladies mette : <sup>2</sup>invited to the countrie-wenches sports,  
<sup>3</sup>goe thether, <sup>4</sup>there are taken, and thence caried to Amphialus castle. <sup>5</sup>Their entertainment there. <sup>6</sup>Cecropias  
 auricular confession of her proud cariage in prosperitie, <sup>7</sup>and  
 ambitious practises in adversitie. <sup>8</sup>Amphialus his affection  
 in these actions.

**W**Hat this would have wrought in her, she her selfe could  
 not tell: for, before her Reason could moderate the  
 disputation betwene Favour & Faultines, her sister, and *Miso*,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

called her downe to entertaine *Zelmane*, who was come to visite the two sisters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while *Gynecia* wearied her bed with her melancholie sicknes, and made *Misos* shrewdnesse (who like a sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde *Zelmane* from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her jealousy: Both she and her husband, driving *Zelmane* to such a streit of resolution, either of impossible graunting, or dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she coulde) to avoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the uprore, (*Basilus* being with his sicke wife, conferring upon such examinations, as *Philanax*, and other of his noble-men had made of this late seditiō, all touching *Cecropia* with vehemēt suspition of giving either flame or fuell unto it) *Zelmane* came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his seate in *Philoclea*: who now with a bashfull cheerefulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she could not choose but be glad) joyned with her sister, in making much of *Zelmane*.

2 And so as they sate devising how to give more feathers to the winges of Time, there came to the lodge dore, sixe maides, all in one liverie of skarlette petticoates, which were tuckt up almoste to their knees, the petticoates them selves beinge in many places garnished with leaves, their legges naked, saving that above the anckles they had little black silke laces, upon which did hang a few silver belles: like which they had a little above their elbowes, upon their bare armes. Upon their haire they ware garlands of roses and gilliflowers; and the haire was so drest, as that came againe above the garlandes; enterchaunging a mutuall covering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire. Their breasts liberall to the eye: the face of the formoste of them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest lovely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would have bene, if they had not suffered greedy *Phæbus*, over-often, and harde, to kisse them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull gravitie; so as the gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seem a wanton modestie, and an entising sobernes. Each of them had an instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with unsensiblenes,

that did not lende it selfe unto them. The Musicke entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleasant a guest was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreete demeanour) in this sort spake unto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies have power to make cities envie these woods, and solitarines to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Love, so comes it from lovely persons. The maides of all this coast of *Arcadia*, understanding the often accesse that certaine shepheards of these quarters, are allowed to have in this forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, have bene stird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtlesnes of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandemēt in cōming to this place unsent for, they chose out us, to invite both your princely parents, & your selves, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they have provided some such sports, as they trust your gracious acceptatiōs will interpret to be deliteful. We have bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affaires, our trust is, that you yet will not denie the shining of your eies upō us.

The Ladies stood in some doubte, whether they should goe<sup>3</sup> or not, lest *Basilius* might be angry withall. But *Miso* (that had bene at none of the pastorals, and had a great desire to lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor will nor choose, but go thether, and make the honest countrie people know, that they were not so squeamish as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authoritie; with a smiling humblenesse obeied her: *Pamela* only casting a seeking looke, whether she could see *Dorus* (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieved for his absence, having given the wound to him through her owne harte. But so the three Ladies & *Miso* went with those six *Nymphes*, conquering the length of the

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

way with the force of musique, leaving only *Mopsa* behind, who disgraced weeping with her countenance, because her mother would not suffer her to shewe her newskoured face among them. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie conversation of their inviters. There founde they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a litle square place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord covered, & beautified with the pleasantest fruites, that Sunburnd *Autumne* could deliver unto thẽ. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and tast of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of *Bacchus*: & of the divers coloured plums, which gave the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorne their provision, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for joy to come to such lips.

4 But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the cõming forth of such devises, as were prepared for them, there rusht out of the woods twentie armed men, who round about environed them, & laying hold of *Zelmane* before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods over the heads of all fower, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke and carried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while *Zelmanes* harte was rent in peeces with rage of the injurie, and disdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or five mile further, they lefte *Miso* with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche wayted for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, uppon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

5 But at the Castle gate their faces were discovered, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the sisters knewe their aunt in lawe, *Cecropia*. But that sight increased the deadly terrour of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked *Cecropia*: who yet came unto them, making curtesie the outside

of mischief, and desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their service. *Philoclea* (with a looke where Love shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good unto them, having never deserved evill of her. But *Pamelas* high harte disdayning humblenesse to injurie, Aunt, (said she) what you have determined of us I pray you doo it speedily: for my part I looke for no service, where I finde violence.

But *Cecropia* (using no more wordes with them) conveyed them all three to severall lodgings (*Zelmanes* harte so swelling with spite, that she coulde not bring foorth a worde) and so lefte them: first taking from them their knives, because they should do themselves no hurte, before she had determined of them: and then giving such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had received of *Zelmane*, & told him, whom now he had in his power. *Amphialus* was but even then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curtesie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by *Zelmane*, so as he was utterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked devises; to which he would never have consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an evill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done<sup>6</sup> for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoever I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how evill soever to others) to you is vertue. To begin then even with the beginning, this doting foole *Basilus* that now raignes, having lived unmarried till he was nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his dooings assuring, that he never would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent upon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as upon the undoubted successour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

any thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heyre of *Arcadia*, obteyned me of my father the King of *Argos*, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelorly intention: for else you may be sure the King of *Argos*, nor his daughter would have suffered their Royall blood to be stained with the base name of subjection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of *Argos* daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into eares, & their eares were captives unto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Majestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their devotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse; one thrusting upon another, who might shewe him selfe most diligent and serviceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings never unsaluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaved a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe unto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it, with a plot we laide, as we should not have needed to have waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of *Basilus*; when the heavē (I thinke envying my great felicity) thē stopt thy fathers breath, whē he breathed nothing but power and soveraigntie. Yet did not thy orphancie, or my widdowhood, deprive us of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies unto us.

- 7 But before, (my sonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the sweetnesse of authoritie, this beast (whom I can never name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this *Gynecia*, then a young girle, and brought her to sit above me in al feasts, to turne her shoulder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, „ it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by straungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from the first

to the second, then from the second to the undermost. The rage did swell in my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in silēce, & disguised with humblenes. But above al the rest, the grieſe of grieues was, whē with these daughters (now thy prisoners) she cut of al hope of thy successiō. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) anothers voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable unto me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend al thy time in such misery, & that the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had ben a sainct I could not choose, finding the chaūge this chaūge of fortune bred unto me, for now frō the multitude of followers, silēce grew to be at my gate, & absēce in my presence. The guesse of my mind could prevaile more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remēbring that in all miseries,, weeping becomes fooles, and practize wise folks) have tried,, divers meanes to pull us out of the mire of subjectiō. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I never faile my self. Wild beasts I kept in a cave hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of their pastorals, I as then living in my house hard by the place, and against the houre they were to meete (having kept the beasts without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would seeke their food there, and devoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating sharpe-sighted inventions, made them unluckily to be killed. After, I used my servant *Clinias* to stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding *Philanax*-his examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a sleight I used of my fine-witted wēch *Artesia*, with other maids of mine, would have sent these good inheritrixes of *Arcadia*, to have pleaded their cause before *Pluto*, but that over-fortunatly for thē, you made me know the last day how vehemently this childish passion of love doth torment you. Therefore I have brought them unto you, yet wishing rather hate thē love in you. For Hate often begetteth victory; Love” commonly is the instrument of subjection. It is true, that I

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

would also by the same practise have entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these being taken away) you are the undoubted inheritor, and *Basilus* will not long over-live this losse.

8 O mother (said *Amphialus*) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my hart, or if I have any thing more deare then eyes, or hart unto me. Let others finde what sweetnesse they will in ever fearing, because they are ever feared: for my part, I will thinke my selfe highly intitled, if I may be once by *Philoclea* accepted for a servant. Well (said *Cecropia*) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body: then should you not have suncke under base weakenesses. But since you have tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie I have brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enjoy affection, and uppon that build your soveraigntie. Alas (said *Amphialus*) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if *Philoclea* be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it unkindnes, shal I give tokens of kindnes? perchance she cōdemnes me of this action, and shall I triumph? perchance she drownes now the beauties I love with sorrowful teares, and where is then my rejoicing? You have reason (said *Cecropia* with a feined gravitie) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recovered. No good mother (said *Amphialus*) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence, but rather would I die then cōsent to absence. Pretty intricat follies (said *Cecropia*) but get you up, & see how you can prevaile with her, while I go to the other sister. For after we shal have our hands full to defend our selves, if *Basilus* hap to besiege us. But remembring herself, she turned back, & asked him what he would have done with *Zelmane*, since now he might be revenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, answered *Amphialus*, having deserved no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherished of *Philoclea*. And therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no „ (said *Cecropia*) company confirms resolutiōs, & lonelines breeds „ a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable profers.



## CHAP. 3.

<sup>1</sup> *Amphialus addressing him to Philoclea.* <sup>2</sup> *Her melancholie habit.*  
<sup>3</sup> *His humble sute.* <sup>4</sup> *Her pitifull answeare:* <sup>5</sup> *and his com-*  
<sup>6</sup> *passionate replie.* <sup>7</sup> *Their parting with cold comfort.*

**B**Ut *Amphialus* (taking of his mother *Philocleas* knives, which <sup>1</sup> he kept as a relique, since she had worne them) gat up, and calling for his richest apparell, nothing seemed sumptuous inough for his mistresses eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not daintie: and though the invention were delicat, he misdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour; lest if gay, he might seeme to glorie in his injury, and her wrong; if mourning, it might strike some evill presage unto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black velvet, richly embrodered with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffes of cypres, that the cypres was like blacke clowds, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterchangeably answering; the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie glistring, which he thought pictured the two passions of Feare and Desire, wherein he was enchayned. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he strave to give the best grace he could unto his halting.

And in that sort he went to *Philocleas* chamber: whome he <sup>2</sup> found (because her chamber was over-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did cast such a shadow upon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe uppon *Venus*, when under the trees she bewayled the murder of *Adonis*: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and over her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almost halfe her eyes, which under it fixed their beames upon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mende their object: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

she perceyving him, till that (a little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he happed to stirre his upper garment: and perceyving him, rose up, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, and Anger was never there.

3 But *Amphialus* that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches, found it so locked up in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching her to take what was don in good part, and to assure herselfe there was nothing but honour meant unto her person. But she making no other aunswere, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before were joyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gave him to understande, that considering his dooings, she thought his speech as full of incongruitie, as her aunswere would be voyde of purpose: whereuppon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hande, (which she suffered with a countenance witnessing captivitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to have pitie of him, whose love went beyonde the boundes of conceite, much more of uttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did stande; whereto the least motion of hers woulde serve to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he her eternall slave; and with true vehemencie besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

4 Alas cousin, (saide she) what shall my tongue be able to doo, which is infourmed by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and use crueltie; you say, you love me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you have brought me to so neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death upon me: so that while you say I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slave, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, injurie, terror, and depriving of that which is more dear then life it selfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily perswaded. But if the nearenesse of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or there be any such thing in you, which you call love towarde

me, then let not my fortune be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste it selfe by being vexed with feeling evill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause of my parents wofull destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I shall account I have receyved my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my friend *Zelmane*: for I desire no wel being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heavenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet and beautifull flowers of her face.

But *Amphialus* was like the poore woman, who loving a tame Doe she had, above all earthly things, having long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreeme povertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Manie a pitifull looke doth she cast upon it, and many a time doth she draw backe her hand before she can give the stroke. For even so *Amphialus* by a hunger-starved affection, was compelled to offer this injurie, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke unkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor denie, he thus answered her. Deare ladie (said he) I will not say unto you (how justly soever I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accessarie unto this your withholding. For since I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I protest unto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heavens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had never seene the light, or rather, that I had never had a father to beget such a child, thẽ that by my meanes those eyes should overflow their owne beauties, then by my meanes the skie of your vertue should be overcrowded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares receive the least word you speak, with any lesse reverence, then as absolute, and unresistable commaundements. But alas, that Tyrant Love, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Love, it is Love, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am redie to lie under your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome, but Love, Love, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect upon themselves this injurie. Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loves vehemencie; which (since it grewe in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes *Philoclea* fell to so extreame a quaking, and her lively whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a palenesse, that *Amphialus* feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of *Cupid*) had all the sense of it wrapt up in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure herselfe upon the vowe he made thereof unto God, and her selfe, that the uttermost forces he would ever employ to conquere her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought *Philoclea* againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting up her eyes upon him, with a countenance ever courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should doo well to do so, if indeede he had ever tasted what true love was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her knives, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easilie flie into it, if ever she founde her honor endaungered.

6 *Amphialus* having the colde ashes of Care cast upon the coales of Desire, leaving some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite upon *Philoclea*, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footestoolle to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement uttered, he delivered what had passed betwene him and *Philoclea*: beseeching her to trie what her perswasions could doo with her, while he gave order for all such things as were necessarie against such forces, as he looked dayly *Basilus* would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiette him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

# ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

## CHAP. 4.

<sup>1</sup> *Amphialus warlike preparations.* <sup>2</sup> *His justification.* <sup>3</sup> *His fortifications.* <sup>4</sup> *His Arte of men.* <sup>5</sup> *His Love-passions, and passionate complaints.*

SO they calling *Clinias*, and some other of their counsell, <sup>1</sup> advised upon their present affaires. First, he dispatched privat letters to al those principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, whō he thought ether alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youth-like mindes did fill with unlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an over-spende wante, made want a civill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, revenge; to the greedie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed given over unto them as partakers: then promises sprong of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of *Argos*: but he was as then so over-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the <sup>2</sup> sailes of popular judgemēts, & how few there be, that can discerne betweene trueth and truthlikenes, betweene shoves and substance; he caused a justification of this his action to be written, wherof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulness of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other duties, since in it selfe it containes them all, and that for the respect therof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshippes, are to be laide aside, but that even long-helde opinions (rather builded upon a secrete of government, then any groūd of trueth) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereto any thing is directed, is ever to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed:

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordeined. The feeling consideration whereof, had moved him (though as nere of kinne to *Basilus* as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, over whom *Basilus* raigned: rather then so to hoodwinke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as frō the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especially himselfe, who being descended of the Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no soner opened his eyes, but that the soyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as frō his childhood he had ever caried; so now finding that his uncle had not only givē over al care of government, but had put it into the hands of *Philanax*, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest thē himselfe) in so unfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only dāgerous for their persons, but (if they should be conveyed to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therfore he had brought them into this strōg castle of his, which way, if it might seem strange, they were to consider, „ that new necessities require new remedies: but there they should be served & honored as belonged to their greatnes, until by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both private, and publique) advantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, never by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be assēbled, he were assailed, he would thē for his own defence take armes: desiring all, that either tendred the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loved justice, to defēd him in this just actiō. And if the Prince should commaund them otherwise, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was done, was done for his service, howsoever he might (seduced by *Philanax*) interprete of it: he protesting, that what soever he should doo

for his owne defence, should be against *Philanax*, & no way against *Basilius*.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and examples, and 3 painted with rhetoricall colours, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they prevayled with some of more quicke then sounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolenesse, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he used to weaken the adverse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthning of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at lest would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therfore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striving to make Art strive with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gave the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to undermining force, so to opẽ assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approaches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to give unquiet lodgings to thẽ, whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instrumẽts of mischief to places, whence the mischief might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for victuals, as wel for the providing that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preserving it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; spending that first which would keepe lest.

But wherein he sharpened his wits to the pearcingest point, 4 was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Arte of man stood the quintessence, & ruling skill of all prosperous government, either peaceable, or military) he chose in number as many as without pestring (and so daunger of infection) his victuall would seem for two yeare to maintaine; all of hable bodies, and some few of able mindes to direct, not seeking many commaunders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should have obeying wills, every one knowing whom he should commaund, and

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; distributing each office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no love, daunger, nor discipline can sodainly alter an habite in nature. Therfore would he not employ the stil mā to a shifting practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know thē all particularly, & throughly, regarding also the cōstitutiō of their bodies; some being able better to abide watching, some hūger, some labour, making his benefit of ech hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to every thing by just proportiō he allotted, & as well in that, as in every thing els, no small errour winckt at, lest greater should be animated. Even of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly *Clinias* to have care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty persuasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to stumble at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne invention. But even then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terroure) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: him selfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in travaile, nor spēding in diet, then the meanest souldier: his hand and body disdaining no base matters, nor shrinking from the heavy.

- 5 The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Love passing thorow the pikes of Daūger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the marvaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his own thoughts.



Sometimes when his hand was lifted up to some thing, as if with the sight of *Gorgons* head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the use of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceived him; then would he accuse, and in himselfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Love. O, would he say, al you that affect the title of wisdome, by ungratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a shaddow? or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubt behinde me? is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doo I not stande upon paine, and travaile, and yet over all, my affection triumphes? The more I stirre about urgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my love: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encrease the appetite of my desires. O sweet *Philoclea* (with that he would cast up his eies wherin some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselves against they should see her) thy heavenly face is my Astronomie; thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: let me profite therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgives me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect unto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doo they threaten this destruction? even him that loves them; and by what means will they destroy, but by loving them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darte with the golde of *Cupids* arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloved (though hating) *Philoclea*, how if thou beest mercifull, hath crueltie stolne into thee? Or how if thou beest cruell, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then ever Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an evill vessell which turnes sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace fals upon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-stricken, when her presence gave him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were unperplexed) to use for his sake the most prevailing manners of intercession.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 5.

<sup>1</sup> *Suttle Cecropia visites sad Philoclea.* <sup>2</sup> *The shamelesse Aunts shrewd temptations to love and mariage. The modest neeces maidenly resistance.*

<sup>1</sup> **C***ecropia* seing her sonnes safetie depende thereon, (though her pride much disdained the name of a desire) tooke the charge upon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an unexpert virgin, who had already with subtiltie and impudencie begun to undermine a monarchy. Therefore, waighing *Philocleas* resolutions by the counterpease of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make *Philoclea* receive the poyson distilled in sweete liquour, which she with little disguising had drunke up thirstily. Therefore she went softly to *Philocleas* chamber, & peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe *Philoclea* sitting lowe upon a cushion, in such a given-over manner, that one would have thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholie were come there, under the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, and drive him from his naturall seate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunshine, and she not taking heede to wipe the teares, they ranne downe upon her cheekes, and lips, as upon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but even left to a neglected chaunce, which yet coulde no more unperfect her perfections, then a Die anie way cast, could loose his squarenesse.

<sup>2</sup> *Cecropia* (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayles this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of *Arcadia* wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peevish sadnesse; in sooth it is untimely for your age. Looke upon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserve to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will have these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked upon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from

their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them ; & their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make everie bodie woonder at the chaunge, and say, that sure you had used some arte before, which nowe you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde never so soone have beene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your eies: although, I must cōfesse, those eies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame (answered *Philoclea*) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine eies thus betears, become my fortune. Your fortune (saide *Cecropia*) if she could see to attire herselfe, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) unkindnes: you misconster every thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistres: you feare hate, and shall find love. And truly, I had a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinately melancholy, as that you woo his felowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staid indeede, thinking *Philoclea* would have had a female inquisitivenesse of the matter. But she, who rather wished to unknowe what she knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to have pity of her, and if indeed she did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very griefe & feare, would prove her unappointed executioners. For that (saide *Cecropia*) beleve me upō the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal dāger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to prevent such mischiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to have care of you, even as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares unto me, & let not your mind arme it self with a wilfulnesse to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason have his due reward, persuasion. Then sweet neece (saide she) I pray you presuppose, that now, evē in the midst of your agonies, which you paint unto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vowes, for a soone & safe deliverie. Imagin neece (I say) that some heavenly spirit should appeare unto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the garden, assuring you, that

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soever your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to folow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enjoy your over-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neece:) but I wil answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such nicenesse can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulnesse can have any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieving in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent foorth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your private choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring forth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no smal kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neernesse of his kinred, with the neernesse of good-will, and striving to match your matchlesse-béautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me present unto you the full enjoying of your liberty, so as with this gift you wil accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the matter; but who will crie out the Sun shines? It is so manifest a profit unto you, as the meanest judgement must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpenesse of yours, therof to be ignorant. Therefore (sweet neece) let your gratefulnes be my intercession, & your gentleness my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart which greatly needs it. *Philoclea* looked upon her, & cast downe her

eie again. Aunt (said she) I would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeelde to my cousins vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already set (and staying a while on that word, she brought foorth afterwards) to lead a virgins life to my death: for such a vow I have in my selfe devoutly made. The heavens prevent such a mischiefe (said *Cecropia*.) A vowe, quoth you? no, no, my deere neece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a womā, & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gave you beautie to move love; she gave you wit to know love; she gave you an excellēt body to reward love: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with unspeakable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiver, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not impoverish, but enrich the giver. O the sweet name of a mother: O the cōfort of cōforts, to see your childrē grow up, in whō you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceive what a hart-tickling joy it is to see your own litle ones, with awfull love come running to your lap, and like litle models of your selfe, still cary you about them, you would thinke unkindnes in your own thoughts, that ever they did rebell against the mean unto it. But perchāce I set this blessednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their souldiers, to which they might come through many paines, grieves & dangers. No, I am cōtent you shrink from this my counsel, if the way to come unto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not (answered the sweet *Philoclea*, fearing least silence would offend her sullennes) what contentment you speake of: but I am sure the best you can make of it, (which is mariage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deer neece (said *Cecropia*) how much you are deceived? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid upō us in our creation, which by mariage is not increased, but thus farre eased, that you have a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-side of my bed, which was wōt to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares acknowledge, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the banished mā hath; who may, if he list, wāder over the world, but is ever restrained frō his most delightful home? that I have now such a liberty as the seeled dov hath,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

which being first deprived of eies, is then by the falconer cast off? For beleve me, neece, beleve me, mans experiēce is womā's best eie-sight. Have you ever seene a pure Rosewater kept in a christal glas; how fine it lokes, how sweet it smels, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imbrace dust, and loose all his former sweetnesse, and fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we have not the stay, rather then the restraint of Crystalline mariage. My hart meltes to thinke of the sweete comfortes, I in that happie time received, when I had never cause to care, but the care was doubled: whē I never rejoiced, but that I saw my joy shine in anothers eies. What shall I say of the free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or feare of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a consort: thē can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall consideration of mariage dooth not so much mislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my sōne, I must confesse, I see him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceive me, he is no such one, over whom Contempt may make any just chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it selfe should carie all comelinesse, nobilitie, and riches, he loves you; and he loves you, who is beloved of others. Drive not away his affection (sweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull and notable a servant. *Philoclea* heard some pieces of her speches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler cōbers the hearing of a delightful musicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captivitie, and convēied themselves to behold (with such eies as imagination could lend thē) the estate of her *Zel-mane*: for whō how wel she thought many of those sayings might have ben used with a farre more gratefull acceptation. Therefore listing not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolute, and desired not to enforme the other, she onely told her, that whilst she was so captived, she could not conceive of any such persuasions (though never so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs evē in nature abhor thē, which at her libertie, in their owne force of reason, might more prevaile with her: and so faine would have

returned the strength of *Cecropias* perswasions, to have procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *Fresh motives to Philoclea.* <sup>2</sup> *Cecropias new fetch to attempt Pamela.* <sup>3</sup> *Pamelas prayer,* <sup>4</sup> *and Sainēt-like graces in it.*  
<sup>5</sup> *Her Auntes fruiteles argumentes.*

**B**UT neither her wittie wordes in anemie, nor those wordes, made more then eloquent with passing through such lips, could prevaile in *Cecropia*, no more then her perswasions coulde winne *Philoclea* to disavowe her former vowe, or to leave the prisoner *Zelmana*, for the commaunding *Amphialus*. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunters, they brake of conference. *Cecropia* sucking up more and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a visarde of kindnes, leaving no office unperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Musickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorow, and thinke of it with sweetnes; with ditties so sensiblie expressing *Amphialus* case, that everie worde seemed to be but a diversifying of the name of *Amphialus*. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, sent unto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striven with the sumptuousnes of the matter, as much did the invention in the application, contende to have the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, & her perfections; where the richnes did invite the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the device did teach the eyes the present miserie of the presenter himselve, awefully serviceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she lived, all meanes used to make knownen, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in love-knots. But in harte alreadie understanding no language but one, the Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes to be in his power: the dittie intended for *Amphialus*,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

she translated to *Zelma*: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thrall'd obligation: and his service, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as she thought) unto her, her unworthie estate: that even he that did her service, had authoritie of commanding her, onely construing her servitude in his own nature, esteeming it a right, and a right bitter servitude: so that all their shots (how well soever levelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her mislike, the Prince *Amphialus* affectionately languished, & *Cecropia* spitefullie cunning, disdained at the barrennes of their successe.

2 Which willingly *Cecropia* woulde have revenged, but that she sawe, her hurte could not be divided from her sonnes mischief: wherefore, she bethought her self to attempt *Pamela*, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be wooon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdainning beautie. Wherefore, giving new courage to her wicked inventions, and using the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking even precepts of prevailing in *Pamela*, by her fayling in *Philoclea*, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own ungratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circūstance of her present behaviour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

3 And so she might perceave that *Pamela* did walke up and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthning her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soever they wrōg me, they cannot over-master God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Jayle barres him out. To whome then else should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, euẽ in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke upon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient. Let not injurie, ô Lord, triumphe over me,



and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine unjusteemie the minister of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdom, this be the aptest chastizement for my inexcusable follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my overhie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld unto thy will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer. Onely thus much let me crave of thee, (let my craving, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since even that proceedes from thee) let me crave, even by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may give my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Majestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently upon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the overthrowe of my vertue: let their power prevaile, but prevaile not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praie: let my paine be the sweetnes of their revenge: let them (if so it seem good unto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let never their wickednes have such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lord (said she) what ever become of me, preserve the vertuous *Musidorus*.

The other parte *Cecropia* might well heare, but this latter 4 prayer for *Musidorus*, her hart helde it, as so jewel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heaven, from so heavenly a creature, with such a fervent grace, as if Devotion had borrowed her bodie, to make of it self a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would have thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place amög their fellow stars; her naked hands raising up their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of *Zeale*, and the left, of *Humblenesse*, which both united themselves to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inward motions, altogether had so straunge a working power, that even the harde-harted wickednesse of *Cecropia*, if it founde not a love of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

was put frō the biasse of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at lest, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

5 Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leaving no argument unproved, which might with any force invade her excellent judgement: the justnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely have amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her believe, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might have his love which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept *Philoclea* in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, she being in his powre: yet plentifully perjuring, how extreemely her sonne loved her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respect he bare unto her, & taking upō her selfe that she restrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to *Philoclea*, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into servitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at the lest awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if *Philoclea* with sweete and humble dealing did avoid their assaults, she with the Majestie of Vertue did beate them of.

## CHAP. 7.

<sup>1</sup> *An Allarme to the Amphialians.* <sup>2</sup> *Base cowardise in Clinias;*  
<sup>3</sup> *brave courage imaged in Amphialus.* <sup>4</sup> *His onset with the*  
*death of two friendes his foes.* <sup>5</sup> *The horroure of Mars-his*  
*game.* <sup>6</sup> *Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the*  
*third delayed where it was expected.*

1 **B**Ut this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche upon the top of the keepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent

up, as if it would strive to have cloudes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did appaile it self) was caried aside frō them, the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith the cloudes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne guilding with his beames, it gave a sight delightfull to any, but to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gave a quick Alarum to the souldiers within, whome practise already having prepared, began each, with unabashed hartes, or at lest countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted unto them.

Onely *Clinias* and *Amphialus* did exceed the bounds of 2 mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For *Clinias* (who was bold onely in busie whisperings, and even in that whisperingnes rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it should not be bewraied, then any way bolde, if ever it should be bewrayed) now that the enemy gave a dreadful aspect unto the castle, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden of feare) did sometimes feine unto it selfe possibility of let; as the death of *Basilius*, the discord of the nobility, & (when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce served as a cause unto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his unassailed senses, would make himselfe beleve, that he durst do something. But now, that present daunger did display it selfe unto his eye, & that a daungerous dooing must be the onely meane to prevēt the dāger of suffering, one that had marked him would have judged, that his eies would have run into him, & his soule out of him; so unkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdouted ech mans treason, and conjectured every possibilitie of misfortune, not onely fore-casting likely perils; but such as all the planets together could scarce have conspired: & already began to arme him selfe, though it was determined he should tarrie within doores; and while he armed himselfe, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himselfe if the enimies wonne

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the castle. Desirous he was that every body should do valiantly, but himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would have hid his feare; lest it should discōfort others: but the more he sought to disguise it, the more the unsutableness of a weake brokē voice to high brave wordes, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discover him.

3 But quite contrarily *Amphiatus*, who before the enimies came was carefull, providently diligent, and not somtimes without doubting of the issue; now the nearer danger approached (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both upō the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boates he had of purpose, and carying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had upō the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enemy would attempt; because it was a passage, which cōmanding all that side of that country, & being lost would stop victuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle: & in that fortresse having some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & five hūdred footmen, embushed his footmē in the falling of a hill, which was overshadowed with a wood, he with his horsmē went a quarter of a mile further; aside hād of which he might perceave the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where best to encampe themselves.

4 But as if the sight of the enimie had bene a Magnes stone to his courage he could not cōtaine himself, but shewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his souldiers, used that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully following an example of such authoritie, they made the earth to grone under their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with thē, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngest brother to *Philanax*, whose face as yet did not bewray his sex, with so much as shew of haire; of a minde having no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of jollitie in conversation, and lately growne a Lover. His name was *Agenor*, of all that armie the most beautifull: who having ridden in sportfull conversatiō among the foremost, all

armed saving that his beaver was up, to have his breath in more freedome, seing *Amphialus* come a pretty way before his cōpany, neither staying the cōmaundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, set spurs to his horse, & with youthfull bravery casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But *Amphialus* launce was already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of death against the head of this young Gentleman, when *Amphialus* perceyving his youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that faire nakednesse, and let his staffe fall to *Agenors* vamplat: so as both with brave breaking should hurtleslie have perfourmed that match, but that the pittillesse launce of *Amphialus* (angry with being broken) with an unlucky counterbuffe full of unsparing splinters, lighted upon that face farre fitter for the combats of *Venus*; geving not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leaving scarcely any tokens of his former beautie: but his hāds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the saddle, he fell sidewarde from the horse. Which sight comming to *Leontius*, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried unto him to stay, when he saw him beginne his careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or revenge of the other, helde as then the soveraigntie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and his hande to his enemie, so wrongly-consorted a power could not resist the ready minded force of *Amphialus*: who perceyving his il-directed direction against him, so paid him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finish both their loves and lives together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either 5 side: where after the terrible salutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of handes was with sharpe weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did staine themselves in bloud; some flew up in pieces, as if they would threaten heaven, because they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the sworde, or by some heavy mase, or biting axe; which hunting still the weakest chase, sought ever to light

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

there, where smallest resistāce might worse prevent mischief. The clashing of armour, and crushing of staves; the justling of bodies, the resounding of blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke, which was beautified with the griselinesse of wounds, the rising of dust, the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The verie horses angrie in their maisters anger, with love and obedience brought foorth the effects of hate and resistance, and with minds of servitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade under their dead maisters, whome unknighly wounds had unjustly punished for a faithfull dutie. Some lay uppon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, whō in life they had borne. Some having lost their commaunding burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madnesse of mankinde. The earth it selfe (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whome Death had come masked in diverse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their naturall seignories: in an other, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all over so close, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily displayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers yet mooved, as if they would feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being discharged of their burthen, were growne heavier. But no sworde payed so large a tribute of soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of *Amphialus*, who like a Tigre, from whome a companie of Woolves did seeke to ravish a newe gotten pray; so he (remembring they came to take away *Philoclea*) did labour to make valure, strength, hatred, and choller to answeere the proportion of his love, which was infinit.

- 6 There died of his handes the olde knight *Æschylus*, who though by yeares might well have beene allowed to use rather the exercise of wisdom, then of courage; yet having a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, he ever tooke the summons of Time in jest, or else it had so creepingly stollen upon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forward in enterprises, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie

had beene tolde him, that he shoulde die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the lesse the arme of an enemy. But nowe, when *Amphialus* sworde was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede, seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him up in his armes, till a pitillesse souldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and sonne become twinnes in their never againe dying birth. As for *Drialus*, *Memnon*, *Nisus* and *Policrates*; the first had his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the seconde had met with the same Prophet that olde *Æschylus* had, and having founde manie of his speeches true, beleevved this to, that he should never be killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemy, no man more suspicious of his friends: so as he seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to sleepe, such guards he would set about his person; yet mistrusting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But nowe *Amphialus* helped to unriddle his doubts; for he overthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supplie, pressed him to death. *Nisus* grasping with *Amphialus*, was with a short dagger slaine. And for *Policrates*, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of punishment, *Amphialus* with a memorable blowe strake of his head, where, with the convulsions of death setting his spurres to his horse, he gave so brave a charge upon the enemy, as it grewe a proverbe, that *Policrates* was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his handes as *Phebilus* did: for he having long loved *Philoclea*, though for the meannesse of his estate he never durst reveale it, nowe knowing *Amphialus*, setting the edge of a rivall upon the sworde of an enemy, he helde strong fight with him. But *Amphialus* had alreadie in the daungerousest places disarmed him, and was lifting up his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O *Philoclea* (said he) yet this joyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of *Philoclea* first staied his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for *Philoclea*, but turned his sword another way, doing him no

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

hurt for over-much hatred. But what good did that to poore *Phebilus*, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base souldiour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through?

## CHAP. 8.

*The Basilians reembattelled <sup>1</sup> first by Philanax, <sup>4</sup> then by the blacke Knight. <sup>2</sup> Ismenus slaine by Philanax. <sup>3</sup> Philanax captived by Amphialus. <sup>4</sup> The blacke Knights exploits. <sup>5</sup> His encounter with Amphialus, parted by a by-blow. <sup>6</sup> The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blacke Knight.*

**T**HUS with the well-followed valure of *Amphialus* were the other almost overthrowne, when *Philanax* (who was the marshal of the army) came in, with newe force renewing the almost decayed courage of his souldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backs or their armes were better fighters) he himselfe thrust into the presse, and making force and furie waite uppon discretion and gouvernement, he might seeme a brave Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to joine courage with cunning. Thē Fortune (as if she had made chases inow of the one side of that bloody Tennis-court) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of *Amphialus* followers, as before had done of *Philanax*; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leaving them to keepe it, who had lost themselves in keeping it. Then those that had killed, inherited the lot of those that had bene killed; and cruel Death made thē lie quietly together, who most in their lives had sought to disquiet ech other; and many of those first overthrowne, had the comfort to see the murtherers overrun them to *Charons ferrie*.

**2** *Codrus, Ctesiphon, and Milo*, lost their lives upon *Philanax*-his sword: but no bodies case was more pitied, then of a yong esquire of *Amphialus*, called *Ismenus*, who never abandoning his maister, and making his tender age aspire to actes of the strongest manhoode, in this time that his side was put to the worst, and that *Amphialus*-his valure was the onely stay of them from delivering themselves over to a shamefull flight, he



sawe his masters horse killed under him. Whereupon, asking no advise of no thought, but of faithfulness and courage, he presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the helpe of some choise and faithfull servants, gat his master up. But in the multitude that came of either side, some to succour, some to save *Amphialus*, he came under the hande of *Philanax*: and the youth perceyving he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (desirous evē to change his life for glorie) strake at him, as he rode by him, and gave him a hurt upon the leg, that made *Philanax* turn towards him; but seing him so yōg, & of a most lovely presence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him prisoner, & thē to give him to his brother *Agenor* to be his companion, because they were not much unlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down upon him with that thought, he spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend *Leontius* by him, evē almost under the squiers feet. Thē soroing not only his owne sorow, but the past-cōfort sorow, which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, & misgiving sighs had suffred him to go with his elder brother *Philanax*) blotted out all figures of pitie out of his minde, and putting foorth his horse (while *Ismenus* doubled two or three more valiant, then well set blowes) saying to himselfe, Let other mothers bewaile an untimely death as well as mine; he thrust him through. And the boy fearce though beautiful; & beautiful, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could resisting Death, which might seeme unwilling to; so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

*Philanax* himselfe could have wished the blow ungiven,<sup>3</sup> when he saw him fall like a faire apple, which some uncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) should throwe downe before it were ripe. But the case of his brother made him forget both that, and himselfe: so as overhastily pressing uppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne souldiers could relieve him; were being overthrowne by *Amphialus*, *Amphialus* glad of him, kept head against his enemies while some of his men caried away *Philanax*.

But *Philanax*-his men as if with the losse of *Philanax* they<sup>4</sup> had lost the fountaine of their valure, had their courages so

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

dried up in feare; that they began to set honour at their backes, and to use the vertue of pacience in an untimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horse, more afraied of the spurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes coulede make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; so far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authoritie, that though they of whose side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the *Amphialians* bloud serve for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gave blowes, then the blowes gave wounds, then the wounds gave deathes: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his judgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne judgement went still before it. There died of his hand, *Sarpedon*, *Plistonax*, *Strophilus*, and *Hippolitus*, men of great prooffe in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard of *Amphialus*. But while they sought to save him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. Thẽ slew he *Megalus*, who was a little before proude, to see himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that „ Crueltie dooth never enjoy a good cheape glorie. After him sent he *Palemon*, who had that daye vowed (with foolish braverie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make up the tenth himselfe.

5 And now the often-changing Fortune began also to chaunge the hewe of the battailes. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so bravelie with rich furniture, guilte swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce leasure to be afraide: But now all universally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and sette foorth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadfull to *Amphialus*-his undismayable courage, nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected minde, did still paint it over with

the beautie of *Philoclea*. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie subject to exercise his courage, sought out this newe Knight, whom he might easilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neighbours houses, to make himselfe the better prospecte, so had his sworde made him so spacious a roome, that *Amphialus* had more cause to wonder at the finding, then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in him, to see how much harme he did to the one side, it provoked as much æmulation in him, to perceave how much good he did to the other side. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Love naturally stirres a desire of joyning, so in their two courages Hate stirred a desire of triall. Then began there a combatte betweene them, worthy to have had more large listes, and more quiet beholders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the bitte of Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well see, the desire to overcome, made them not forget how to overcome: in such time & proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of *Ceres* servaunts coulde more cunningly place his flaile: while the lefte foote spurre set forward his owne horse, the right sette backward the contrarie horse, even sometimes by the advauntage of the enemies legge, while the lefte hande (like him that helde the sterne) guyded the horses obedient courage: All done in such order, that it might seeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who sent wise and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well governed partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarted, the lesse they felte the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke prooffe, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde seeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Governour of *Amphialus*, alwayes a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giving a sore wounde to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe slewe his horse under him. *Amphialus* cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stande now like a private souldier, setting your credite upon particular fighting, while you may see *Basilus* with all his hoste, is getting betweene you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the 6  
 enemy was beginning to encompassse him about, and stoppe his

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

returne: and therefore causing the retrace to be sounded, his Governour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte him selfe still hindmoste, as if hee had stode at the gate of a sluse, to lette the streame goe, with such proportion, as shoulde seeme good unto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the sworde coulde bite of *Philocleas* Lover. The other partie being sorie for the losse of *Philanax*, was yet sorrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he having gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding himselfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be knowen, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde revenge. But *Basilus* having attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne of *Amphialus*, encamped himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare the joy was made in the towne by his owne subjectes, that he had that day sped no better. For *Amphialus* (being well beloved of that people) when they sawe him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a flourishing shew upon his worthinesse, and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

### CHAP. 9.

<sup>1</sup>*The Love-divining dreame of Amphialus song to Philoclea.*

<sup>2</sup>*Philanax his captivitie, and deaths-dooe,* <sup>3</sup>*for Philocleas sake turnde to life and libertie.* <sup>4</sup>*His loyall answere of his Lords intents.* <sup>5</sup>*Cecropias artes to perswade the sisters.*

**B**UT the first thing *Amphialus* did, being returned, was to visite *Philoclea*, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song unto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in love with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes unto it. The song was this.

**N**OW was our heav'nly vaulte deprived of the light  
 With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night  
 Did light those beamye stars which greater light did darke:  
 Now each thing that enjoy'd that firie quickning sparke

*(Which life is cold) were mov'd their spirits to repose,  
 And wanting use of eyes their eyes began to close:  
 A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste  
 (A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)  
 And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath  
 A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:  
 When I, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did give  
 My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet live,  
 Whose braines broile not in woes, nor breasts with beatings ake,  
 With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.  
 Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aspire,  
 Who under courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.  
 Free all my powers were from those captiving snares,  
 Which heav'nly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.  
 Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,  
 As tender conscience might with furious panges assaulte.  
 But like the feeble flower (whose stalke cannot sustaine  
 His weighty top) his top doth downeward drooping leane:  
 Or as the silly birde in well acquainted nest  
 Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to rest:  
 So I in simple course, and unentangled minde  
 Did suffer drousie lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;  
 And laying downe my head, did natures rule observe,  
 Which senses up doth shut the senses to preserve.  
 They first their use forgot, then fancies lost their force;  
 Till deadly sleepe at length possest my living coarse.  
 A living coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde  
 (Which made of heav'nly stuffe no mortal chaüge doth blind)  
 Flew up with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;  
 And having plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.  
 Me thought, nay sure I was, I was in fairest wood  
 Of Samothea lande; a lande, which whilom stood  
 An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,  
 And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.  
 But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fedd  
 On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull senses ledd.  
 Her giftes my study was, her beauties were my sporte:  
 My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my resorte.  
 Those lampes of heav'nly fire to fixed motion bound,  
 The ever-turning spheares, the never-moving ground;*

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*What essence dest'nie hath; if fortune be or no;  
 Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth doo flowe:  
 What life it is, and how that all these lives doo gather,  
 With outward makers force, or like an inward father.  
 Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straind my single mind  
 Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.  
 When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes  
 When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)  
 (Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,  
 Or canons thunder-like, all shot together, lende)  
 The Moone a sunder rent; whereout with sodaine fall  
 (More swift then falcons stoope to feeding Falconers call)  
 There came a chariot faire by doves and sparrowes guided:  
 Whose stormelike course staid not till hard by me it bided.  
 I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome  
 Of heaven, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.  
 But streight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure  
 They seemd to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:  
 Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more unfit then strange.  
 The first with cloth's tuckt up as Nymphes in woods do range;  
 Tuckt up even with the knees, with bowe and arrowes prest:  
 Her right arme naked was, discovered was her brest.  
 But heavy was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,  
 As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.  
 The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,  
 As stuffe meant for the sale set out to glaring showe)  
 A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde  
 Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, shinde.  
 When I such guests did see come out of such a house,  
 The mountaines great with childe I thought brought forth a mouse.  
 But walking forth, the first thus to the second saide,  
 Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obaide.  
 Those names abasht me much, whē those great names I hard:  
 Although their fame (me seemd) from truth had greatly jard.  
 As I thus musing stood, Diana cald to her  
 The waiting Nymph, a Nymph that did excell as farr  
 All things that earst I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,  
 That which their mother hight, or els their silly seed.  
 Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a sweet consent  
 Of all those Graces giftes the heavens have ever lent.*

*And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize  
 Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.  
 But cald, she came apace; a pace wherein did move  
 The bande of beauties all, the little world of Love.  
 And bending humbled eyes (ô eyes the Sunne of sight)  
 She waited mistresse will: who thus disclosd her spright.  
 Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,  
 In whom of all my rules the perfect prooffe I finde,  
 To onely thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace  
 Us to attend, in this most private time and place.  
 Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still  
 Of that thou seest: close up in secrete knot thy will.  
 She answer'd was with looke, and well perform'd behest:  
 And Mira I admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.  
 But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite  
 Diana did begin. What mov'd me to invite  
 Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony spheare,  
 And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing eare.  
 I know full well you know, what discord long hath rain'd  
 Betwixt us two; how much that discord foule hath stain'd  
 Both our estates, while each the other did deprave,  
 Prooffe speakes too much to us that feeling triall have.  
 Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:  
 Our offerings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displac'd  
 Is this the fruite of strife? those thousand churches hie,  
 Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?  
 In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserve:  
 No knees once bowed, forsooth, for them they say we serve.  
 Are we their servants growne? no doubt a noble staye:  
 Celestiall powers to wormes, Joves children serve to claye.  
 But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,  
 While we for mutuall spight a striving passion fed.  
 But let us wiser be; and what foule discorde brake,  
 So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.  
 Our yeares doo it require: you see we both doo feele  
 The weakning worke of Times for ever-whirling wheele.  
 Although we be divine, our grandsire Saturne is  
 With ages force decay'd, yet once the heaven was his.  
 And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill  
 Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Let us a perfect peace betweene us two resolve:  
 Which lest the ruinous want of government dissolve;  
 Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:  
 For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.  
 And let her have the giftes that should in both remaine:  
 In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.  
 So as if I prevaile, you give your giftes to me:  
 If you, on you I lay what in my office be.  
 Now resteth onely this, which of us two is she,  
 To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.  
 For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth  
 (She beckned unto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,  
 Who may this doubt discern: for better, witt, then lot  
 Becommeth us: in us fortune determines not.  
 This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)  
 To worthiest let him give, when both he hath beheld:  
 And be it as he saith. Venus was glad to heare  
 Such proffer made, which she well shewd with smiling cheere.  
 As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome  
 She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie overcome.  
 And smirklly thus gan say. I never sought debate  
 Diana deare; my minde to love and not to hate  
 Was ever apt: but you my pastimes did despise.  
 I never spited you, but thought you overwise.  
 Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:  
 And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.  
 And let him be our judge: the lad doth please me well.  
 Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell  
 (For both together spake, each loth to be behinde)  
 That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde  
 To stand unto my will: their will they made me know.  
 I that was first agast, when first I saw their shoue:  
 Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare:  
 For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reverent feare.  
 And having bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye  
 To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.  
 How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:  
 Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.  
 To yonder Nymph therefore (to Mira I did point)  
 The crowne above you both for ever I appoint.*



*I would have spoken out: but out they both did crie;  
 Fie, fie, what have we done? ungodly rebell fie.  
 But now we needs must yeelde, to that our othes require.  
 Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire  
 Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde,  
 That thou full oft shalt wish thy judging eyes were blinde.  
 Nay then (Diana said) the chastnesse I will give  
 In ashes of despaire (though burnt) shall make thee live.  
 Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beames shine in her face  
 That thou shalt never dare seeke helpe of wretched case.  
 And with that cursed curse away to heaven they fled,  
 First having all their giftes upon faire Mira spred.  
 The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd  
 And found with deadly feare that all my sinewes shak'd.  
 Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,  
 That I things erst unseene should first in dreaming see?  
 And thou ô traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest,  
 How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?  
 O cowarde Cupid thus doost thou thy honour keepe,  
 Unarmde (alas) unwares to take a man asleepe?*

Laying not onely the conquests, but the hart of the cōquerour at her feet. \*\*\* But she receiving him after her woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise unmoved) māner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but a pleasant monument of a dolefull buriall: Joy it selfe seeming bitter unto him, since it agreed not to her taste.

Therefore, still craving his mothers helpe to persuade her, 2  
 he himself sent for *Philanax* unto him, whom he had not onely long hated, but nowe had his hate greatly encreased by the death of his Squire *Ismenus*. Besides he had made him as one of the chiefe causes that mooved him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrew the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of such a trespasse) in some formall sort to cause him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other, who long had hated *Philanax*, onely because he was more worthy to be loved then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather 3  
 to the humour then the reason of ech speaker, *Philoclea* comming

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

to knowledge of the hard plight wherein *Philanax* stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite upon her, to goe in her name, and beseech *Amphialus*, that if the love of her had any power of perswasion in his minde, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment, uppon *Philanax*. This message was delivered even as *Philanax* was entring to the presence of *Amphialus*, comming (according to the warning was given him) to receyve a judgement of death. But when he with manfull resolution attended the fruite of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that shoulde die in so good a cause; *Amphialus* turned quite the fourme of his pretended speech, and yeilded him humble thanks, that by his meanes he had come to that happinesse, as to receive a commaundement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gave him libertie to returne in safetie whither he would; quitting him, not onely of all former grudge, but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship, and service: onely desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent of *Basilius*-his proceeding.

- 4 Truly my Lorde (answered *Philanax*) if there were any such knowne to me, secrete in my maisters counsaile, as that the revealing thereof might hinder his good successe, I shoulde loath the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith; and woulde thinke the just name of a traitour a harde purchase of a fewe yeares living. But since it is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of privie practise, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in fewe wordes to make your required declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement, both *Basilius* and *Gynecia* were, when they mist their children and *Zelmane*. Sometimes apt to suspect some practise of *Zelmane*, because she was a straunger; sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreased, then any way satisfied, by *Miso*: who (being founde, almost deade for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to knowledge where they were, with *Amphialus*-his owne letters sent abroade to procure confederates in his attemptes. That

## ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

*Basilus* his purpose was never to leave the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and revenged the injurie done unto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiaunt men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had sent order, that supplies of souldiours, pioners, and all things else necessarie, shoulde dayly be brought unto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde *Philanax*) let me now, having receyved my life by your grace, let me give you your life and honour by my counsaile; protesting unto you, that I cannot choose but love you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgive, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault passed is excusable, in that Love perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not urge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantly by courtesie, which you can never assuredly enjoy by violence. One might easily have seene in the cheare of *Amphialus*, that disdainfull choller woulde faine have made the aunswere for him, but the remembraunce of *Philoclea* served for forcible barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: so as he saide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to give him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he listed, presently. *Philanax* glad to receyve an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his favourable convoy out of the towne; and so departed, not having visited the Princesses, thinking it might be offensive to *Amphialus*, and no way fruitfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieved.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet 5 together, or to have cōference with any other, but such as *Cecropia* had alreadie framed to sing all her songs to her tune, she herselfe omitting no day, and catching holde of everie occasion to moove forward her sonnes desire, and remove their knowne resolutions: using the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne first, the other shoulde (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handeling was diverse, according as she sawe their humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day having used long speech to *Philoclea*, amplifying not a little the great duetifulnesse her sonne had shewed in delivering

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Philanax*: of whome she coulede get no aunswere, but a silence sealed up in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resistance, and humblenesse.

## CHAP. 10.

<sup>1</sup>*Pamelas exercise. Cecropias talke with her of Beautie and the use thereof.* <sup>4</sup>*The Auntes Atheisme* <sup>5</sup>*refuted by the Neeces Divinitie.*

<sup>1</sup> **C***Ecropia* threatning in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her sister *Pamela*: who that day having wearied her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome she accounted her jaylours, was woorking uppon a purse certaine Roses and Lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke, one might see she had borrowed her wittes of the sorow that owed them, & lent them wholly to that exercise. For the flowers she had wrought, caried such life in them, that the cūningest painter might have learned of her needle: which with so prety a maner made his careers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it selfe would have bene loth to have gone frōward such a mistres, but that it hoped to return thēceward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies upon her, & lovingly embracing the wounds she gave it: the sheares also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne to short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making of a Rose with her hand, she would in an instant make Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to have their whitenesse, rather of the hande that made them, then of the matter whereof they were made; and that they grew there by the Sūnes of her eyes, & were refreshed by the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an unwares sigh might bestow upon them. But the colours for the ground were so well chosen, neither sullenly darke, nor glaringly lightsome, and so well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to serve for an ornament of the principall woorke; that it was not without marvaile to see, howe a minde which could cast a carelesse

semblant upon the greatest conflictes of Fortune, coulde commaunde it selfe to take care for so small matters. Neither had she neglected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had ben her mariage time to Affliction, she rather semed to remember her owne worthinesse, then the unworthinesse of her husband. For well one might perceyve she had not rejected the counsaile of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in paying the tribute of undeceyving skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so diverse from her sister, (who rather <sup>2</sup> suffered sorrow to distresse it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any intertainment of so unwelcome a guest) made *Cecropia* take a suddaine assurednesse of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of *Pamela*: thinking (according to the squaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold soone prove a signe of an unrefusing harborough. Animated wherewith, she sate downe by *Pamela*: and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking upon the worke, Full happie is he (saide she) at least if he knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this maner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall have cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be pursed up in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (said *Pamela* halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres beleewe, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but even as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide *Cecropia*) of Beautie, to woorke unwitting effectes of wonder. Truly (saide *Pamela*) I never thought till now, that this outward glasse, intituled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) unguiltie charge, was but a pleasaunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beastes have; but even stones and trees many of them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (answered *Cecropia*) have some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that even those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them onely is given the judgement to discern Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

preheminance, so that in that preheminance, Nature counter-vailes all other liberalities, wherein she may be thought to have dealte more favourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themselves with glorie, for having either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they would have perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not onely commaund without authoritie, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares unto it. Men venture lives to conquere; she conqueres lives without venturing. She is served, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so commaund it, but because they become lawes to theselves to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to governe by Feare, or by Love, since without her thinking thereof, their love will bring foorth feare, and their feare will fortifie their love: and she neede not seeke offensive, or defensive force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shieldes, and tenne thousand unevitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gifte, on whom soever the heavens (therein most niggardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to use it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preserving; since that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also derive the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said *Pamela*) I feare me you will make me not onely thinke my selfe fairer then ever I did, but think my fairnes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I coulde imagine it. For I ever (till now) conceived these conquests you spake of, rather to proceed from the weakenes of the conquered, then from the strength of the cōquering power: as they say, the Cranes overthrowe whole battailes of *Pygmees*, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are *Pygmees*: and that we see, young babes think babies of woonderful excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your elder yeares, and abler judgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we accoūt pretious) ever to suffer it to be defiled.

Defiled? (said *Cecropia*) Mary God forbid that my speech 3 should tend to any such purpose, as should deserve so foul a title. My meaning is to joyn your beauty to love; your youth to delight. For truly, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Love behold it: and therefore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preserving of it: for Beauty goes away, devoured by Time, but where remains it ever flourishing, but in the hart of a true lover? And such a one (if ever there were any) is my son: whose love is so subjected unto you, that rather then breed any offence unto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his love (answered *Pamela*) better pleaseth me then that: but as I have oftē answered you, so, resolutely I say unto you, that he must get my parents consent, & then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I should offend God. O sweet youth (said *Cecropia*) how untimely subject it is to devotion? No, no sweet neece, let us old folks think of such precise consideratiōs, do you enjoy the heaven of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good householders, which spend those thinges that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enjoy that, which else will bring an over-late repentance, whē your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, decking it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of *Autumn*? what lesson is that unto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like *April*? Let not some of thē, for whom alredy the grave gapeth, & perhaps envy the felicity in you, which thēselves cannot enjoy, perswade you to lose the hold of occasiō, while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be takē: which if it be not now taken, will never hereafter be overtaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & wil you suffer your beauty to be hid in the wrinckles of his pevish thoughts? If he be pevish (said *Pamela*) yet is he my father, & how beautiful soever I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no judge of his imperfections.

These often replies upon conscience in *Pamela*, made 4

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to be voide of purpose, so if she coulde make her lesse feeling of those heavenly conceipts, that then she might easilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the uttermost of her mischievous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might prevaile therein) how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I have of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Devotion, indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes have found, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are most glad of: So are these bug-beares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serve as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not to be helde up by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should love Vertue servillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but even for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the first inventer of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angrie body above, that spake so lowde: and ever the lesse they did perceive, the more they did conceive. Whereof they knew no cause that grewe streight a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but upon particular accidents, the universalitie being alwaies one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, saving only Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he strives to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wise, and that wisdom shalbe a God unto thee; be contented, and that is thy heaven: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) above, are moved either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our



actions; carries as much reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblest.

She would have spoken further to have enlarged & confirmed 5 her discourse: but *Pamela* (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glistered forth beames of disdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, unworthy to breathe, that doest not acknowledge the breath-giver; most unworthy to have a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the everlasting governour? Would you have an inconstant God, since we count a man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seene by so wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport-sake willingly hoodwincke themselves to receive blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bodie else here to judge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captivitie, that my eares shall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You saie, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true & lively devotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we live, hath not his being by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond mervaille by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceive of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things unsufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not have happened; or els it did not happen; and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, thẽ not being. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was derived frõ Chaunce: for Chaunce could never make all thinges of nothing: and if there were substaunces before, which by chaunce shoulde meete to make up this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitt of

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

absurdities. For then those substaunces must needes have bene from ever, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should be the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all things, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therfore in reason we must needes know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heavey partes would have gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely upward, and so never have mett to have made up this goodly bodie. For before there was a heaven, or a earth, there was neyther a heaven to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heaven) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular government to establish this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and ethereall partes should in their towne-house set downe the boundes of each ones office; then consider what followes: that there must needes have bene a wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde have sought each others ruine, then have served as well consorted partes to such an unexpressable harmonie. For that contrary things should meete to make up a perfectiõ without a force and Wisedome above their powers, is absolutely impossible; unles you will flie to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one universall Nature (which hath bene for ever) is the knitting together of these many partes to such an excellent unitie. If you meane a Nature of wisdome, goodnes, & providence, which knowes what it doth, then say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a

Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth upward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to observe so just a daunce, and yet understands no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a lesse matter, when we say one kingdome which conteines many citties; or one cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the under ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisdom) cannot by nature regarde to any preservation but of themselves: no more we see they doo, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a conspired unitie: but that a right heavenly Nature indeed, as it were unnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an unitie many contraries should proceede still kept in an unitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an unitie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of judgement from among them, then (if so earthly a minde can lift it selfe up so hie) doo but conceive, how a thing whereto you give the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is so to be, as not to enjoy his owne being? I will not here call all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes not most evident evidence of the unspeakeablenesse of that Wisdom: each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preservation: so proper effects of judgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can ever so enveagle any conceipte, as to see our mortall and corruptible selves to have a reason, and that this universalitie (whereof we are but the lest pieces) should be utterly devoide thereof? as if one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This hearde I once alledged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being driven to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he sought (not able to answer directly) to shifte it of in this sorte: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde must have in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

learned; since that was in us so commendable: wretched foole, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are prayسد, because they helpe our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulness. This worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisedome, whiche governes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as undoubtedly he is, or the soule and governour thereof, most certaine it is that whether he governe all, or make all, his power is above either his creatures, or his governement. And if his power be above all things, then consequently it must needes be infinite, since there is nothing above it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needes be boundlesse, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he shoulde not know how to use; the unsensiblenesse whereof I thinke even you can conceave: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of flies (which you with so unsaverie skorne did jest at) be unknowne unto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needs his goodnesse and justice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes or power, & knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring forth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preservation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man; and sees therein the deepest dissembled thoughts, nay sees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is just to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his justice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canst not keepe thy sicknesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of everlasting and unremooveable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that power by feeling it, when thou shalt see his wisedome in the manifesting thy ougly shamelesnesse, and shalt onely perceive him to have bene a Creator in thy destruction.

## CHAP. II.

<sup>1</sup> *Cecropia malcontent, still practiseth.* <sup>2</sup> *The besiegers discipline, and attempts of the besieged.* <sup>3</sup> *Phalantus chalengeth* <sup>4</sup> *by Letter Amphialus:* <sup>5</sup> *who by Letter accepteth it.* <sup>6</sup> *Amphialus* <sup>7</sup> *and Phalantus militar accoustrements.* <sup>8</sup> *Their fo-like combat,* <sup>9</sup> *but friendly conclusion.*

**T**Hus she saide, thus she ended, with so faire a majestie of **I** unconquered vertue, that captivitie might seeme to have authoritie over tyrannie: so fowly was the filthinesse of impietie discovered by the shining of her unstayned goodnes, so farre, as either *Cecropia* saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her eies untrue judges of their natural object, that there was a light more then humane, which gave a lustre to her perfections. But *Cecropia*, like a Batte (which though it have eyes to discern that there is a Sunne, yet hath so evill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not love it. But as great persons are woont to make the wrong they have done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her knowledge rose to no higher point, but to envie a worthier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more to hate, the more she founde her enemy provided against her. Yet all the while she spake (though with eyes cast like a horse that woulde strike at the stirrop, and with colour which blushed through yellownesse) she sate rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickednesse in her selfe, brought forth disdainefull pride to resist cunning dissimulation; so as, saying little more unto her, but that she shoulde have leysure inough better to bethinke her selfe; she went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her sonnes over-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, determining to deale with neither of them both any more in maner of a suter: for what majestie of vertue did in the one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But finding her sonne over-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of sorrowe uppon himselfe, she sought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of comforte, who

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

(having this inward overthrow in himselfe) was the more vexed, that he coulde not utter the rage thereof upon his outward enemies.

2 For *Basilus* taught by the last dayes triall, what daungerous effectes chosen courages can bring forth, rather used the spade, then the sworde; or the sworde, but to defende the spade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caryed before him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answering the other, in such sort, as it was a prettie consideration in the discipline of warre, to see building used for the instrument of ruine, and the assayler entrenched as if he were besieged. But many sallies did *Amphialus* make to hinder their woorking. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him finde, that if by the advauntage of place, fewe are able to defende themselves from manie, that manie must needes have power, (making themselves strong in seate) to repell fewe; referring the revenge rather to the ende, then a present requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, eche side having a strong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemye, then for anie hope of great successe.

3 Which everie way was a tedious comber to the impacient courage of *Amphialus*: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diverse, both straungers, and subjects, as well of princely, as noble houses, the gallant *Phalantus*, who restrayned his sportfull delightes as then, to serve *Basilus*, (whome he honoured for receyved honours) when he had spent some time in considering the *Arcadian* manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of government, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and had satisfied his minde in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furnishing ones selfe, which *Basilus* orders coulde deliver unto him, his yong spiritess (wearie of wanting cause to be wearie) desired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by some private acte, since the publique policie restrayned him; the rather, because his olde mistresse *Artesia* might see, whome she had so lightly forsaken: and therefore demanding and obteyning leave of *Basilus*; he caused a

Heraulde to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable message, and so sent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of *Amphialus*: who understanding thereof, caused him both safely, and courteously to be brought into his presence: who making lowly reverence unto him, presented his Letters, desiring *Amphialus* that whatsoever they conteyned, he would consider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. *Amphialus* with noble gentlenesse assured him both, by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which aunswered for him, that his revenge, whensoever, should sort unto it selfe a higher subject. But opening the Letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

**P***halantus* of *Corinthe*, to *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, sendeth the 4  
greeting of a hatelesse enimie. The liking of martiall matters without anie mislike of your person, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your besiegers: where languishing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my minde with some exercise of armes, which might make knowne the dooers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that eyther for the love of Honour, or honour of his Love, well armed, on horsebacke, with launce, and sworde, will winne another, or loose himselfe, to be a prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne rising, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furnished. The place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake, because it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as that the Ladies may have the pleasure of seeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Castell, I desire no better securitie, then the promise I make to my selfe of your vertue. I attende your aunswere, and wish you such successe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is just, then in mainteyning wrong by much violence.

**A***mpbialus* read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking 5  
but a little with himselfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunswere.

**A***mpbialus* of *Arcadia*, to *Phalantus* of *Corinthe*, wisheth all  
his owne wishes, saving those which may be hurtful to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

another. The matter of your letters so fit for a worthy minde, and the maner so sutable to the noblenesse of the matter, give me cause to thinke howe happie I might accounte my selfe, if I coulde get such a friende, who esteeme it no small happinesse to have mette with so noble an enemye. Your chalenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any treacherie (having no hostage woorthie to countervaille you) take my woorde, which I esteeme above all respectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; since true valure needes no other whetstone, then desire of honour.

6 **H**AVING writte and sealed his letter, he delivered it to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gave it him. And so with safe convoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, *Amphialus* shewed unto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsailours, what he had receyved, and howe he had aunswered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunswere the chalenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde governour with perswasions mingled with reprehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a private fighter, then of a wise Generall) *Clinias* with falling downe at his feete, and beseeching him to remember, that all their lives depended upon his safetie, sought all to dissuade him. But *Amphialus* (whose hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off the tediousnesse of replies, giving them in charge, what they shoulde doo upon all occasions, and particularly to deliver the Ladies, if otherwise then well happened unto him: onely desiring his mother, that she woulde bring *Philoclea* to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discerne the combat. And so, as soone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of sure service, before a great nūber of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black spots; his forehead marked with a white starre; to which, in all his bodie



## ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

there was no part sutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde ennamell, enriched with pretious stones: his furniture was made into the fashiõ of the branches of a tree, from which the leaves were falling: and so artificiallie were the leaves made, that as the horse moved, it seemed indeed that the leaves wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured liverie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the *Torpedo* fish. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom he had taken since the death of *Ismenus*) to be ferried over into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillock, either to unlevell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the uttermost both of launce and sword, and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no accesse to it, but by water: there coule no secreate trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might have time enough to succour their party.

But there he found *Phalantus*, alredy waiting for him upon 7 a horse, milke white, but that upon his shoulder and withers, he was fretned with red staines, as when a few strawberries are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the bosse, brought foorth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so lively, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it semed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heaven, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately delivered) guild in most places. His shield was beautified with this device; A greyhound, which overrunning his fellow, and taking

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

the hare, yet hurts it not whē it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*

8 But as soone as *Amphialus* landed, he sent his squire to *Phalantus*, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. *Phalantus* answered, that his answere now must be in the lāguage of launces; & so each attended the warning of the trūpets, which were to sound at the appointment of foure judges, who with consideration of the same, had devided the ground. *Phalantus*-his horse young, and feeling the youth of his master, stooode corvetting; which being wel governed by *Phalātus*, gave such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines upon a waving water. *Amphialus*-horse stood panting upon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurres to their horses, together took their launces from their thighes, conveied them up into their restes together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their horses keeping an even line their masters had skilfully allotted unto them, passed one by another without encountring, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the staves being come to a just descent, but even when the mark was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vamplate, and under the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Phalantus* just upon the gorget, so as he battred the lamms therof, and made his head almost touch the back of his horse. But either side having staid the spur, & used the bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the trōcheons of their staves, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death-threatning trumpet, which quickly folowed; and they assoone making their horses answer their hāds, with a gētle galop, set the one toward the other; til being come in the neernes of litle more then a staves length. *Amphialus* trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his head joyned to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthning it

with the course of his horse, strake *Phalantus* upon the head, in such sort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his sight, and astonish his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accustomed to be ungratefull to such benefites) strake him upon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his jawe had bene cut asunder: though the faithfulness of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till *Amphialus*-his horse, leaning harde upon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a little before, as he was woont to doo in his corvette: which advantage *Amphialus* taking, set forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as *Phalantus*-his horse came over with his master under him. Which *Amphialus* seeing, lighted, with intention to help *Phalantus*. But his horse that had faulted, rather with untimely arte, then want of force, gatte up from burdning his burden, so as *Phalantus* (in the fall having gotten his feete free of & the stirrop) could (though something bruised) arise, seeing *Amphialus* neere him, he asked him, Whether he had givẽ him any help in removing his horse. *Amphialus* said No. Truely sayd *Phalantus*, I asked it, because I would not willingly have fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (said *Phalantus*) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because never yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. *Amphialus* listing to keepe himselfe unknowne, told him he was a Gentlemã, to whom *Amphialus* that day had given armour and horse to trie his valour, having never before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said *Phalantus* in a rage) And must I be the exercise of your prentis-age? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the cõbat, & boiling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke upon *Amphialus*, as if every blow would faine have bene foremost. But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leave small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble avoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a sowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittying approved valoure, made pretious by 9

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to give him aire, the young Knight (disdained to buy life with yeelding) bad him use his fortune: for he was resolved never to yeeld. No more you shall (said *Amphialus*) if it be not to my request, that you will account your self to have great interest in me. *Phalantus* more overcome by his kindnes, thẽ by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. *Amphialus*, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his friẽd. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowmed valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednes of good will, *Phalantus*, (of whom *Amphialus* would have no other raunsome, but his word of friẽdship) was conveyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enimies of *Amphialus*: but went to seeke his adventures other-where.

### CHAP. 12.

<sup>1</sup> *Philocleas il-taking Amphialus wel-meaning.* <sup>2</sup> *His challenge and conquests continued for Love, & his love.* <sup>3</sup> *Argalus sent for to this challenge.* <sup>4</sup> *The conjugall happines of him and his wife.* <sup>5</sup> *The passions stirred by this message.* <sup>6</sup> *Their sorrow-sounding farewell.* <sup>7</sup> *Argalusis defie.* <sup>8</sup> *Amphialusis answere.* <sup>9</sup> *Argalusis furniture.* <sup>10</sup> *Their combat, bloudy to both, deadly to Argalus.* <sup>11</sup> *Parthenia comes to the end of it, and him.* <sup>12</sup> *Her* <sup>13</sup> *and his lamentations.* <sup>14</sup> *The funerals.*

<sup>1</sup> **A**S for *Amphialus* he was receaved with triumph into the castle; although one might see by his eyes (humbly lifted up to the window where *Philoclea* stood) that he was rather suppliaunt, then victorious: whiche occasion *Cecropia* taking, (who as then stooode by *Philoclea*, and had lately lefte *Pamela* in another roome, whence also she might see the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see, whether you

have cause to love my sonne, who then lies under your feete, when he standes upon the necke of his bravest enemies. Alas said *Philoclea*, a simple service to me, me thinkes it is, to have those, who come to succour me, destroied: If it be my dutie to call it love, be it so: but the effects it brings foorth I confesse I account hatefull. *Cecropia* grew so angry with this unkind answere, that she could not abstayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed: but that if her sonne would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of *Amphialus* in<sup>2</sup> like cases) framed to him a very thankefull message, poudring it with some hope-giving phrases; which were of such joy to *Amphialus*, that he (though against publike respect, & impportunity of dissuaders) presently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatsoever Knight would trie the like fortune as *Phalantus* did, he should in like sorte be answered: so as divers of the valiantest, partly of themselves, partly at the instigation of *Basilus*, attempted the combat with him: and according to every ones humour, so were the causes of the challēge groūded: one laying treason to his charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serve *Philoclea*; a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to Love it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reason, the betrayer of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the underminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the slave to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madnesse of age; the curse of life, and reproch of deathe; a fifth, disdayning to caste at lesse then at all, woulde make the cause of his quarrell the causers of love, and proclayme his blasphemies against womankind; that namely that sex was the oversight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonablenes, the obstinate cowards, the slave-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whō conscience is but peevishnes, chastitie waywardnes, & gratefulness a miracle. But all these challenges (how wel so ever endited) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though past learning themselves; & some by yeelding gave themselves the lie for having blasphemed; to the great grieve of *Basilus*, so to see his Rebell

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

prevaile, and in his own sight to crowne himselfe with deserved honour.

3 Wherupon thirsting for revenge, & else not hoping to prevaile, the best of his campe being already overthrowne; he sent a messenger to *Argalus*, in whose approved courage and force, he had (and had cause) to have great confidence, with a letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto spared him in respect of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicitie standing upon it, he could no longer forbear to chalenge of him his faithfull service.

4 The messenger made speede, and found *Argalus* at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parler with the faire *Parthenia*, he reading in a booke the stories of *Hercules*, she by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she looked on his eies, & sometimes staying him with some prety question, not so much to be resolved of the doubt; as to give him occasion to looke upon her. A happy couple, he joying in her, she joying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she enjoyed him: both encreasing their riches by giving to each other; each making one life double, because they made a double life; one, where desire never wanted satisfactiō, nor satisfaction never bred sacietie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

5 But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, & hast in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he delivered his letters and message; yet a far of she looked, now at the messenger, & then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to have cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she foūd there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eie cast upon her, & finding hers upon him, he blushed; & she blushed, because he blushed; and yet streight grew paler, because she knew not why he had blushed. But when he had read, & heard, & dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow; he came to *Parthenia*, and as sorie as might be for parting, and yet more sorie for her sorrow, he gave her the letter to reade. She with

fearful slownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and having read it, *Ab my Argalus* (said she) and have you made such hast to answere? and are you so soone resolved to leave me? But he discoursing unto her, how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare unto her) her reason overclouded with sorow, suffered her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to give order for his present departure.

By that time he was arme, and readie to go, she had 6 recovered a little strength of spirite againe, & cōming out, & seing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or saw her demeanour, *My Argalus, my Argalus* (said she) doo not thus forsake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I have interest in you, which I will never yeeld shalbe thus adventured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently have you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose lesse worthie lives. Woe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these adventures, when you adventured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or never, I claime mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can undertake no dāger: & will you endāger *Parthenia*? *Parthenia* shalbe in the battle of your fight: *Parthenia* shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by *Parthenia*. Deare *Parthenia* (said he) this is the first time, that ever you resisted my will: I thanke you for it; but persever not in it; & let not the teares of those most beloved eies be a presage unto me of that, which you would not should happen. I shal live, doubt not: for so great a blessing, as you are, was not given unto me, so soone to be deprived of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a joyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-stricken with amazement: for true Love made obedience stande up against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to printe his harte in her sweete lippes, she fell in a sounde, so as he was faine to leave her to her Gentlewomen:

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. When understanding the notable victories of *Amphialus*, he thought to give him some dayes respite of rest, because he woulde not have his victorie disgraced by the others wearinesse. In which dayes, he sought by all meanes (having leave to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to *Basilus*, because he found *Amphialus* was inflexible, wrote his defie unto him in this maner.

7 **R**ight famous *Amphialus*, if my persuasion in reason, or praier in good wil, might prevaile with you, you should by better meanes be like to obteine your desire. You should make many brave enemies become your faithfull servāts, & make your honor flie up to the heavē, being caried up by both the wings of valure & justice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no place in you, disdaine not to receive a mortall challenge, from a man so farre inferiour unto you in vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deed, as I have the doer in admiration. Prepare therfore your self, according to the noble maner you have used, and think not lightly of never so weake an arme, which strikes with the sword of justice.

To this quickly he received this answer.

8 **M**uch more famous *Argalus*, I, whom never threatnings could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble curtesie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cause I have to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Love, which justifieth the unjustice you lay unto me, dooth also animate me against all daungers, since I come full of him by whom your selfe have beene (if I be not deceived) sometimes conquered. I will therfore attend your appearaunce in the Ile, carying this advantage with me, that as it shal be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no dishonour in being overcome by *Argalus*.

9 The challenge thus denounced, and accepted, *Argalus* was armed in a white armour, which was gilded over with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the crest of his head-peece, and spred it selfe in rich quātitie over all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich jewell) was fastened to the saddle,



the taile covered the crooper of the horse, and the wings served for trappers; which falling of ech side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to flie. His pettrell and reines, were embrodered with feathers sutable unto it: upon his right arme he ware a sleeve, which his deare *Parthenia* had made for him, to be worne in a justes, in the time that successe was ungratefull to their well-deserved love: It was full of bleeding hartes, though never intended to any blooddie enterprise. In this shield (as his owne device) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, *In that sort flourishing*. His horse was of a firie sorrell, with blacke feete, and blacke list on his back, who with open nostrrels breathed warre, before he could see an enemy: and now up with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie.

But he had scarcely viewed the grounde of the Ilande, and 10 considered the advauntages (if any were) therof, before the Castel boat had delivered *Amphialus*, in al points provided to give a hard entertainmēt. And then sending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they should attende any further ceremony; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, their staves with unshaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke cōmandements. But when they drew nere, *Argalus*-his horse being hot, prest in with his head: which *Amphialus* perceiving, knowing if he gave him his side, it should be to his disadvauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being stricken) tumbled downe to the earth, daungerously to their maister, but that they by strength nimble, and by use skilfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drewe out their swordes with a gallant braverie, eche striving to shewe himselfe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had now nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that *Amphialus* was the sooner up; but *Argalus* had his sworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellest combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swordes first, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almost in everie place for troupes of woundes to enter. Among the rest,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Argalus* gave a great wound to *Amphialus*-his disarmed face; though part of the force of it *Amphialus* warded upon his shielde, and withi-all (first casting his eye up to *Philocleas* Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the same sort of blowes, turned his sword, and with a mightie reverse, gave a cruell wounde to the right arme of *Argalus*, the unfaythfull armour yeelding to the swoordes strong-guided sharpenesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of *Argalus*, yet woulde he in no action of his confesse it: but keeping himselfe in a lower warde, stode watching with timely thrustes to repaire his losse; which quickly he did. For *Amphialus* (following his fawning fortune) laid on so thicke upon *Argalus*, that his shield had almost fallen peece-meale to the earth, when *Argalus* comming in with his right foote, and something stowping to come under his armour, thrust him into the belly daungerously, and mortally it would have beene, but that with the blowe before, *Amphialus* had overthrowne himselfe so, as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling saved himselfe from ruine. The sworde by that meanes slipping aside, and not pearcing more deeply, *Argalus* seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sworde, bad him yeelde. But he striving without aunswere to rise, *Argalus* strake with all his might upon his head. But his hurte arme not able to maister so sounde a force, let the swoorde fall so, as *Amphialus*, though astonished with the blowe, could arise: which *Argalus* considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together; falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting above, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so unlovely embracements, with a dissenting consent gate up, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where *Argalus* finding his foes sworde garnished in his blood, his hart rase with the same swoorde to revenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was evill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receyved still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his master no better. But *Amphialus* perceiving it, & waying the small hatefulnessse of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himselfe. But *Argalus*, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disadvauntage, filling his veynes with spite in steade of blood,

and making courage arise agaynst faintnesse, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, gives then the greatest blaze) so did he unite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his swoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armour, and arme almost to the bone.

But then *Amphialus* forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell II blowes made more of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being staid by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as fast as she could, and yet because she coulede not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull *Parthenia*, (who had that night dreamed shee sawe her husbände in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste thither) they both marvailed. But *Parthenia* ranne betweene them (feare of love making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining so to part them, till she coulede get breathe to sigh out her doolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made slowe to returne) had by sobbes gotten into her sorow-closed breast, for a while she coulede say nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull sight, O day of darkenesse: at length turning her eyes (wherein sorrowe swamme) to *Amphialus*, My Lorde (saide she) it is saide you love; in the power of that love, I beseech you to leave of this combate, as even your harte may finde comfort in his affection, even for her sake, I crave it: or if you be mortally determined, be so pitifull unto me, as first to kill me, that I may not see the death of *Argalus*. *Amphialus* was aboute to have aunswered, when *Argalus*, vexed with his Fortune, but most vexed that she shoulde see him in that fortune, Ah *Parthenia* (saide he) never till nowe unwelcome unto me, do you come to get my life by request? And can not *Argalus* live but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside, for feare of hurting her, and woulde have begunne the combate afresh. But *Amphialus* not onely conjured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but even in his noble hart melting with compassion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withholde his handes, for that he shoulde strike one, who sought his favour, and woulde not make

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

resistaunce. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, sought for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered would not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to love eche other for accepting, but not for giving mercie, and neyther affected to over-live a dishonour: so that *Argalus* not so much striving with *Amphialus* (for if he had had him in the like sorte, in like sort he would have dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised) set himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the uttermost. But the fire of that strife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such abundance, that he was driven to rest him upon the pommel of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazled, and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sowne. *Parthenia*, and *Amphialus* both hastely went unto him: *Amphialus* tooke of his helmet, and *Parthenia* laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen sleeves & partlet, to serve about his wounds; to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would have cut of her faire haire herselfe, but that the squires and judges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to have taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and have engraved it in the mindes of hardest mettall.

12 O *Parthenia*, no more *Parthenia* (said she) What art thou? what seest thou? how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, even-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God, what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such have bene my desert, why was I not in my selfe punished? O wandering life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp inough to save my labour from other remedies. *Argalus*, *Argalus*, I will folow thee, I wil folow thee.

13 But with that *Argalus* came out of his sowne, and lifting up his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and iron sleepe did seeke to lock up) seeing her, in whō (even dying) he lived, and him selfe seated in so beloved a place, it seemed a little cheerefull bloud came up to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little revivē it: & forcing up (the

best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leave thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death bringes nothing with it to grieve me, but that I must leave thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some comfort unto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdom and goodnesse guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blessedly meet againe, never to depart: meane while live happily, deare *Parthenia*, and I perswade my selfe, it will increase the blessednes of my soule, so to see thee. Love well the remembrance of thy loving, and truely loving, *Argalus*: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an unwoorthie husband. They could scarcely understand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him selfe of his harte, neither could *Parthenia* make answere, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was delivered into her mouth.

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then <sup>14</sup> Sorrowe lost the witte of utterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serve for nothing, since *Argalus* was gone; till *Amphialus* (so moved with pittie of that sight, as that he honoured his adversaries death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her) partelie by force, to be conveyed into boate, with the dead body of *Argalus*, from which she could not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaved by *Basilus* him selfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline, trayling all their Ensignes upon the ground, making his warlike instruments sound dolefull notes, and *Basilus* (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade some ease into *Parthenias* minde: but all was as easefull to her, as the handling of sore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if ever she should finde ease thereof. And well might she heare as she past through the Campe, the great prayses spoken of her husbände, which all were recordes of her losse. But the more excellent he was

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

(being indeede accounted seconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those praises, beare up the winges of *Amphialus*-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Trophe upon Trophe, still did but builde up the monumēt of his thraldome; he ever finding himselfe in such favour of *Philoclea*, that she was most absent, when he was present with her; and ever sorriest, when he had best successe: which would have made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diversity of devises, kept up his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to have bene overtaken with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to have brought forth unto him a weeping effect.

### CHAP. 13.

<sup>1</sup>*Dametas put in harte* <sup>2</sup>*to defie Clinias.* <sup>3</sup>*Clinias out of harte to see the vie.* <sup>4</sup>*Dametas braverie, adoubements, and imprese.* <sup>5</sup>*Clinias drawne* <sup>6</sup>*to answere him.* <sup>7</sup>*Their passions in comming to the field.* <sup>8</sup>*Their actions in it, not so doubtly, as their fortune doubtfull.* <sup>9</sup>*Clinias yeelding to triumphant Dametas.*

I **A**Mong other that attended *Basilius* in this expedition, *Dametas* was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from *Miso*: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his sworde cursed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed injurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of *Amphialus*, it fell out sometimes in communication, that as the speech of heaven doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of *Amphialus* (by a cōtrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of *Clinias*: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverb, *As very a cowarde, as Clinias.* Describing him in such sort, that in the end, *Dametas* began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge unto him, he would never answere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the favourable conceite of *Basilius*. This fancie of his he uttered to a young Gentleman, that waited upon *Philanax*, in whose friendship he had especiall

cōfidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly *dotes* of *Mopsa*. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with *Philanax*, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge him selfe for *Damætas*, and brought it to him. But when *Damætas* read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling; he said, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

**O** Clinias, *thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that ever went 2*  
*upon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and seething pot*  
*of iniquitie: I Damætas, chiefe governour of all the royall cattell,*  
*and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath*  
*suggested out of my dominion) doo defie thee, in a mortall affray from*  
*the bodkin to the pike upwarde. Which if thou doost presume to*  
*take in hande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy*  
*soule to be evacuated.*

The young Gentleman seemed dumbe-stricken with admira- 3  
tion, and presently tooke upon him to be the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lasted: and having gotten leave of *Basilius* (every one helping on, to ease his minde overcharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time used, and in the presence of *Amphialus* delivered this letter to *Clinias*; desiring to have an answer, which might be fit for his reputation. *Clinias* opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in so daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his painting breath would utter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that he disdained to have any thing to doo with him. But *Amphialus*, perceaving the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; *Amphialus* not onely desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to *Philoclea*, but not being able to perswade with him, *Amphialus* licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should have answer.

The yong Gentlemã (sory he had sped no better) returned 4

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

to *Damætas*, who had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for fear *Clinias* would accept the chalëge. But whē he perceived by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositiō in him to accept it; then lo, *Damætas* began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march up & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher thē he was wont, swearing by no meane devotiōs, that the wals should not keepe the coward frō him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then ever to provide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland bravely addoubed, & shew himself to his charge *Pamela*. To this purpose many willing hāds were about him, letting him have reynes, pettrell, with the rest of the furniture, and very brave bases; but all comming from divers houses, nether in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked *Damætas* the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many brave furnitures. Then gave he order to a painter for his device; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewsed from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloudy deedes with his swoorde, as many inkehornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde unto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that *Miso* would not take it well at his returne, if he forgot his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

*Miso mine own pigsnie, thou shalt heare news o' Damætas.*

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill favoured impatiencie he waited, until the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted upon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as *Clinias*, should set his runaway feete upon the face of the earth?

5 But as he was by divers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted up on horsebacke, comes me a page of



*Amphialus*, who with humble smiling reverence delivered a letter unto him from *Clinias*: whom *Amphialus* had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, *Damætas* would never dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be his) but principally threatning him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by *Basilus*: so as the present feare (ever to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full unwillingly, undertake the other feare, wherein he had some shewe of hope, that *Damætas* might hap either to be sick, or not to have the courage to performe the matter. But when *Damætas* heard the name of *Clinias*, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But *Damætas*-his friēd, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke upon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

**F***Ilthy drivell, unworthy to have thy name set in any letter by a 6*  
*souldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it*  
*was timorousnesse, that made Clinias suspende a while his answer?*  
*No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne*  
*with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner*  
*appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner*  
*appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doo not appeare) but*  
*that I will come upon thee withall my force; and cut thee in pieces*  
*(marke, what I saie) joynte after joynte, to the eternall terrour of all*  
*presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou doost: for I tell*  
*thee, horrible smarte, and paine shalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be*  
*so foolish (I having given thee no such cause) as to meete with me.*

These terrible wordes *Clinias* used, hoping they would give 7  
 a cooling to the heate of *Dametas*-his courage: and so indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, *Damætas* tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answer came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

(having him now on horsebacke) led him unto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate unkindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to use his sworde and launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might runne away, cursing all Ilands in being evill scituated) when *Clinias* with a brave sounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had deserved of *Amphialus* to drive him to those inconveniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him selfe what was beste to be done: but feare did so corrupt his witt, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found daunger therein; fearefulnessse (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worse he found him selfe; rather imagining in him selfe, what wordes he would use (if he were overcome) to get his life of *Damætas*, then how to overcome, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the Earth pittifully complayning, that a man of such sufficiencie (as he thought him selfe) shoulde in his best yeares be swallowed up by so base an element. Faine he would have prayed, but he had not harte inough to have confidence in praier; the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giving such an assault to the weake-breache of his false senses, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two judges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oth of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distaunce; one from the other.

- 8 Then the trumpets sounding, *Damætas*-his horse (used to such causes) when he thought lest of the matter, started out so lustely, that *Damætas* was jogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horse (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that *Damætas* threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horse, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with *Clinias*: who fearing he should misse his reste, had put his staffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then have begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that

stood behinde) strake on his horse, who running swiftly, the winde tooke such holde of his staffe, that it crost quite over his breast, and in that sorte gave a flat bastonado to *Damætas*: who, halfe out of his saddle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creste of his helmet. *Clinias* when he was paste him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing lest *Damætas* were at his backe, turned with a wide turne; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or never, to treade him under his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the cōming upon *Damætas*, who was then scrābling up, the horse fell over & over, and lay upon *Clinias*. Which *Damætas* (who was gotten up) perceiving, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil *Clinias* behind. But the horse that lay upon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that *Damætas* durst not approch, but verie leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat up, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that *Damætas* started up a good way, and gave *Clinias* time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sworde, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to *Damætas*. But *Damætas*, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiving of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles woulde leade him. But as *Clinias* founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a prevailing cowarde; laying upon *Damætas*, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to *Basilius*: but still bare the blowes ungratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that not daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows stil so lighted on him) nor to yeelde (because of the cruell threatnings of *Clinias*) feare being come to the extrémitie, fell to a madnesse of despaire: so that (winking as hard as ever he could) he began to deale some blowes, and his arme (being used to a flaile in his youth) laid thē on so thick, that *Clinias* now began with lamēt-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

able eies to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to *Damætas*, that he yeelded. Throw away thy sword then (said *Damætas*) and I will save thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. *Clinias* straight obeyed, and humbly craved mercie, telling him, his sworde was gone. Then *Damætas* first opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed unweaponed, made him stande a good way of from it; and then willed him to lie downe upon the earth as flat as he could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Damætas* (who never could thinke himselfe safe, till *Clinias* were deade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his sworde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then *Clinias* might happe to arise, and revenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe upon him, and with a great whittle he had (having disarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had used so with Calves, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he sought for his Knife, which under his armour he coulde not well finde out, and that *Clinias* lay with so sheepish a countenance, as if he would have beene glad to have his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Judges came in, and tooke *Damætas* from off him, telling him he did against the lawe of Armes, having promised life, if he threwe away his sworde. *Damætas* was loath to consent, till they sware, they woulde not suffer him to fight any more, when he was up: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing over him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this *combate of cowardes* being finished, *Damætas* was with much mirth and melodie received into the campe as victorious, never a Page there failing to waite upon this Triumph.

### CHAP. 14.

<sup>1</sup>*Clinias a slie traitour.* <sup>2</sup>*Artesia his malcontent accomplice.* <sup>3</sup>*Zel-manes passions.* <sup>4</sup>*Her practise with Artesia.* <sup>5</sup>*The complot revealed to the disliking sisters,* <sup>6</sup>*bewrayed by Pamela.*

<sup>1</sup> BUT *Clinias*, though he wanted hart to prevent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feele shame; not so much re-pining at it for the abhorring of shame, as for the discommodities,

that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of injuries, when men needed not care, how they used him. Insomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of every companie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing unto himselfe, what daunger he lately was in; which still kept no lesse ougly figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly (even in his dissembling countenance) might be discerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse toward *Amphialus*, then ever before, yet a leering eye upon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him (how little cause soever there was of smiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commaundements, with an uncertaine manner of behaviour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well have blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his cowardlinesse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the dayly dangers *Amphialus* did submit himselfe into, made *Clinias* assuredly looke for his overthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeme his former treason to *Basilus*, with a more treasonable falshood toward *Amphialus*.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of 2  
*Amphialus*, whom either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or discōtentment of some unsatisfied ambitiō would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some alredy of welthy weary folks, & unconstāt youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised thēselves) he had made stoupe to the lure. But of none he made so good account as of *Artesia*, sister to the late slain *Ismenus*, & the chiefe of six maids, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit countervaille (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had undertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of *Cecropia*; who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; & thē *Amphialus* wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleve, by some false persuasiō her glas had givē her of her own

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

incōparable excellencies, & by the great favor she knew he bare to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering womā) she conceived was done for her sake. But when she had atchieved her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far frō their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her sovereigne, & that neither her service had woon of *Amphialus* much more thē ordinary favor, nor her over-large offering herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obtained a looked-for acceptatiō; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & perchance unquenched lust-growne rage, made her unquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, whō she judged neither succoured against *Philanax*, nor revēged upon *Philanax*. But all these coles were wel blowne by the cōpany she especially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence uncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie harted *Pamela*, she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the first hardly broking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of adversitie, in time framed her selfe to yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

- 3 For *Zelmane*, when she had by that unexpected mischief her bodie imprisoned, her valure overmastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her love eclipsed; assured of evill, fearing worse, able to knowe *Philocleas* misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling up in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeve, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shoote out threatning upon them. But the fetters of servitude (growing heavier with wearing) made her feele her case, and the little prevailing of repining: and then grieve gat seate in her softned minde, making sweetenesse of passed comfortes by due title claime teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorrowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graved in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, thē adored; & no sooner adored, thē pitied: al the wōted praises (she was wont

to give unto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make invective declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.

But whē *Artesia* did insinuat herself into her acquaintance, 4 she gave the government of her courage to wit, & was cōtent to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceived in her certaine flawes of il-cōcealed discontentmēt. Insomuch that whē *Zelmane* would sweetē her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in never forgetting wel-intended services, & invoking the justice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrōgfully hiddē, & somtimes with a kind unkindnes, charging *Artesia* that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persōs: *Artesia* (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, never meaning other matter thē recreatiō: & yet withall (by alleaging how ungratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the unrewarding, & not the evil employing her service, which grieved her. But *Zelmane* (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliver, whom unwillingly she had imprisoned; leaving no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter revenge. So that *Artesia*, (pusht forward by *Clinias*, and drawne onward by *Zelmane*) bound her selfe to that practise; wherin *Zelmane* (for her part) desired no more, but to have armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impossible soever, which longing Love can perswade, and invincible Valour dare promise.

But *Clinias* (whose faith could never comprehend the 5 misteries of Courage) perswaded *Artesia*, while he by corruptiō had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that she should impoyson *Amphialus*, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had used to make the broaths, when *Amphialus* (either wearied or wounded) did use such diet. And al things alredy were ready to be put in executiō, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their cōsent in a thing so behooffull to thēselves: their reasons

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

being, that the Princesses knowing their service, might be sure to preserve them from the fury of the entring souldiers: whereof *Clinias* (even so) could scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them privie to their action, to binde them afterwarde to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, *Clinias* to *Philoclea*, and *Artesia* to *Pamela*: and *Clinias*, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her service. But *Philoclea* (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliver her, and that she would never forgett his service therin: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischief, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knewe) loved her, though wronged her. This unlooked-for answere amazed *Clinias*, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to *Philoclea*, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her service: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therin. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

6 But that little avayled: for *Artesia* having in like sort opened this device to *Pamela*, she (in whose mind Vertue governed with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and streight judging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose unrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles have caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a lowder voice then she was woont to use, so as *Cecropia* heard the noise; who was (sooner then *Artesia* imagined she would) come up, to bring *Pamela* to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselves: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters, streight found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired *Pamela* to tell her. Aske of her (said *Pamela*) & learne to know, that who do falshoode to their superiours, teach falshoode to their



inferiours. More she would not say. But *Cecropia* taking away the each-way guiltie *Artesia*, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as *Zelmane* was the more closely imprisoned, and *Clinias* (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for *Artesia*, she was but lockt up in her chamber, *Amphialus* not consenting (for the love he bare *Ismenus*) that further punishment should be laide upon her.

CHAP. 15.

<sup>1</sup> *Proude Anaxius breaketh through the besiegers.* <sup>2</sup> *His welcome by Amphialus.* <sup>3</sup> *The Musicke,* <sup>4</sup> *and lovesong made to Philoclea.* <sup>5</sup> *The sallie of Anaxius and his on the Basilians,* <sup>6</sup> *backt by Amphialus,* <sup>7</sup> *beaten backe by three unknowen Knights.* <sup>8</sup> *The Retraite of both sides.*

BUt the noyse they hearde in the campe, was occasioned by the famous Prince *Anaxius*, nephewe to the Giant *Euardes* whom *Pyrocles* slew: A Prince, of body excedingly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praise, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by injustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offred to himselfe, which in the farthest-fette construction, might be wrested to the name of wrōg; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a *Thraso*-like boasting, and yet (so unluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would never boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an unflexible anger, a courageous constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Love and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with *Amphialus*, but *Mars* had bene so unpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate aduantage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that *Anaxius* found *Amphialus* (unknowen) in a great danger, and saved his life: wherupon (loving his owne benefite) began to

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

favour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he could not choose but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud harte be conceived. So as in this travaile (seeking *Pyrocles* to be revenged of his uncles death) hearing of this siege, never taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome he thought him selfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he him selfe upon such an unexpected suddainenesse entred in upon the backe of *Basilus*, that many with great unkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if ever, did he make knowne the wonderfulness of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull *Philanax*, with wel governed speed made such head against him, as would have shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdome: but that *Amphialus* at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the sconses, which *Basilus* had builded, made waie for his friend *Anaxius* with great losse of both sides, but especially of the *Basilians*; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters redoubted worthynesse.

2 There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefites) did *Amphialus* enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make *Anaxius* know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streates and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both souldiers and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he besought to entertain him with no lesse love and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saved her sonnes life, and now came to save both life and honour. Tush (said *Anaxius*, speaking alowde, looking upon his brothers) I am onely sorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what *Anaxius* can doo, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though he had over-modestly spoken farre underneath the pitch of his

power. Then was he disarmed at the earnest request of *Amphialus*: for *Anaxius* boiled with desire to issue out upon the enemies, perswading himselfe, that the Sunne should not be sette, before he had overthrowne them. And having reposed himselfe, *Amphialus* asked him, whether he would visite the yong Princesses. But *Anaxius* whispered him in the eare: In trueth (saide he) deare friende *Amphialus*, though I am none of those, that love to speake of themselves, I never came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in love with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peevish paltrie sexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The curteous *Amphialus* could have beene angrie with him for those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him to daunce to his owne musicke: and gave himselfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde issue from a minde whome unluckie love had filled with melancholie. For to *Anaxius* he yeelded the direction of all. He gave the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to *Anaxius*. And that night when supper was ended, wherein *Amphialus* would needes himselfe waite upon him, he caused in Boates upon the Lake an excellent musicke to be ordered: which, though *Anaxius* might conceive was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to convey it to the eares of the beloved *Philoclea*.

The musicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunswering the 3 other, with a sweete emulation, striving for the glorie of musicke, and striking upon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then delivered up to the castell walles, which with a proude reverberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonie came to the eare, that it had enriched it selfe in travaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a brave proclamation to all unpossessed mindes of attention, an excellent consort streight followed of five Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song upon her, that thought upon another matter.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

4

**T**He Fire to see my woes for anger burneth:  
*The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:*  
*The Sea to ebbe for grieve his flowing turneth:*  
*The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth.*  
*Fame is with wonder blazed:*  
*Time runnes away for sorrow:*  
*Place standeth still amazed,*  
*To see my night of ils, which hath no morrowe.*  
*Alas all onely she no pitie taketh*  
*To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell*  
*My fall her glory maketh;*  
*Yet still her eyes give to my flames their fuell.*

*Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leave me:*  
*Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguish:*  
*Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereave me:*  
*Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.*  
*Fame, say I was not borne:*  
*Time, hast my dying hower:*  
*Place, see my grave uptorne:*  
*Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.*  
*Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:*  
*For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.*  
*Fie Death thou art beguiled:*  
*Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure.*

- 5 But *Anaxius* (seeming a weary before it was ended) told *Amphialus*, that for his part he liked no musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning they shoulde issue upon the same place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the besiegers of *Anaxius*. *Amphialus*, who had no whit lesse courage, though nothing blowne up with pride, willingly condescended: and so the next morning (giving false alarum to the other side of the campe) *Amphialus* at *Anaxius* earnest request, staying within the towne to see it garded, *Anaxius* and his brethren, *Lycurgus*, and *Zoilus*, sallied out with the best chosen men. But *Basilus* (having bene the last day somewhat unprovided) now had better fortified the overthrowne sconce;

and so well had prepared every thing for defence, that it was impossible for any valour from within, to prevaile. Yet things were perfourmed by *Anaxius* beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thrise (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set up his banner upon the rampire of the enemie: though thrise againe by the multitude, and advauntage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driven downe againe. Nübers there were that day, whose deathes and overthrowes were executed by the well knowne sworde of *Anaxius*: but the rest, by the length of time and injurie of Historians, have bene wrapped up in darke forgetfulness: onely *Tressennius* is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to *Anaxius*; till having lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, *Lycurgus* (second brother to *Anaxius*) cruellie murthered him; *Anaxius* him selfe disdayning any further to deale with him.

But so farre had *Anaxius* at the thirde time prevailed, that 6 now the *Basilians* began to let their courage descende to their feete, *Basilius*, and *Philanax* in vaine striving, with reverence of authoritie to bridle the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that *Amphialus*, seeing Victorie shew such a flattering countenance to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the suddaine comming 7 to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and device streight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had given Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed invincible *Amphialus*. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, under the wing of their damme. For the three adventurers, not content to keepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a brave combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether side Fortune woulde have beene partiall, could not be determined. For the *Basilians*, lightened with the beames of these straungers valure; followed so thicke, that the *Amphialians* were glad with some haste to retire to the walles warde: though *Anaxius* neither reason, feare, nor example, coulde make him

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

asswage the furie of his fight: untill one of the *Basilians* (unwoorthie to have his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sidewarde, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heaven, that all the influences thereof had power to overthrow him; and there death would have seazed of his proude hart, but that *Amphialus* tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conueied away *Anaxius*, so requiting life for life unto him.

8 And for the love and example of *Amphialus*, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when *Basilus* (that thought enough to be done for that day) caused retraite to be sounded; fearing least his men following over-hastily, might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to knowe. The Knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were „ eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer „ beastlinesse then manhood) drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who, knowing *Amphialus*, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. *Amphialus* seing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answering no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

### CHAP. 16.

<sup>1</sup> *The unknowne Knights will not be knowne.* <sup>2</sup> *The Knight of the Tombes shew,* <sup>3</sup> *and challenge accepted by Amphialus.* <sup>4</sup> *Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight.* <sup>5</sup> *Who that Knight was.* <sup>6</sup> *The dying speeches,* and <sup>7</sup> *the lamentable funerals.*

THE fight being ceased, and ech side withdrawne within their strengthes, *Basilus* sent *Philanax* to entertaine the straunge Knights, and to bring them unto him, that he might

acknowledge what honour was due to their vertue. But they excused themselves, desiring to be knowne first by their deedes, before their names should accuse their unworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserved, yet (finding that unwelcome curtesie is a degree of injury) he,, suffered them to retire themselves to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselves secrete: *Philanax* himselfe being called away to another straunge Knight; straunge not onely by the unlookedfornesse of his comming, but by the straunge maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind 2 him, all upon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes; ech of them servants of ech side, with like liveries of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted over with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse braunches; wherwith in olde time they were woont to dresse graves. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrowdered onely with blacke wormes, which seemed to crawle up and downe, as readie alreadie to deuoure him. In his shielde for *Impresa*, he had a beautifull childe, but having two heades; whereof the one shewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other alive, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiours termed him) 3 sent to *Basilus*, to demaund leave to send in a damosel into the towne, to cal out *Amphialus*, according as before time some others had done. Which being grãted (as glad any would undertake the charge, which no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and having with tears sobbed out a brave challenge to *Amphialus*, from the Knight of the Tombe, *Amphialus*, honourably enterteining the gentlewoman, & desiring to know the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not discover) accepted the  
..... challenge, onely desiring the Gentlewoman to say thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cause of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And therefore presently (according as he was woont) as soone as he perceyved the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damosels and Judge, was come into the Iland, he also

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

went over in accustomed maner : and yet for the curtesie of his nature, desired to speake with him.

4 But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the starte of the unknowne Knight, he likewise made his spurres claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he perceyved the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the courteous *Amphialus* woulde not let his Launce descende, but with a gallant grace, ranne over the heade of his there-in friended enemy: and having stopped his horse, and with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Windowe where he thought *Philoclea* might stand, he perceyved the Knight had lighted from his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune, as having mist his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and  
„ drew his sworde, esteeming victorie by advantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other comming eagerly toward him, he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more braverie then anger, drew unto him; and straight made their swords speake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But *Amphialus* (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) having both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke upon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; whẽ (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the punishment overgoe the offence) he stept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (said he) you may easely see, that it pleaseth God to favour my cause; employ your valour against them that wish you hurte: for my part, I have not deserved hate of you. Thou lvest false traytor, saide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But *Amphialus*, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (said hee) onely couragious in discourtesie; thou shalt soone see whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gave him, a great wounde upon his necke, and closing with him overthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mortally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his



helmet, with intention to make him give himselfe the lye, for having so saide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell 5 about the shoulders of the overcome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was *Parthenia*, the unfortunatelic vertuous wife of *Argalus*: her beautie then even in despite of the passed sorrow, or comming death, assuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, having with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweetly swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striving by little and little to get upon the rosinesse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alabaster, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a river of purest redde, there an Iland of perfittest white, each giving lustre to the other; with the sweete countenāce (God-knowes) full of an unaffected languishing: though these thinges to a grosly conceaving sense might seeme disgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new fashion, which all looked-upon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did evē encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenes, so as *Amphialus* was astonished with grieve, compassion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him unfortunate in victory.

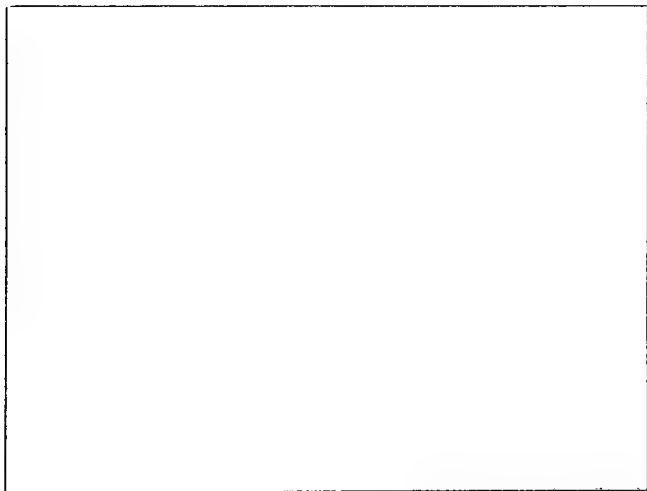
Therefore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet; kneeling 6 down unto her, & with teares testifying his sorrow, he offred his (by himselfe accursed) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But *Parthenia* (who had inward messingers of the desired deathes approach) looking upon him, and streight turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse object, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from so sweete a bodie) did faintly deliver, Sir (saide she) I pray you (if prayers have place in enemies) to let my maides take my body untouched by you: the onely honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I have no honour of you. *Argalus* made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I have of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the service which I desired. There rests nothing now, but

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

that I go live with him, since whose death I have done nothing but die. Then pawsing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselfe, O sweete life, welcome (saide she) nowe feele I the bandes untied of the cruell death, which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunswere for me, that my thoughts have not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were deprived of *Argalus*. I come, my *Argalus*, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall love, we may love eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there *Atropos* cut off her sentence: for with that, casting up both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heaven, which left the bodie in so heavenly a demeanure.

7 But *Amphialus* (with a hart oppressed with grieve, because of her request) withdrew himselfe, but the Judges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while disarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remediles wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceived it; death being able to divide the soul, but not the beauty frō that body. But whē the infallible tokens of death assured thē of their losse, one of the women would have killed her selfe, but that the squire of *Amphialus* perceaving it, by force held her. Others that had as strong passions, though weaker resolution, fell to cast dust upon their heads, to teare their garments: all falling upon, and crying upon their sweet mistres; as if their cries could perswade the soul to leave the celestially happines, to come again into the elemēts of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to them: another time accursing themselves, that they had obeyed her, they having bene deceaved by her words, who assured thē, that it was revealed unto her, that she should have her harts desire in the battaile against *Amphialus*, which they wrongly understood. Then kissing her cold hands and feet, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who was their world. The very heavens semed, with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet) could not choose but deliver it in lamentable accents, & in such sort went it quickly all over the Campe: & as if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so

hard, but was subject to that contagion; the rarenes of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, *Basilus* himselfe came foorth, and brought foorth the faire *Gynecia* with him, who was gone into the campe under colour of visiting her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed *Zelmane* was the Sainct, to which her pilgrimage was entended: cursing, envying, blessing, and in her harte kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they with *Philanax*, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph over Death, conveying that excellent body (wherto *Basilus* himself would needes bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant *Argalus* lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Love: giving order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Upon which, *Basilus* himself caused this Epitaphe to be written.



# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 17.

<sup>1</sup> *The remorse of Amphialus for his last deede, and lasting destinie.*

<sup>2</sup> *His reverent respect in love.* <sup>3</sup> *His mothers ghostly counsell to a rape.*

**T**Hen with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayses, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against *Amphialus*: who (poore Gentleman) had therefore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous harte, which would have grieved but to have heard the like adventure, was rent with remembring himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so farre temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many peeces (which after-wardes he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to serve the noble exercise of chivalrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulness of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restles minde, as to avoyd all companie, the sight whereof was tedious unto him. And then melancholie (onely riche in unfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the mishappes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but a presage of following miserie; and to his harte (alredie overcome by sorrowfulness) even trifling misfortunes came, to fill up the rolle of a grieved memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himselfe from the enjoying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: untill his mother (who never knew what love meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with loving earnestnes to lay a kinde chiding upon him, because he would suffer the weakenesse of sorow, to conquere the strength of his vertues; he did with a broaken peecemeale speach (as if the tempest of passion unorderly

blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the evils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of *Philoxenus* and *Parthenia*, wherein he found himselfe hated of the ever-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall love to *Philoclea*: to whom he had so governed himselfe, as one that could neither conquere, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slave, and of the other a jaylor: and with all, almost up-brayding unto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding *Philoclea* nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him unworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentiful cause) making him 2 see, that of his other griefes there was little or no faulte in him selfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no grieve in him; when she came to the head of the sore, indeed seeing that she could not patch up her former promises (he taking a desperate deafnesse to all delaying hopes) she confest plainly, that she could prevaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by seeking to have that by praier, which he should have taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an untimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might commaund, puffing thẽ up by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superioritie, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said *Amphialus*) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out these eies then they shal looke upon the heavenly *Philoclea*, but as upō a heavē, whence they have their light, & to which they are subject, if they will power down any influēces of cōfort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called unto me, let me languish, & wither with languishing, & grieve with withering, but never so much as repine with never so much grieving. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be,, a tyrant, but true-love where it is indeed, it is a servant.,, Accursed more then I am, may I be, if ever I did approach her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reverence, as I burned in a vehement desire. Did ever mans eye looke

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

thorough love upō the majesty of vertue, shining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captive? & is it the stile of a captive, to write, *Our will and pleasure*?

3 Tush, tush sonne (said *Cecropia*) if you say you love, but withall you feare; you feare lest you should offend; offend? & how know you, that you should offend? because she doth denie: denie? Now by my truth; if your sadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negative in a womans mouth. My  
 1 „ sonne, beleeve me, a womā, speaking of women: a lovers modesty among us is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shall never proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you cōmand your souldier to march formost, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? love is your Generall: he bids you dare: & will *Amphialus* be a dastard? Let examples serve: doo you thinke *Theseus* should ever have gotten *Antiope* with sighing, and crossing his armes? he ravished her, and ravished her that was an *Amazon*, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnes above the nature of a woman; but having ravished her, he got a child of her. And  
 — I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of both sides. *Iole* had her owne father killed by *Hercules*, & her selfe ravished, by force ravished, & yet ere long this ravished, and unfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin upon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the ravisher, that she could not but delight in those weapōs of ravishing. But above all, mark *Helen* daughter to *Jupiter*, who could never brooke her manerly-wooing *Menelaus*, but disdained his humblenes, & lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing *Paris*, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? *Menelaus* takes hart; he recovers her by force; by force carries her home; by force inioies her; and she, who could never like him for serviceablenesse, ever after loved him for violence. For what can be more agreeable, then upon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to joyne a deare delight with a just excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me ô woman-kinde for revealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we

thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at lest of furie. Truly I have knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; never wonne; because they did over-suspiciously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought under by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could use that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature gives to men above women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse unto you) in our very creatiō we are servants: and who prayseth his servaunts shall never be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will have him yeelde; the same fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horseman. Awake thy spirits (good *Amphialus*) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gottē. Thinke, she would not strive, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my *Amphialus*, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeve me upon my word) a woman is a woman.

## CHAP. 18.

- <sup>1</sup> *The forsaken Knights desie.* <sup>2</sup> *Amphialus answers.* <sup>4</sup> *The one and others armour and imprese.* <sup>5</sup> *The issue of their quarrell.* <sup>6</sup> *Their heroicall monomachy on horse,* <sup>7</sup> *and foot.* <sup>8</sup> *Their breathings,* <sup>9</sup> *& reencounters.* <sup>10</sup> *Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white.* <sup>11</sup> *The supply of both sides to cary away the breathles Knights.* <sup>12</sup> *The Blackknights grieves.*

**A***mphialus* was aboute to answere her, when a Gentlemā of his made him understande, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter unto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

**T**O thee *Amphialus* of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wisheth health, and courage, that by my hand thou maiest receyve punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haste proudly begun, and accursedly main-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*teyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltinesse) meete thee in thy Iland, in such order, as hath by the former beene used: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable choise in any of them; so as thou do perfourme the substaunce. Make me such answer as may shew that thou hast some taste of honour: and so I leave thee, to live till I meete thee.*

*Amphialus* read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed even to cōdemne him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoever the dulnes of Melancholy would have languishingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (unused to such injuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answer.

2 **F***orsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answer you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expecting weake blowes, where I finde so strong wordes. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before prooffe teache you, that of my life you have made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.*

3 This being written, and delivered, the messenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his *Patrons*. Which *Amphialus* accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate dissuasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, joyned together with pretious stones, as it was a brave raggednesse, and a riche povertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had given it a rustie shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceive was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsomnesse, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his devise, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and upon the shadow



with a speech signifying, that it *onely* was barrd from injoying that, whereof it had his life: or, *From whose I am bannished*. In his creste he caried *Philocleas* knives, the onely token of her forwarder favour.

So past he over into the Iland, taking with him the two 4 brothers of *Anaxius*; where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liverie, as blacke, as sorrowe it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Ravens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselves one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysonous furie of the combatt. His *Impresa* was a *Catoblepta* which so long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathie) wants her light. The worde signified that *The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light*. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentaunce. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not having so much as one starre to give light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would have thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their birth-right in that sorie inheritance.

Which aliance of passions so moved *Amphialus* (alredy 5 tender-minded by the afflictions of Love) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsakē Knight, willing to have put off his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then ever in like occasion) misgive him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (said he) because we are men, and should knowe reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious injurie to those Ladies, to whome all men owe service. You shall not fight with me (saide *Amphialus*) upon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Love to offer this force. I maintaine then (said the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to love. And that confesse I too (saide *Amphialus*) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

But no more unworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy love. Yes, more unworthy then my self (said the forsaken Knight) for though I deserve contempt, thou deservest both contempt, and hatred.

6 But *Amphialus* by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede mistaking other) that he was his rivall, forgot all minde of reconciliation, and having all his thoughts boüd up in choler, never staying either judge, trüpet, or his owne laüce, drew out his sword, & saying, Thou lvest false villaine, unto him; his words & blowes came so quick together, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thüder. But he föüd no barrē groüð of such seede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encrease, that though Reason and Amazement go rarely together, yet the most reasonable eies that saw it, founde reason to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Never game of death better plaid; never fury set it self forth in greater braverie. The curteous *Vulcan*, whē he wrought at his nowe more curteous wives request, *Ænæas* an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater sounde; then the swordes of those noble Knights did; they needed no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swords, & armours; ech side fetching new spirit from the castle window, and careful of keeping their sight, it was a matter of greater consideration in their combat, then either the advantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and wind (if the astonished eies of the beholders were not by the astonishment deceived) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eies discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind stirred, as if either for feare it would not come amög such blows, or with delight had his eies so busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both Love and Hatred conspired to sharpen their humours, that hard it was to say, whether Love with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gave the lowder alarum to their courages. Spite, rage, disdaine, shame, revenge, came waighting upon Hatred: of the other side came with love-longing Desire, both invincible Hope, and fearelesse Despaire, with rivallike Jealousie, which (although brought up within doores in the schoole of *Cupid*) woulde shewe themselves no lesse forward, then the other dustie bande of *Mars*, to make themselves notable in the

notablenes of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, unacquainted with Losse, but assured trust to overcome, and good experience howe to overcome: nowe seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now unlooked-for parting one from the other, to win advantage by an advantageous retourne. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preventing came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and suffering wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffering. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to devoure more: so the more they strake, the more unsatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places stayning the blacke, as if it would give a more lively coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the unquiet hart of *Amphialus*, that he resolved to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise upon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hande; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And *Amphialus* used the favour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came unto himselfe: But then who could have seene him, might wel have discerned shame in his cheekes, and revenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth together with rage, he came running upon *Amphialus*, reaching out his arme, which had gathered up the sword, meaning with that blow to have cleaved *Amphialus* in two. But *Amphialus* seeing the blow comming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherwith the forsaken Knight over-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

both of force, and fortune, he returned upon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence upon *Amphialus*, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose up before, almost overturned: which *Amphialus* perceaving, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gave a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, upon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell upon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was up on his feete againe, with brave gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

7 But the curteous *Amphialus* excused himselfe, for having (against his will) kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and use this poore advantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (said *Amphialus*) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse, because he would not have fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would have mollified the noble harte of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the Jaylor of his mistres: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmest bonde of good nature; and therefore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne unto him, re-entring into as cruel a fight, as eye did ever see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keep their stomakes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselves) they did. Nor ever glutton by the chāge of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might have bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would have thought they had had their fill alredy. *Amphialus* being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before; his shield at the uttermost length of his arme; his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whē he strake, which came so thick, as if every blow would strive to be foremost, his arme seemed still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skil, unlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweene thē to any thing that *Amphialus*

attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conveighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not strive with nature: shunning rather thẽ warding his blowes; like a cūning mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne, and strēgth of the Bul; fights low to get his proper advātage; answering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was seconde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge, the thrusts thicke, and the avoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being cōquered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a blow, that he made *Amphialus* put knee to the ground, without any humblenes. But when he felt himselfe stricken downe, and saw himselfe stricken downe by his rivall, then shame seemed one arme, and disdaine another; fury in his eyes, and revenge in his hart; skill and force gave place, & they tooke the place of skil & force: with so unwearable a manner, that the forsaken Knight was also driven to leave the streame of cunning, and give himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdaine to finde themselves so matched.

What (said *Amphialus* to himselfe) am I *Amphialus*, before 8 whom so many monsters & Gyants have falne dead, when I onely sought causelesse adventures? and can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of *Philoclea*, and fighting for *Philoclea*? or since I lost my liberty, have I lost my courage? have I gotten the hart of a slave, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against me in the sight of *Philoclea*, could it resist me? O beast, one man resistes thee; thy ryvall resists thee: or am I indeed *Amphialus*? have not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) succeeded into his place? Of the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fel out with himself; Hast thou brokẽ (said he to himselfe) the cōmādemēt of thy only Princesse to come now into her presēce, & in her presēce to prove thy self a coward? Doth *Asia* and *Ægypt* set up Trophes unto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble *Barsanes*, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that slew thee, should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable *Pyrocles*, more grieved wilt thou be with thy friends shame, thẽ with thine owne imprisonment, when thou shalt know how

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

little I have bene able to doo for the deliverie of thee, and those heavenlie Princesses. Am I worthie to be friend to the most valourous Prince that ever was entituled valourous, and shewe my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed *Musidorus*, worthie for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheephooke again, since thou canst use a sword no better.

- 9 Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their over-sharpe humors; like the Lion, that beates himselfe with his owne taile, to make himselfe the more angrie. These thoughtes indeede not staying, but whetting their angrie swordes, which now had put on the apparraile of Crueltie: they bleeding so abundantly, that every bodie that sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted not in themselves: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common sense from bringing any message of their case to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make known their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of so violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in stead of bloud, and making the minde minister spirites to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte upward by the force of the bowe, though by his owne nature he would goe downward. The forsaken Knight had the more wounds, but *Amphialus* had the soarer; which the other (watchinge time and place) had cōningly geven unto him. Who ever saw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make unto himselfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not bragge of. *Amphialus* seemed to excell in strength, the forsaken Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones strength excel in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in strength: but now, strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excesse of courage only maintayned the fight. Three times had *Amphialus* with his mightie blowes driven the forsaken Knight to go staggering backward, but every one of those times he requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse. And now, whether he had cause, or that over-much confidence (an over-forward scholer of unconquered Courage) made him think he had cause, he begā to persuade himself he had the advātage of the combat, though the advantage he toke himselfe

to have, was onely that he should be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as unsecrete as Love) could not conceale, but drawing himself a little back frō him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah *Amphialus* (said the forsakē knight) this third time thou<sup>8</sup> shalt not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy injury, & my malice; and pay for the cruelty thou shewedst in killing the noble *Argalus*, & the fair *Parthenia*. In troth (said *Amphialus*) thou art the best knight that ever I fought withal, which would make me willing to graūt thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most against my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And upon the worde wayted a blow, which parted his shield into two peeces; & despising the weak resistance of his alredie brokē armor, made a great breach into his hart side, as if he would make a passage for his love to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life<sup>9</sup> in those champions. For, the forsaken Knight comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the force of the blow, strake *Amphialus* upon the bellie, so horrible a woūd, that his guts came out withall. Which *Amphialus* perceaving (fearing death, onely because it should come with overthrow) he seemed to conjure all his strength for one moments service; and so, lifting up his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight upō the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a notable service before it died) it prevayled so, even in the instant of breaking, that the forsaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forgetting both love and hatred: and *Amphialus* (finding him self also in such weaknes, as he looked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enjoy it, puld up his visar, meaning with his dagger to give him death; but in stead of death, he gave him life: for, the aire so revived his spirits, that comming to himself, and seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke *Amphialus* by the thigh, & together rose himselfe, and overturned him. But *Amphialus* scrambled up againe, both now so weake indeede, as their motions rather seemed the afterdrops to a storme, then any matter of great furie.

But *Amphialus* might repent himselfe of his wilfull breaking

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

his good sword : for, the forsaken Knight (having with the extremitie of justly-conceived hate, and the unpitifulnes of his owne neere-threatning death, blotted out all complements of courtesie) let flie at him so cruelly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknes upon a weakned subject, proved such strēgh, that *Amphialus* having attempted in vaine, once or twice to close with him, receaving wound upō wound, sent his whole burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in standing: geving no other tokens of himself, then as of a man even ready to take his oath to be Deathes true servant.

10 Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceaved, not recking law of armes, nor use of chivalrie, they flew in to defende their friende, or revenge their losse of him. But they were foorthwith encountred with the two brave cōpanions of the forsaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasant garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruites, cunningly beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feeding in a pleasant field, with this word, *Without feare, or envie*. And therfore was called the Knight of the sheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in starres, which made of cloath of silver, and silver spangles, each way seemed to cast many aspects. His device was the very Pole it selfe, about which many starres stirring, but the place it selfe left void. The word was, *The best place yet reserved*. But these foure Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce combat: the forsaken Knight himselfe not able to helpe his side, but was driven to sit him downe, with the extreame faintnesse of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety upon ruine, gave new appetites, to the almost glutted eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsides, no advantage being yet to be seene; onely the Knight of the sheepe seeming most deliver, and affecting most all that viewed him, when a company of souldiers sent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Ilande: and all came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was utterly unable to defend himselfe.

11 But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull



courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forsaken Knight (who had fainted so long till he had lost the feeling of faintnesse) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers unknighly helped them; till *Philanax* (who watchfully attended such traitorous practises) sent likewise over, both by boate and swimming, so choise a number as did put most of the other to the sworde. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the bravest of them, carrying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather have died, then have left behind them.

So was the forsaken Knight (layed upon clokes) carried home 12 to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be knowen, covering him from any bodies eyes, conveyed him to their owne tente: *Basilus* himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with feare to displease him, who had fought so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour upon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayses to the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteemed Knight in the world: every bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themselves. But he him selfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to him selfe, whome the impudentest backbiter would not so have wröged. For his courage (used to use victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised him selfe, not onely the conquest of him, but the scaling of the walles, and delivery of *Pamela*, though he had done beyond al others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne; that he hated to looke upon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought him selfe unworthy, that he besought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a castle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and never be knowne till he made successe excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They lovingly obeyed him, leaving *Basilus* and all the campe very sorrie for the parting of these three unknowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had reposed greatest trust of victory.

CHAP. 19.

<sup>1</sup>*The state of the leaguer, and beleaguered.* <sup>2</sup>*The agonies of Amphialus.* <sup>3</sup>*The wit-craft of Cecropia, to threaten Basilius with the three Ladies death.* <sup>4</sup>*Kalanders compassion.* <sup>5</sup>*Philanax-his counter-counsell.* <sup>6</sup>*The breaking up the siege.*

I **B**Ut they being gone, *Basilius* and *Philanax* gave good order to the strengthning of the siege, fortifying themselves, so as they feared no more any such suddaine onset, as that of *Anaxius*. And they within (by reasō of *Anaxius* hurt, but especially of *Amphialus*-his) gave themselves onely to diligent watch & ward, making no sallies out, but committing the principall trust to *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus*. For *Anaxius* was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for *Amphialus*, his body had such wounds, and gave such wounds to his mind, as easily it coulde not be determined, whether death or he made the greater hast one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the possession of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted servaunts) came waiting of it, perswading nothing but the giving over of it selfe to destruction. They laide before his eyes his present case, painting every piece of it in moste ugly colours: they shewed him his love wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by overthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his desiring, he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant *Amphialus*, (would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy selfe the lover of *Philoclea*, that hast neither shewed thy self a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law cā quite, nor grace have pitie of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou doost me, to give me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercise of ruine? I would sweete *Philoclea*, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes: & then perchaunce with some sigh thou wouldest have cōfessed, thou hadst lost a worthy servaunt. But now, caitife that I am, what ever I have done, serves but to builde up my rivals glory. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offring to teare

up his wounds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsell of phisitions, that his perplexed mother was driven to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence upon himself, upon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitions: his melancholy detesting all cōpany, so as not the very surgeons nor servants durst speak unto him in doing him service: only he had praied his mother, as she tendered his life, she would procure him grace; and that without that, she would never come at him more.

His mother, who had cōfined all her love only unto him, <sup>3</sup> set only such about him, as were absolutely at her cōmandement, whom she forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cured, but as she from time to time should instruct them: 'she (for her selfe) being resolved, now she had the government of al things in her owne hands, to satisfie her sonnes love, by their yeelding, or satisfie her owne revenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer frō outward force, she sent a messenger to the campe, to denounce unto *Basilus*, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut of before his eies. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters & *Zelmane* to be led unto the wals, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be seene by *Basilus*: and there caused thẽ to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, til answeare came from *Basilus*. A sight full of pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherwith Nature can beautifie any body: *Pamela* giving sweetnes to majesty, *Philoclea* enriching noblenes with humblenes, *Zelmane* setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subjected to the basest injury of unjust Fortune. One might see in *Pamela* a willingnessse to die, rather then to have life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely disdaine would sparkle out of her Princely eies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In *Philoclea* a prety feare came up, to endamaske her rosie cheekes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dismaiednes: or if she were dismaied, it was more for *Zelmane*, then for her selfe; or if

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

more for her selfe, it was because *Zelmane* should loose her. As for *Zelmane*, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not adventure on her well knowne valour, especially amōg people which perchāce might be moved by such a spectacle to some revolte) she was the true image of over-maistred courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For her breast swelled withall, the bloud burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eies cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heavens, for suffering such an injury. The lookers on were so moved withal, as they misliked what themselves did, and yet still did what themselves misliked. For some, glad to rid themselves of the dangerous annoyaunce of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to *Amphialus*-his succession (whereon they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffering because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their owne conscience) wicked enterprise.

- 4 But whē this message was brought to *Basilus*, & that this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit for him to beleeeve it, he called unto him his chief coūcelors: amōg which, those he chiefly trusted were *Philanax* and *Kalander* (lately come to the campe at *Basilus* cōmandement, & in him selfe wery of his solitary life, wanting his sons presence, & never having heard him his beloved gwestes since they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed *Kalander* to give him his advise: who spake much to this purpose. You cōmaund me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will keepe your wonted grave, & noble manner, to do nothing of importāce without coūcell, then that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to have any counsell: so as my speech shall rather be to cōfirme what you have alredy determined, thē to argue against any possibilitie of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will have your incomparable daughters live, or dye? whether since you be here to cause their deliverance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more unsensible, „ then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do therefore as I am sure you meane to doo, remove the

siege, and after seeke by practise, or other gētle meanes, to recover that which by force you cānot: & therof is indeed (whē it please you) more coūsel to be takē. Once, in extremi- ties the winning of time is the purchase of life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths cā befall unto you. A mā might use more words, if it were to any purpose to guild gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said no more, for he durst not attempt to perswade the marrying of his daughter to *Amphialus*, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But *Basilus* made signe to *Philanax*, who stāding a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus delivered his opiniō.

If ever I could wish my faith untried, & my counsell un-5 trusted, it should be at this time, whē in truth I must cōfesse I would be cōtent to purchase silēce with discredit. But since you cōmand, I obey: onely let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whō I give coūsel. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the grave and (I well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord *Kalander* had come in good time whē you first tooke armes, before al your subjects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spēt, & before they were drivē to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you away, why did you take armes? since you might be sure when ever they were in extremitie they would have recourse to this threatning? and for a wise man to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word overthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in reason wil doo. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promised you if you removed your siege, they would honorably send home your daughters? would you be angled by their promises? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promise,, binds faith more then threatning. But indeede a Prince of,, judgemēt ought not to consider what his enemies promise, or,, threaten, but what the promisers and threatners in reasō wil,, do: & the nearest cōjecture therunto, is what is best for their,, own behoofe to do. They threatē if you remove not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remove, what surety have you, but that they will kil thē, since if the purpose be to cut off

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

al impediments of *Amphialus*-his ambitiō, the same cause wil continue when you are away; & so much the more encouraged, as the revenging power is absent, & they have the more oportunitie to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their security onely, the same cause wil bring forth the same effect: & for their security they wil preserve thē. But it may be said, no man knows what desperate folkes will do: it is true, and as true that no reason nor policie can prevent what „ desperate folks wil do: & therfore they are amōg those dangers, „ which wisdome is not to reckē. Only let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the Ladies may be freely delivered. And let them that are your subjects, trust you that are their Prince: doo not you subject your selfe to trust them, who are so untrusty as to be manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their th[r]eatning to remove your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you unto, still by the same threatning? since then if Love stir them, love will keep them from murdering what they love; and if Ambition provoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shewes and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to move a worthy mans conceit; which must still cōsider what in reasō they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do wel to prevent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man „ fals into it, while so good a way as you may offer, is open unto „ thē. In sū, you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought „ with the eye of wisdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of „ justice to set downe all private conceits, in comparison of what „ for the publike is profitable.

6 He would have proceeded on, whē *Gynecia* came rūning in amazed for her daughter *Pamela*, but mad for *Zelmane*; & falling at *Basilius* feet, besought him to make no delay: using such gestures of cōpassiō instead of stopped words, that *Basilius*, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for *Zelmane*, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: so as to rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in speed away; discharging his soul-

diors: only leaving the authority, as before, in *Philanax* his hands, he himselfe went with *Gynecia* to a strong Castle of his, where he took coüsell how first to deliver *Zelmane*, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitalitie moved him; and for that purpose sent divers messengers to trafficke with *Cecropia*.

CHAP. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *The sweete resistance of the true sisters <sup>1</sup> to the sower assaultes of their false Aunt. The whipping of <sup>3</sup> Philoclea <sup>5</sup> and Pamela.*

<sup>4</sup> *The patience of both <sup>6</sup> and passions for their lovers.*

**C***ecropia* by this meanes rid of the present daunger of the <sup>1</sup> siege (desiring *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus* to take the care, till their brother recovered, of revictualling, and furnishing the Citie, both with men and what els wanted, against any new occasion should urge them, she her selfe disdaining to harken to *Basilus*, without he would grant his daughter in mariage to her son, which by no means he would be brought unto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable graunt to her sonne; whereupon she well found no lesse then his life depended. Therfore for a while she attēpted all meanes of eloquent praying, and flattering perswasion, mingling sometimes gifts, somtimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or undermining, would best winn the castle of their Resolution. And ever as much as she did to *Philoclea*, so much did she to *Pamela*, though in manner sometimes differing, as she found fit to levell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowlinesse. For though she knew her sonnes harte had wholly given it selfe to *Philoclea*, yet seeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, she hoped, a faire grant would recover the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly entēding the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchased.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. *Pamelaes* <sup>2</sup> determination was built upō so brave a Rock, that no shot of hers could reach unto it: and *Philoclea* (though humbly seated)

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

was so invironed with sweete rivers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor undermined : her witty perswasions had wise answeres ; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes ; her threatnings repelled with disdaine in the one, & patience in the other ; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as *Cecropia* in nature violent ; cruel, because ambitious ; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not prevaile with girles, as she counted them ; lastly, drawne on by her love to her son, & held up by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fel to cōfirme some of her threatned effects : first withdrawing al cōfort, both of servāts, & service from thē. But that those excellēt Ladies had bene used unto, evē at home, & thē fōūd in thēselves how much good the hardnes of educatiō doth to the resistāce of misery. Then dishonorably using them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al ornamēts, so now the same cōsideratiō made thē attend al diseasefulnes. Then stil, as she found those not prevaile, would she go forward with giving them terrors, sometimes with noices of horror, sometimes with suddaine frightings in the night, when the solitary darkenesse thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to all Vertue, and Love resisted, strengthned one by the other, when each found it selfe overvehemently assaulted. *Cecropia* still sweetning her fiercenesses with faire promises, if they would promise faire ; that feeling evill, and seing a way far better, their minds might the sooner be mollified. But they that could not taste her behaviour, when it was pleasing, indeed could worse now, when they had lost al taste by her injuries.

- 3 She resolving all extremities, rather then faile of cōquest, pursued on her rugged way : letting no day passe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies : and still swelling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried her to absolute tyrānies, so that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for envie-sake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countenāce impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweet *Philoclea*, as if so many Kites



should come about a white Dove, & matching violent gestures with mischievous threatnings, she having a rod in her hãd (like a fury that should carry wood to the burning of *Dianas* temple) fel to scourge that most beautifull body: Love in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds up to hide his face from so pitiful a sight; & the very stone wals did yeeld drops of sweate for agonie of such a mischiefe: each senselesse thing had sense of pittie; onely they that had sense, were senseles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping *Cupid* told his weeping mother, that he was sorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might never know so lamentable a worke. *Philoclea*, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as soon as her wearines rather then compassion, gave her respite) kneeled dow[n]e to *Cecropia*, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witnesse she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, and not please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common course of humanitie cannot move you, nor the having me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remẽbrance (how miserable so ever now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the love (you have often tolde me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought inough for me; I have not lived so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither have my faults, I hope, bene so many, but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemye, when but death is desired. I crave but that, and as for the graunting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being every day furtherof-minded from becõming his wife, who useth me like a slave. But that in stead of getting grace renewed againe *Cecropias*, fury: so that (excellent creature) she was newly againe tormented by those hellish monsters: *Cecropia* using no other words, but that she was a proud and ungratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her selfe she would not conceive it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, 4  
hammered upon by an ilfavoured Smith) she abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reserving her for more, then

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

meaning to end, they left her to an uncomfortable leysure, to consider with her selfe her fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and hopeles, since *Zelmane* was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of miserie, that she knew not how unworthilie her Angell, by these devils was abused: but wanted (God wot) no stings of grieffe, when those words did but strike upon her hart, that *Philoclea* was a captive, and she not able to succour her. For well she knew the confidence *Philoclea* had in her, and well she knew, *Philoclea* had cause to have confidence: and all troden under foot by the wheele of  
6 senselesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliver knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with other, though themselves perceaved it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of their owne loving fancies. And that was the onely wordly thing, whereon *Philoclea* rested her minde, that she knewe she should die beloved of *Zelmane*, and shoulde die, rather then be false to *Zelmane*. And so this most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of anothers paine; and almost forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the paine of her minde, she wasted, even longing for the conclusion of her tedious tragedie.

5 But for a while she was unvisited, *Cecropia* employing her time in using the like crueltie upon *Pamela*, her harte growing not onely to desire the fruite of punishing them, but even to delight in the punishing them. But if ever the beames of perfection shined through the clowdes of affliction, if ever Vertue tooke a bodie to shewe his (els unconceaveable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reason taught her there was no resistance, (for to just resistance first her harte was enclined) then with so heavenly a quietnes, and so gracefull a calmenes, did she suffer the divers kindes of torments they used to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and asked whether her harte woulde yeelde: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no love, and yet coulde not but be lovelie. And then, Beastly woman (saide she) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canst upon me: for I know thy power is not unlimited. Thou maist well wracke this sillie bodie, but me thou canst never overthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the

pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame upon thy detestable tyranny.

And so, in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, 4 while *Cecropia* tried as many sorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sonne) *Pamela* remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could doo, as grieved with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew to *Musidorus*. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how grievously *Musidorus* would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet *Musidorus*-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Love did easlier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her self, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenes of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sory for his sorow: & she that long had prayed for the vertuous joyning themselves together, now thinking to die herself, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Live long my *Musidorus* (would she say) and let my name live in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Live long, that thou mayst love long the chaste love of thy dead *Pamela*. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might ever possesse his harte: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too unjust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worste, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of love.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 21.

<sup>1</sup>*Cecropias indurate tyrannies.* <sup>2</sup>*Her devise with the death of one to threaten another.* <sup>3</sup>*Philoclea threatned, persisteth.* <sup>4</sup>*The execution done in sight of Philoclea & Zelmane.* <sup>5</sup>*Philocleas sorrow for her sister.*

**S**O these diamonds of the worlde whom Nature had made to be preciousely set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanship, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the uttermost distres that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spite invent: *Cecropia* dayly in one or other sorte punishing thē, still with her evill torments giving them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the sorriest torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her appointmēt. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enhabled to doo; strength growing upō the worke, so as what at first would have seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by thēselves, with the use of suffering their minds gat the habit of suffring so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before hād they would be victorious, & which in the suffering was painfull, being suffered, was a trophe to it self: whereby *Cecropia* found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance have perswaded them to have visited her sonne, and have given him some com-forte in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the cōfines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would never otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most unjust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could ever make them know.

**2** This made the poison swell in her cankred brest, perceiving that (as in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now having run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very

glory in evill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger; making their tēder harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therefore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doo most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatning wordes to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death, should perceive, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leave so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, *Cecropia* went to *Philoclea*, and tolde 3 her, that now she was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part, though she found her hard harted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of loving meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could prevaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity; she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that her sonne might be with time satisfied with the love of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deathes should serve for an example to the other, that despising worthy,, folks was more hurtfull to the despiser, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially affected her, & that in her owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her, thē she had deserved, she would begin with her sister; who that afternoone should have her head cut of before her face; if in the mean time one of them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of unkindnes, she bad her looke for no other, nor lōger time thē she told her. There was no assault givē to the sweet *Philocleas* mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to all paines and daungers of her selfe, foresight with (his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence; now with the love she bare her sister, she was driven to a stay, before she determined: but long she staid not, before this reason did shine unto her, that since in her selfe she preferred death before such a base servitude, love did teach her to wish the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

& looking sideward upon the groūd, Do what you wil (said she) with us: for my part, heaven shall melt before I be removed. But if you will follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for praiers for my sake I have felt how little they prevaile) let my death first serve for example to win her, who perchaunce is not so resolved against *Amphialus*, and so shall you not onely justly punish me (who indeede doo hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may moove you, you shall doo more vertuously in preserving one most worthy of life, and killing an other most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in steed of a peevish unhappie creature, that I am, you shall blesse your sonne with the most excellent woman in all praise-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But *Cecropia*, (who had already set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termes, & countenance, told her, that she should not neede to woo death over-egerly: for if her sister going before her did not teach her witt, herselfe should quickly follow. For since they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatning might prevayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe houres in the hall of that castle.

- 4 A place indeed overfit for so unfit a matter: for being so stately made that the bottome of it being even with the ground, the rooffe reached as hie as any part of the castle, at either ende it had convenient lodgeings. In the one end was (one storie from the ground) *Philocleas* abode, in the other of even height, *Pamelas*, and *Zelmanes* in a chamber above her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built stone, as one could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a litle windowe to looke into the hall, but because the sisters should not have so much comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outsides) curtaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their sight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the curtaynes were withdrawn from before the windowes of *Zelmane*, and of *Philoclea*: a sufficient challenge to call their eyes to defende themselves in such an incounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from above her eyes to her

lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all covered with crimson velvet. But neither *Zelma*, nor *Philoclea* needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparell she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable *Pamela*. Whereunto the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gave sufficient testimonie to their astonnished senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and so lefte by her unkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to speake somewhat (whereunto *Philoclea*, poore soule, earnestly listned, according to her speach even minded to frame her minde, her harte never till then almost wavering to save her sisters life) before the unfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones speech, and the others attention, with making his sworde doo his cruell office upon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittillesse sworde had such pittie of so pretious an object, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little availed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonnished withall, the cruell villayne forced the sworde with another blowe to divorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did 5 overrun *Philocleas* sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her senses, but first onely oppress her with a storme of amazement) but when her eies saw that they did see, as condemning themselves to have seene it, they became weary of their owne power of seing: & her soule then drinking up woe with great draughts, she fel downe to deadly traïces: but her waiting jaylors with cruell pittie brought lothed life unto her; which yet many times tooke his leave as though he would indeed depart: but when he was staid by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exercised her mourning speech. *Pamela* my sister, my sister *Pamela*, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. *Pamela* never more shall I see thee: never more shall I enjoy thy sweet companie, and wise counsell. Alas, thou arte gone to beautifie heaven, and haste thou lefte me here, who have nothing good in me, but that I did ever love thee, and ever will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for most unfortunate: let it never be mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete *Pamela*; that head is stricken of, where onely wise-dome might be spoken withall; that bodie is destroied, which was the living booke of vertue. Deare *Pamela*, how haste thou lefte me to all wretchednesse, and miserie? Yet while thou livedst, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O *Pamela*, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my mother, and love thee more then my selfe? Never more shall I lie with thee: never more shall we bathe in the pleasant river together: never more shall I see thee in thy shephearde apparell. But thou arte gone, and where am I? *Pamela* is dead; and live I? My God, And with that she fell againe in a sounne, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to her selfe againe; but being come to her-selfe, Alas (said she) unkind women, since you have given me so many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods sake let me goe, and excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my *Pamela*, whom ever I sought to follow. Alas *Pamela*, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promise, I shall treade thine owne steppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be most unhappie in my selfe, and yet more unhappie in others? But ô that a thousand more miseries had happened unto me, so thou haddest not dyed: *Pamela*, my sister *Pamela*. And so, like lamentable *Philomela*, complained she the horrible wrong done to her sister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorrow, yet bredde it a wearinesse of her sorrow: so as onely leaving one to prevent any harme she should doo her selfe, the rest went away, consulting againe with *Cecropia*, how to make profite of this their late bloodie act.



## CHAP. 22.

<sup>1</sup>*Cecropias pollicie to use Zelmanes intercession.* <sup>2</sup>*Zelmanes selfe-conflict.* <sup>3</sup>*Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye.* <sup>4</sup>*Philocleas resolution rather to dye then dissemble.* <sup>5</sup>*At sight of Philocleas head Zelmanes extasies,* <sup>7</sup>*desperate desaignes,* <sup>8</sup>*and comfortlesse complaints.*

IN the ende, that woman that used most to keep company <sup>1</sup> with *Zelmane*, told *Cecropia*, that she founde by many most sensible proofes in *Zelmane*, that there was never woman so loved another, as she loved *Philoclea*: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of *Cecropia*) had caused *Zelmanes* curtaines to be also drawne: because having the same spectacle that *Philoclea* had, she might stand in the greater feare for her, whom she loved so wel: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that devise: for never saw she creature so astonished as *Zelmane*, exceedingly sorry for *Pamela*, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedignes in feare for *Philoclea*. Therefore her advice was, she should cause *Zelmane* to come and speake with *Philoclea*. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was both likely to move *Zelmane* to perswade, and *Philoclea* to be perswaded. *Cecropia* liked wel of the counsell, and gave order to the same woman to go deale therein with *Zelmane*, and to assure her with othe, that *Cecropia* was determined *Philoclea* should passe the same way that *Pamela* had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremitie of her sonnes affection: which the woman did, adding therunto many (as she thought) good reasons to make *Zelmane* thinke *Amphialus* a fit match for *Philoclea*.

But *Zelmane* (who had from time to time understood the <sup>2</sup> cruell dealing they had used to the sisters, & now had her own eies wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused with-all (her courage still rebelling against her wit, desiring still with force to doo impossible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her cōceit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Love, & invincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not be, *Philoclea* should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieve her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

she drew it from his owne limits. But now *Philocleas* death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with smal delay to be suffred, or by the giving her selfe to another to be prevented, she was drivē to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night unto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine have desperatly lost a thousand lives for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in respect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to *Philocleas* death for any bargain. Then how to prevent the next degree to death (which was her being possest by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that *Philoclea* should pretend a yeelding unto *Cecropias* request; & so by speaking with *Amphialus*, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for *Zelmane*; who onely wisht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliver *Philoclea*: so little did both the mē, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe upon them from the hye topp of affections tower.

- 3 With that minde therefore (but first wel bound) she was brought to *Philoclea*, having alredy plotted out in her cōceite, how she would deale with her: & so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Love upon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, whō alredie the extreame sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine unoverthrowne by such enimies. But whē *Zelmane* was set downe by her, & the womē gone away (because she might be the better perswaded whē no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be perswaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without using their tongues to be his interpreters. At last *Zelmane* brake silence, but spake with the

onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas unfortunate wretch that I am, that I live to see this day. And I take heaven and earth to witnesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and grieve, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet *Philoclea* that had alredie dyed in *Pamela*, and of the other side had the heavines of her hart something quickned in the most beloved sight of *Zelma*, ghesse somewhat at *Zelma*'s minde; and therefore spake unto her in this sort. My *Pyrocles* (said she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought unto me for any good-will that is owed unto me: but (as I suppose) to make you perswade me to save my life with the ransome of mine honour: although no bodie should be so unfit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance you would have me live. Your honour? God forbid (said *Zelma*) that ever, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, til time, or my libertie might worke something for your service: this, if my astonished senses would give me leave, I would faine have perswaded you.

To what purpose my *Pyrocles*? (said *Philoclea*) of a miserable 4 time what gaine is there? hath *Pamela*'s example wrought no more in me? is a captive life so much worth? cā ever it goe out of these lips, that I love any other but *Pyrocles*? shal my tongue be so false a traitor to my hart, as to say I love any other but *Pyrocles*? And why should I do all this? to live? O *Pamela*, sister *Pamela*, why should I live? onely for thy sake *Pyrocles* I would live: but to thee I know too well I shal not live; and if not to thee, hath thy love so base allay, my *Pyrocles*, as to wish me to live? for dissimulation, my *Pyrocles*, my simplicitie is such, that I have hardly bene able to keepe a straight way; what shall I doo in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answer is required, and present performance upon the answer. Art thou so terrible, ô Death? No my *Pyrocles*; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the love of thee is heerein my chiefest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare *Pyrocles*, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot live with thee, I wil dye for thee. Onely

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

remember me deare *Pyrocles*; and love the remembrance of me: and if I may crave so much of thee, let me be thy last love, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature living) yet remember that my love was a worthy love. But *Pyrocles* was so overcome with sorrow (which wisdom & vertue made just in so excellent a Ladies case, full of so excellent kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weak they were to expresse his mind, & her merit: and therefore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of *Zelmanes* labour: & then *Zelma* warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in sum, desirous of delays. But *Philoclea* sweetly continuing constant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, *Zelma* was faine to ende. Yet craving an other times conference, she obtained it, & divers others; till at the last *Cecropia* found it was to no purpose, and therefore determined to follow her owne way. *Zelma* yet still desirous to win (by any meanes) respite, even wasted with sorrow, & uncertaine, whether in worse case in her presence, or absence, being able to do nothing for *Philocleas* succour, but by submitting the greatest corage of the earth to fall at the feete of *Cecropia*, and crave stay of their sentence till the uttermost was seene, what her perswasions might doo.

- 5 *Cecropia* seemed much to be moved by her importunitie, so as divers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent *Philoclea*: while *Zelma* suffred some hope to cherrish her mind, especially trusting upon the helpe of *Musidorus*, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter, till one morning a noise awaked *Zelma*, from whose over-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a little sleep: and streight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the wonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being left open ever since the last execution) seven or eight persons in a cluster upon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselves, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with blood, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull *Philoclea*. The horribleness of the mischief was such, as *Pyrocles* could not at first beleve his own senses,

but bent his woful eyes to discern it better: where too well he might see it was *Philocleas* selfe, having no veile, but beautie, over the face, which still appeared to be alive: so did those eyes shine, even as they were wont, and they were woont more then any other: and sometimes as they moved, it might well make the beholder think, that death therin had borrowed their beutie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearing a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a 6 sorow which then laid holde on *Pyrocles*, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyraunt heaven, traytor earth, blinde providence; no justice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a government? If it have, let it poure out all his mischiefes upòn me, and see whether it have power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? have I prayed for this? abhominable hande that did it; detestable devil that commaunded it; cursed light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that have seene it? And have I seen *Philoclea* dead, and doo I live? and have I lived, not to help her, but to talke of her? and stande I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguish, not having a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as ever he could, with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himself: but the haste to doo it, made the doing the slower. For, as he came to give the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible enough to strike him downe, and withall, to deprive him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he 7 thought he heard a voice, which cried, Revège, Revenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which used that voice to stay him from unnaturall murdering of him selfe; or that his wandering spiritess lighted upon that conceite, and by their weakenes (subject to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant servant Anger, stopped him from present destroying him selfe: yeelding, in reason and manhoode, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die upon her tomb. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloved head with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold, all covered over with skarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence, to mourn this mischiefe. But then, Sorrow having disperste it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could poure out his inward evill.

8 Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhappes they envie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mākind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any excede me in wofulnes. I do conjure you all, my senses, to accept no object, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Unhappie eyes, you have seene too much, that ever the light should be welcome to you: unhappie eares, you shall never heare the musicke of Musicke in her voice: unhappie harte, that hast lived to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest doo. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heaven; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why lived I, alas? Alas why loved I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heavens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is stricken. Sweet *Philoclea*, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my love; & hast thy love in me, & I wretched mā do live; I live, to die cōtinually, till thy revenge do give me leave to dy: & then dy I will, my *Philoclea*, my hart willinglie makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not looke upon thee, that gave the cruell blow: for no eye coule have abidden to see such beautie overthrowen by such mischiefe. Alas, why should they divide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leave, if I might have taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art

thou Hope which promisest never to leave a mā while he liveth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tel me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wishing. Love, be ashamed to be called Love: cruell Hate, unspeakable Hate is victorious over thee. Who is there now left, that can justifie thy tyrannie, and give reason to thy passion? O cruell divorce of the sweetest mariage that ever was in Nature: *Philoclea* is dead, and dead is with her all goodnesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. *Philoclea* is dead, and yet Life is not ashamed to cōtinue upon the earth. *Philoclea* is dead: O deadly word; which containeth in it selfe the uttermost of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall not be, before it be said.

CHAP. 23.

<sup>1</sup>*A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse unkindnesse.* <sup>2</sup>*His hardly knowing her.* <sup>3</sup>*Her unmasking of Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie.* <sup>4</sup>*Their medley of solace and sorowe.*

**T**Hen stopping his woordes with sighes, drowning his sighes in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations unto him: then throwing himselfe sometimes upon the floore, and sometimes upon the bedde: then up againe, till walking was wearisome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering foode, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weepe *Philoclea*, sigh *Philoclea*, and crie out *Philoclea*: till as it happened (at that time upon his bed) towarde the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garmēts; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life unto you. And I soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you have given me. Certainly (said she) an unkinde answer, and far

## THE COUNTEESSE OF PEMBROKES

unworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not unsutable to the rest of your behaviour. For most parte of this night I have hearde you (being let into your chamber, you never perceiving it, so was your minde estraunged from your senses) and have hearde nothing of *Zelmane*, in *Zelmane*, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out *Pyrocles*) that thou wert a man that usest these wordes unto me. I tell thee I am sorry: I tell thee I will be sory in despite of thee, and all them that would have me joyfull. And yet (replied she) perchaunce *Philoclea* is not dead, whom you so much bemone. I would we were both dead of that condition, said *Pyrocles*. See the folly of your passion (said she) as though you should be neerer to her, you being dead, and she alive; then she being dead, & you alive: & if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do you crie out for? not for her, who must have died one time or other; but for some fewe yeares: so as it is time, & this world that seeme so lovely things, and not *Philoclea* unto you. O noble Sisters (cried *Pyrocles*) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but babling, and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (said *Pyrocles*) for I wishe for nothing in my shorte life, but mischiefes, and combers: and I am content you shall be one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke your selfe a greatly priviledged person, if since the strongest buildings, and lastingest monarchies are subiect to end, onely your *Philoclea* (because she is yours) should be exempted. But indeede you bemone your selfe, who have lost a friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserved her honour, and lefte the miseries of this worlde. O womans philosophie, childish follie (said *Pyrocles*) as though if I do bemone my selfe, I have not reason to doo so, having lost more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be woorth unto me. Alas (said she) comforte your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when she had made them: you shall find many their superiours, and perchaunce such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will like better.

- 2 But that speech put all good māners out of the conceit of *Pyrocles*; in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to have striken her: but comming neere her (the morning then winning



the field of darknesse) he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of *Philoclea*; the same sweetnesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which carried into a divine astonishment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell (said he) well haste thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy selfe to mortall sense; for a more Angelicall forme could not have bene created for thee. Alas, even by that excellent beautie, so beloved of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause, that she, that heavenly creature, whose forme you have taken, should by the heavens be destined to so unripe an ende? Why should injustice so prevaile? Why was she seene to the world, so soone to be ravished from us? Why was she not suffered to live, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceive thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am *Philoclea*, the same *Philoclea*, so truely loving you, so truly beloved of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeede the soule of *Philoclea*, you have done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heaven could have given you a better. Then alas, why have you taken the paines to leave your blisfull seat to come to this place most wretched, to me, who am wretchednes it selfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to love your beauties? you know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I only stay, to be justly revenged of your unjust murtherers. Deare *Pyrocles* (said she) I am thy *Philoclea*, and as yet living: not murdered, as you supposed, and therefore to be comforted. And with that gave him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hande, seemed to his astraied powers so heavenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beliefe: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeelde; yet doubtfully to yeelde to this height of al comfort, that *Philoclea* lived: which witnessing with the teares of joy, Alas (said he) how shall I beleieve mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus unto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent *Pamela* beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) standing in a dishe of golde, too meane a shrine (God wote) for such a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you live? or if this be not so, how can I beleieve mine owne senses? and

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

if I can not beleeeve thẽ, why should I now beleeeve these blessed tidings they bring me?

3 The truth is (said she) my *Pyrocles*, that nether I (as you finde) nor yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischievously suttle *Cecropia* used slightes to make either of us thinke so of other. For, having in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked eloquence, to make eyther of us yeeld to her sonne, and seeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any grounde of us, nor yet the violent way she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could prevaile with us; at last, she made either of us thinke the other dead, and so hoped to have wrested our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and first she gave to mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as I thought) death: but indeede not my sister: it was onely *Artesia*, she who so cunningly brought us to this misery. Truly I am sorry for the poore Gentlewoman, though justly she be punished for her double falshood: but *Artesia* muffled so, as you could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparell (which they had taken from her under colour of giving her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy sake especially deare *Pyrocles*) could by no force, nor feare be won, they assayed the like with my sister, by bringing me downe under the scaffold, and (making me thrust my head up through a hole they had made therein) they did put about my poore necke a dishe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, so as having set bloud in it, you sawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes even willing to have done it in earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, so as scarcely I could breathe, much lesse speake: And truely if they had kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in steed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and seeking to see their issue of this practise, they found my noble sister (for the deare love she vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieved withall, that she willed them to doo their uttermost crueltie unto her: for she vowed, never to receive sustenance of them, that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of us, even given over, not like to live many houres longer, and my sister *Pamela*, rather worse then my selfe, (the strength of her harte worse bearing those indignities) the good woman *Cecropia* (with the same pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not

fatte inough for their eating) made us know her deceit, & let us come one to another; with what joye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; saving that we only thought our selves reserved to miseries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to have a more feeling sense of the tormentes she prepares for us. True it is, that one of my guardians would have me to beleeve, that this proceedes of my gentle cousin *Amphialus*: who having hearde some inckling that we were evill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he never rose since his last combat, and besought, & charged her upon all the love she bare him, to use us with all kindnesse: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if ever he understood for his sake, that I received further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not live an houre longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealte with; but that *Cecropia* keepes him from understanding thinges how they passe, onely having heard a whispering, and my selfe named, he had (of aboundaunce, forsooth, of honorable love) given this charge for us. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leave no mony unoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleeve any worde they say, but (my deare *Pyrocles*) even looke for the worste, and prepare my selfe for the same. Yet I must confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and moste sweete comforte of thee my *Pyrocles*. And so having leave, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a joy it was unto me, to heare you solemnise the funerals of the poore *Philoclea*? That I my selfe might live to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deere *Pyrocles*. That I saw death was not strong enough to divide thy love from me? O my *Pyrocles*, I am too well paide for my paines I have suffred: joyfull is my woe for so noble a cause; and welcome be all miseries, since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had even pleasure to weepe with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on,

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

to see poore *Philoclea* dye. Til at last I spake with you, to try whether I could remove thee frō sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

- 4 And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like whē a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle *Zephyrus* among fine coloured flowers. But *Pyrocles*, who had felt (with so smal distāce of time) in himself the overthrow both of hope and despaire, knew not to what key he should tune his mind, either of joy, or sorrow. But finding perfite reason in neither, suffred himselfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raised even by the sway, which hearing or seing, might give unto thē: he saw her alive, he was glad to see her alive: he saw her weep, he was sory to see her weep: he heard her cōfortable speeches, nothing more gladsome: he hard her prognosticating her own destructiō, nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present estate, both comforting her, that certainly the worst of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done the worst, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to have killed her, they would have now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, and inhabling his counsels with vehement prayers, that she would so far second the hopes of *Amphialus*, as that she might but procure him liberty; promising then as much to her, as the liberalitie of loving corage durst promise to himselfe.

### CHAP. 24.

<sup>1</sup> *Amphialus excuseth.* <sup>2</sup> *The Princesses accuse.* <sup>3</sup> *Cecropia seeking their death* <sup>4</sup> *findeth her owne.* <sup>5</sup> *Amphialus-his death-panges and selfe-killing.* <sup>6</sup> *The wofull knowledge of it.*

- 1 B Ut who would lively describe the manner of these speeches, should paint out the lightsome coulours of affection, shaded with the deepest shadowes of sorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a kind of sweetenes in teares: til *Philoclea* content to receave a kisse, and but a kisse of *Pyrocles*, sealed up with

moving lippes, and closed them up in comfort: and her-selfe (for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her sister: with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while *Philoclea* tempered *Pamelas* just disdain, and *Pamela* ennobled *Philocleas* sweete humblenesse) when *Amphialus* came unto them: who never since he had heard *Philoclea* named, coulde bee quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence thẽ his power) would discover what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate, which brought answer backe, according as it pleased *Cecropia* to indite them, till his hart full of unfortunate affliction, more and more misgiving him, having impatiently borne the delay of the nights unfittnesse, this morning he gat up, and though full of wounds (which not without daunger could suffer such exercise) he apparellled himselfe, and with a countenance, that shewed strength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the sisters were; and weakely kneeling downe, he besought them to pardon him, if they had not bene used in that castle according to their worthines, and his duetie; beginning to excuse small matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort they had bene handled.

But *Pamelas* hye hart (having conceived mortall hate for 2 the injurie offred to her and her sister) coulde scarcely abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of so much love as thou hast vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother have used towards us: for my part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister (whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne safetie then thy destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, full of humble sorrowfulnesse, to *Philoclea*. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, sate weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had ever favoured him, & loved his love, though she could not be in love with his person; and now partly unkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his case, made her sweete minde yeelde some teares, before she could answere; and her answere was no other, but that she had the same cause as her sister had. He replied no further, but delivering from his hart two or three (untaught) sighes, rose, and

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

with most low reverence went out of their chamber : and streight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had bene used. But when he heard it, crying out, O God ; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe upon his hart) he needed no judge to goe upon him : for no man could ever thinke any otherworthy of greater punishmēt, thē he thought himselfe.

3 Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, understanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his servants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went up, carried by furie, in steede of strength ; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resolving to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secretly to impoison them ; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes love would no otherwise be mitigated.

4 But when she sawe him come in with a sworde drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sworde, she streight was strickē with the guiltines of her own conscience : yet the wel known humblenes of her son somewhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of unhappines as I am ; she fearing he would have stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she overthrew her selfe from over the Leades, to receave her deathes kisse at the ground : and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischiefe (whom she loved so well) before her end ; when she confest (with most desperate, but not repēting mind) the purpose she had to impoison the princesses, & would then have had them murthred. But everie bodie seing, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

5 And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of *Amphialus*, who when he saw her fal, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddennes of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end I must be the death of my mother ? who how wicked so ever,

yet I would she had receaved her punishmēt by some other. O *Amphialus*, wretched *Amphialus*; thou hast lived to be the death of thy most deere cōpanion & friend *Philoxenus*, and of his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou hast lived to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire *Parthenia* was: thou hast lived to see thy faithfull *Ismenus* slaine in succouring thee, and thou not able to defende him: thou hast lived to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that one unknowne Knight could overcome thee in thy Ladies presence: thou hast lived to beare armes against thy rightfull Prince, thine owne unckle: Thou hast lived to be accounted, and justly accounted, a traitor, by the most excellent persons, that this world holdeth: Thou hast lived to bee the death of her, that gave thee life. But ah wretched *Amphialus*, thou hast lived for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to have *Philoclea* tormented: O heavens, in *Amphialus* castle, where *Amphialus* commaunded; tormented, tormented? torment of my soule, *Philoclea* tormented: and thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to live all this while. Perchance this hande (used onely to mischievous actes) thinkes it were too good a deede to kill me; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou art afraide to strike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him, whome *Philoclea* hateth. With that, furiously he tare open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the sworde to the grounde, and the point to his brest, hee fell upon it. But the sworde more mercifull then hee to himselfe, with the slipping of the pommell, the point swarved, and razed him but upon the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened so, as hee bledde in such extremitie, that *Charons* boate might verie well be carried in that flood: which yet he sought to hasten by this meanes. As he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell out *Philocleas* knives, which *Cecropia* at the first had taken from her, and delivered to her sonne; and he had ever worne them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sword being so, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the knives, and pulling one of them out, and many times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and unkindnes, melting in teares, O deare knives, you are come in

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

a good time, to revenge the wrong I have done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing you without your mistresse leave. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you have layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should have had as much honour, as this poore place could have brought forth, for so high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my desire often have given me: but other event it hath pleased her to lay upon me. Ah *Philoclea* (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would strive to overflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I love thee. Unworthie I am, unhappie I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her service, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble mistresses commaundement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into divers places of his breast, and throte, untill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the senselesse gate of Death.

- 6 By which time, his servants having (with feare of his furie) abstained a while from comming unto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, there giving a pittiful spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerors overthrow, and self-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running up to see the beloved body; every body thinking, their safetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction.



## CHAP. 25.

<sup>1</sup>*Anaxius-his rages for the death*<sup>2</sup>, *Queen Helens comming for the cure of Amphialus.* <sup>3</sup>*Her complaints over him.* <sup>4</sup>*Her passport and safeconduēt, to carrie him to her Chirurgion.* <sup>5</sup>*The peoples sorrow,* <sup>6</sup>*set downe in a song.*

**B**Ut when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his <sup>1</sup> proude friende *Anaxius*, (who by that time was growē well of his woūd, but never had come abroad, disdayning to abase himselfe to the companie of any other but of *Amphialus*) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with disdain, that he, who had the honor to be called the friend of *Anaxius*, should come to such an unexpected ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes raysed up, and eyes levelling from toppe to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth shake under him, with his hande upon his sword; short speeches, and disdainfull answeres, giving streight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the souldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to sweare them to revenge the death of *Amphialus*, upon *Basilius*. He himself went to see him, calling for all the surgeons & physicions there; spending some time in vewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling down at *Anaxius* feete) assured him, that they were mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him above two dayes alive: and he stood partly in doubt, to kil, or save them, betweene his own furie, and their humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two sisters, as causers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, & told him they had done his commaundement, in having receaved the oath of allegiance, with no great difficultie: the most part terrified by their valure, & force of their servants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come under the subjection of *Basilius* againe; and such fewe as durst gainesay, being cut off by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) <sup>2</sup>

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

they told *Anaxius*, that the faire Queen *Helen* was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: hūblie desiring leave to see *Amphialus*, whō she had sought in many places of the world; & lastly, being returned into her owne countrie, she heard together of the late siege and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him. Whereupon, full of loving care (which she was content even to publish to the world, how ungratefully soever he dealt with her) she had gotten leave of *Basilus*, to come by his frontiers, to cary away *Amphialus* with her, to the excellentest surgeon then knowen, whom she had in her Countrey, but so olde, as not able to travaile: but had given her soveraigne annointments, to preserve his body withal, till he might be brought unto him: and that *Basilus* had graunted leave: either naturall kindnes prevailing over all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This discourse *Lycurgus* understanding of *Helene*, delivered to his brother, with her vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. *Anaxius*, though he were fallen out with all woman-kind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom he accounted murtherers of *Amphialus*) yet at his brothers request, graunted her leave. And she (poore Lady) with grievous expectation, and languishing desire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, ether not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

- 3 In which pittious plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her minde the pittifullest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went beyonde all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight ranne from her service, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a soune upon him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (awearie to be closed up in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with his servaunt senses) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath convey these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) *Amphialus*, what strange diseases be these, that having sought thee so long, I should be now sorie to finde thee? that these eyes should looke upon *Amphialus*, and be grieved withall? that I should have thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often have I blest the means that

might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often hast thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare *Amphialus*, receive them: these eies can serve for nothing else, but weepe for thee; since thou wouldest never vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorrowe. I would they had bene more deare unto thee; for then hadst thou lived. Woe is me that thy noble harte could love who hated thee, and hate who loved thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee cover my other defects, who only sought to make my Crowne thy foote-stoole, my selfe thy servaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serve them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (*ô Philoclea*) wheresoever you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loved you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deserved suite of marrying you, and that I had bene your serving-maide, to have made my estate the foile of your felicitie, so he had lived. How many weary steps have I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte unkinde? Alas I would now thou werte, to be unkind. Alas why wouldest thou not cōmaund my service, in persuading *Philoclea* to love thee? who could, or (if every one could) who would have recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could have stirred pittie for thee as I? who should have delivered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee? and so shouldest thou have exercised thy disdaine in me, and yet used my service for thee.

With that the body moving somewhat, and giving a grone <sup>4</sup> full of deaths musicke, she fell upon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that have onely favour by miserie: and then, would she have returned to a fresh careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdom, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her love, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had received of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-lover in fruitles lamētations. She was streight warned with the obedi-

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

ence of an overthrown mind, and therefore leaving some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to *Anaxius*, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had utterly given him over, that he would let her carrie him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could have should be to die, and to die in her armes that loved him above al things; & where he should have such monuments erected over him, as were fit for her love, & his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to *Anaxius* valour, then *Basilus* promise) that he would convey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moved him, but nothing thoroughly perswaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he streight promised, warrating all securitie, as long as that sword had his master alive. She as happy therein as unhappines could be (having received as small cōfort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conveyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though never till then they had lost their Lorde. And if the terrour of *Anaxius* had not kept them under, they would have mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried away.

- 5 But *Anaxius* him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were affraid even to crie, though they were readie to crie for feare: but (because that they might doo) every bodie forced (even with harming themselves) to doo honour to him: some throwing themselves upon the ground; some tearing their clothes, and casting duste upon their heades, and some even wounding themselves, and sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered up in this forme.

- 6 *S* Ince that to death is gone the shepheard bie,  
 Whom most the silly shepheards pipe did pryse,  
 Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.  
 And you ô trees (if any life there lies  
 In trees) now through your porous barkes receave  
 The straunge resounde of these my causefull cries:

*And let my breath upon your braunches leave,  
My breath distinguish'd into wordes of woe,  
That so I may signes of my sorrowe leave.  
But if among yourselves some one tree growe,  
That aptest is to figure miserie,  
Let it embassage beare your grieves to showe.  
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie  
Her helpe to this, this justest cause of plaint.  
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint  
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,  
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Sainēt,  
Upon thy face let coaly Ravens swarme :  
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be :  
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.  
Let golde now rust, let Diamonds waste in thee :  
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare :  
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo never see.  
And you, ô flowers, which sometimes Princes were,  
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,  
Of Princes losse your selves for tokens reare.  
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die :  
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.  
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,  
And doo not onely marke the accents last,  
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will :  
One Echo to another Echo cast  
Sounde of my griefes, and let it never ende,  
Till that it hath all woods and waters past.  
Nay to the heav'ns your just complaining sende,  
And stay the starrs inconstant constant race,  
Till that they doo unto our dolours bende :  
And aske the reason of that speciall grace,  
That they, which have no lives, should live so long,  
And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?  
Aske, if in great men good men doo so thronge,  
That he for want of elbowe roome must die?  
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?*

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie  
In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?  
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*And if that any counsell you to measure  
Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,  
To well felte grieffe, plainte is the onely pleasure.*

*O light of Sunne, which is entit'led day,  
O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;  
For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.  
O Phœbus with good cause thy face thou hidest,  
Rather then have thy all-beholding eye  
Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.*

*And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie  
A stately tombe to cover him deceased.  
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*O Philomela with thy brest oppressed  
By shame and grieffe, helpe, helpe me to lament  
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.*

*Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,  
Then give a quiet eare unto my playning:  
For I to teach the world complainte am bent.*

*You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your stayning  
This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,  
Witnesse your wofull teares with daily rayning.*

*And if, ô Sunne, thou ever didst appeare,  
In shape, which by mans eye might be perceived;  
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.*

*Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaved  
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;  
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaved.*

*O notes of mine your selues together tie:  
With too much grieffe me thinkes you are dissolved.  
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*Time ever old, and yonge is still revolved  
Within it selfe, and never tasteth ende:  
But mankind is for aye to nought resolved.*

*The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,  
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:  
But unto Man, age ever death doth sende.*

# ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

*The very trees with grafting we can cherish,  
 So that we can long time produce their time :  
 But Man which helpeth them, helpelesse must perish.  
 Thus, thus the mindes, which over all doo clime,  
 When they by yeares experience get best graces,  
 Must finish then by deaths detested crime.  
 We last short while, and build long lasting places :  
 Ah let us all against foule Nature crie :  
 We Natures workes doo helpe, she us defaces.  
 For how can Nature unto this reply ?  
 That she her child, I say, her best child kilieth ?  
 Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.*

*Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but spilleth,  
 The vehement course of this just lamentation :  
 Me thinkes, my sound no place with sorrow filleth.  
 I know not I, but once in detestation  
 I have my selfe, and all what life containeth,  
 Since Death on Vertues fort hath made invasion.  
 One word of woe another after traineth :  
 Ne doo I care how rude be my invention,  
 So it be seene what sorrow in me raigneth.*

*O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,  
 Our bodies be in living power maintained,  
 Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention ?  
 O Phisickes power, which (some say) hath restrained  
 Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,  
 When once one is for Atropos distrained.*

*Great be Physitions brags, but aid is beggerly,  
 When rooted moisture failes, or groweth drie,  
 They leave off al, and say, death comes too eagerlie.  
 They are but words therefore that men do buy,  
 Of any since God AEsculapius ceased.  
 Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*Justice, justice is now (alas) oppressed :  
 Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion :  
 Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.  
 Shepheards bewaile your uttermost confusion ;  
 And see by this picture to you presented,  
 Death is our home, life is but a delusion.*

”

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*For see alas, who is from you absented?  
 Absented? nay I say for ever banished  
 From such as were to dye for him contented?  
 Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished  
 Shepherd of shepherds, whose well settled order  
 Private with welth, publike with quiet garnished.  
 While he did live, farre, farre was all disorder;  
 Example more prevailing then direction,  
 Far was homestrife, and far was foe from border.  
 His life a law, his looke a full correction:  
 As in his health we healthfull were preserved,  
 So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.  
 His death our death. But ah; my Muse hath swarved,  
 From such deepe plaint as should such woes descrie,  
 Which he of us for ever hath deserved.  
 The stile of heavie hart can never flie  
 So high, as should make such a paine notorious:  
 Cease Muse therefore: thy dart ô Death applie;  
 And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.*

## CHAP. 26.

<sup>1</sup>*The publike griefe amplified.* <sup>2</sup>*Anaxius death-threatning to the Princesses.* <sup>3</sup>*Their resolutenes in it.* <sup>4</sup>*His returne, and stop.* <sup>5</sup>*Zelmanes brave challenge unto him* <sup>6</sup>*scorned by him.* <sup>7</sup>*His love to Pamela scorned by her.* <sup>8</sup>*His brothers brave loves have as meane successe.*

**T**He general consort of al such numbers mourning, per-  
 fourmed so the naturall times of sorrow; that even to  
 them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief  
 taught them griefe; having before their compassionate sense so  
 passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified  
 with great honour, honored by great valure, made of inestimable  
 valure, by the noble using of it, to lye there languishing, under  
 the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner could be no  
 comfort to the discomfortablenes of the matter. But when the  
 bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (saving such



as were appointed) not suffred to goe further, then was such an universal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all received but one blow.

Which so moved *Anaxius* to consider the losse of his friend, <sup>2</sup> that (his minde apter to revenge, then tendernesse) he presently giving order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and unvisited, till his retourne from cōveying *Helen*, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this curteous message: that at his retourne, with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought unto the sisters, as they sate at <sup>3</sup> that time together with *Zelmane*, conferring how to carrie themselves, having heard of the death of *Amphialus*. And as no,, expectation of death is so painfull, as where the resolution is,, hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remove, yet move somewhat the cōstancy of their minds, which were so unconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent *Pamela* had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most deerely she loved) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearie of vexing us: but what? A shippe is not counted strong for byding one storme? It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps gives the last sounde: and let us make that profite of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely said *Philoclea*, deare sister, I was so beaten with the evils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse bredde that strength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But even in the darkenesse of that horror, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amisse, that see *Pamelas* steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might live, to see me say my lesson truely. Were that a life, my *Philoclea*? said *Pamela*. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but a bug-beare. Joy is it to me to see you so well resolved; and since the world will not have us, let it lose us. Onely (with that she stayed a little, and sight) onely my *Philoclea*, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her eare)

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

onely *Musidorus*, my shepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that *Philoclea* sighed also, saying no more, but looking upon *Zelmane*: who was walking up & downe the chamber, having heard this message from *Anaxius*, and having in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to prevent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and so stayed they; having yet that comfort, that they might tarrie together. *Pamela* nobly, *Philoclea* sweetly, and *Zelmane* sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, never to awake.

4 But *Anaxius* came home, having safely conducted *Helen*: and safely he might wel do it: For though many of *Basilius* Knights would have attempted something upon *Anaxius*, by that meanes to deliver the Ladies, yet *Philanax*, having received his masters commādement, & knowing his word was givē, would not cōsent unto it. And the black-Knight (who by thē was able to carie abroad his woūds) did not know therof; but was bringing forces, by force to deliver his Lady. So as *Anaxius*, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making even chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers up with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three together; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) dissuaded him: but his reverence stayed their perswasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatning climbing up his throate, his eies first lighted upon *Pamela*; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne majestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe unto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly love, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

5 Which while it bred a pause in him, *Zelmane* (who had

ready in her mind both what and how to say) stept out unto him, & with a resolute stayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, disdain, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. *Anaxius* (said she) if *Fame* have not bene overpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee even before that vertue, and will make it the judge betweene us. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou hast done, thou doest weakly, in seeking without daunger to revenge his death, whose life with daunger thou mightst perhaps have preserved: thou doost cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to prevent the just punishmēt, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any other could make, might lay upon thee; and doost most basely, in once presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office upon men, and in a just cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so unjust a cause, and upon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art unworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alleadge other reasons, of wisdom, or justice, to proove my speech, because I know thou doost disdain to be tied to their rules: but even in thine owne vertue (whereof thou so much gloriest) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one of us two, to prove, or disprove these reproaches. Choose thee what armes thou likest, I onely demaund, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty see the combat.

When *Zelma* began her speech, the excellency of her 6  
 beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had read in *Pamela*, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered into braverie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor possesst her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat; he stood leaning back with his bodie and head, sometimes with bent browes looking upon the one side of her, sometimes of the other, beyonde marvell marvailing, that he, who had never heard such speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that marvell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother *Zoilus*, and said nothing, but

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

onely lifting up his eyes, smiled. But *Zelmane* finding his minde, *Anaxius* (said she) perchaunce thou disdaynest to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I have bene trayned up in martial matters, with so good successe, that I have many times overcome better Knightes then thy selfe: and am well knowen to be equall in feates of armes, to the famous *Pyrocles*, who slewe thy valiaunt Uncle, the Giant *Euardes*. The remembraunce of his Uncles death something netled him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Uncle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Five thousand such could not have overcome *Euardes*, but by falshood. But I sought him all over *Asia*, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, comming into this Countrie, I heard of my friendes being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But wheresoever the miserable boy flie, heaven, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyst in thy throate (said *Zelmane*) that boye, where ever he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lesse perfourme. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we love, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not devise to revenge thy selfe more upon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doo manfullie, doo it; otherwise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heaven, and earth, (that will reveale thy shame) that thou art the beggerliest dastardly villaine, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me over-live them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not move *Anaxius*, but that he onely said, Evill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolde with thee.

7 But (said he) for the death of these same (pointing to the Princesses) of my grace, I give them life. And withall, going to *Pamela*, and offring to take her by the chin, And as for you,

Minion (said he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you shall not only live, but live so happely, He would have said further, whē *Pamela*, displeased both with words, matter, and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said she) yet thou plaieſt worſe thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy ſelfe, ſince my deſtiny is ſuch, that at ech moment my life & death ſtand in equall balance, I had rather have thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride & anger, would faine have cruelly revēged ſo bitter an 8 answer, but alredy *Cupid* had begun to make it his ſport, to pull his plumes: ſo that, unuſed to a way of courtesie, and put out of his byas of pride, he haſtily went away, grumbling to himſelfe, betwene threatning & wiſhing; leaving his brothers with thē: the elder of whom, *Lycurgus*, liked *Philoclea*, & *Zoilus* would nedes love *Zelmane*; or at leſt, entertain themſelves with making thē beleve ſo. *Lycurgus* more braggard, & nere his brothers humor, begā, with ſetting foorth their bloud, their deedes, how many they had deſpised, of moſt excellent womē; how much they were boūd to them, that would ſeek that of them. In ſumme, in all his ſpeeches, more like the beſtower, then the deſirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent paſtime (to thoſe that would delight in the play of vertue) to ſee, with what a wittie ignorance ſhe would not underſtand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, ſhe would make, that one of his perfections, not to be injurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, ſtill vewing his graces in no glaſſe but ſelf-liking. To which, *Philocleas* ſhamefaſtnes, and humblenes, were as ſtrong reſiſters, as choller, and diſdaine. For though ſhe yeelded not, he thought ſhe was to be overcome: and that thought a while ſtayed him from further violence. But *Zelmane* had eye to his behaviour, and ſet in her memorie, upon the ſcore of Revenge, while ſhe her ſelfe was no leſſe attempted by *Zoilus*; who leſſe full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) diſhonourable violence.

## CHAP. 27.

<sup>1</sup> *Zelmanes perswasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius.*

<sup>2</sup> *Anaxius-his embassage to treat the mariage.* <sup>3</sup> *Basilius recourse to a newe Oracle,* <sup>4</sup> *and his negative thereon.* <sup>5</sup> *The flattering relation of his Mercurie.* <sup>6</sup> *The brothers course to resist force without, and use force within.*

<sup>1</sup> **B**UT when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceived desires, and disdaine, to be disdained) *Zelmane* (who with most assured quietnesse of judgement looked into their present estate) earnestly perswaded the two sisters, that to avoide the mischiefes of prowde outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behaviour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth unexpected relief. And why (said *Pamela*) shal we any longer flatter adversity? Why should we delight to make our selves any longer balls to injurious *Fortune*, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse us? Certainly, in mishap it may be some comforte to us, that we are lighted in these fellowes handes, who yet will keepe us from having cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieves me more, then that you, noble Ladie *Zelmane* (to whome the worlde might have made us able to doo honour) shoulde receave onely hurte by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, undoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we have done, or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed  
 „ at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour  
 „ of the minde, while under colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (said *Zelmane*) what you say is true; and that truth may well make up a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your selfe thereof;  
 „ for then would be the time to die nobly, when you cā not live nobly. Then so earnestly she perswaded with them both, to referre themselves to their fathers consent (in obtayning whereof

they knewe some while would be spent) and by that meanes to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende *Pamela* yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicitated in that little<sup>2</sup> pleasing petition, *Pamela* forced her selfe to make answere to *Anaxius*, that if her father gave his consent she would make her selfe believe, that such was the heavenly determination, since she had no meanes to avoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the most franke promiser to him selfe of successe) nothing doubted of *Basilus* consent, but rather assured him selfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious servaunt (whome he esteemed very wise, because he never found him but just of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to *Basilus*, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to have his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selfe to have such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he listed to accept it) would give him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receave *Anaxius*, who never before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in every thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His servaunt with smiling and caste-up looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speech: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the divinenesse therof, and that being gratically granted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* spake it, to persuaide rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win *Basilus* to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heavens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* gravely allowed the probabilitie of his conjecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should have the bringing up of his second sonne by *Pamela*.

The messenger with speede perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Basilus*, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherein already he had found so slowe successe; though

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Philanax* vehemently urged him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage injuries. But *Basilus* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the passiō of his love, & jealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the cōmon course of mē, to flie only thē to devotiō, whē they want resolutiō: so detaining the messēger with delaies, he deferred the directing of his course to the cōsell of *Apollo*, which because himself at that time could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason unto him) wente with diligence to *Delphos*, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and having performed the sacrifices usuall, the spirite that possesst the pro[p]hesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demaund, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainely to be understood, what he came for, and that he should returne to *Basilus*, and will him to denie his daughters to *Anaxius* and his brothers, for that they were reserved for such as were better beloved of the gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne unto him safely and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe *Philanax* and *Basilus* fully agreed in the understanding of the  
 „ former prophecie: withall, commaunding *Philanax* from thence  
 forward to give tribute, but not oblation, to humane wisdom.

4 *Philanax* then finding that reason cannot shewe it self more  
 „ reasonable, then to leave reasoning in things above reason, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence forth durste any more dissuade him, from that which he founde by the celestiall providence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the government as much as in so broken an estate by civill dissention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made unaprochable, he left *Basilus* to bemoane the absence of his daughters, and to bewaile the imprisonment of *Zelmane*: yet wholly given holily to obey the Oracle, he gave a resolute negative unto the messenger of *Anaxius*, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes desiring him to shewe him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seeke the way of force,



to deliver in noble sorte those Ladies unto him, and so should the injurie have bene in *Amphialus*, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answere, yet having 5 ever used to sugre any thing which his Maister was to receave, he tolde him, that when *Basilus* first understood his desires, he did overreach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whome the heavens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principall counsaillour to *Delphos*, who although he kepte the matter never so secrete, yet his diligence, inspired by *Anaxius* his priviledge over all worldly thinges, had founde out the secrete, which was, that he should not presume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

*Anaxius*, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and 6 Force his God, nowe beganne to finde an other wisdomme to be above, that judged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his servauntes wayting for *Basilus* resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to have for their wives, he resolved now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who having all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gave spurres to his running, and, unworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselves, nor tendring it in others, they were headlong to make that evill consort of love and force, when *Anaxius* had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gave presente order to his servauntes, and souldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leaving none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that *Mars*-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely have awaked him.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 28.

<sup>1</sup> *Zoilus the messenger,* <sup>2</sup> *and first offerer of force,* <sup>3</sup> *is forced to flie, and die.* <sup>4</sup> *Lycurgus pointed to kill,* <sup>5</sup> *is fought withal,* <sup>6</sup> *foiled,* <sup>7</sup> *& killed.* <sup>8</sup> *Anaxius the Revenger with Pyrocles the Punisher brave, and bravely combatted.*

<sup>1</sup> **B**Ut while he was directing what he would have done, his yongest brother *Zoilus*, glad that he had the commission, went in the name of *Anaxius*, to tel the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and his brother *Licurgus*, should have them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perswaded. *Pamela* made him answere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had ever answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messenger understād somthing from thēselves, & not have her beleef bound to the report of their partiall servants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had ever a simple & true resolution, so against their unjust force, God, they hoped, would either arme their lives, or take away their lives.

<sup>2</sup> Wel Ladies (said he) I wil leave my brothers, who by & by wil come unto you, to be their own ambassadors, for my parte, I must now do my self service. And with that turning up his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a paven, he went toward *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* (having had all this while of the messengers being with *Basilius*, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the pasport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselves subjeēt) still hoping that *Musidorus* would finde some meanes to deliver them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, perswaded thē to overpasse many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient favour not to doo the uttermost injurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would have let her, she

had beene beyonde herselfe amazed: but that yet held up her wit, to attend the uttermost occasion, which evē then brought his hairie forehead unto her: for *Zoilus* smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something advancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy hart be full of joy, and let thy faire eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt have *Zoilus*, whō many have lōged for; but none shall have him, but *Zelmane*. And oh, how much glory I have to think what a race will be betwene us. The world, by the heavens, the world will be too litle for them: And with that, he would have put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dissemble with you, my nativitie being cast by one that never failed in any of his prognostications, I have bene assured, that I should never be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so hie favor, I must onely desire that I may performe a vow which I made among my coūtriwomen, the famous *Amazons*, that I would never marrie none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therfore, before I make mine own desire serviceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selfe perjured to my selfe. But *Zoilus* (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knight-hood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reverence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in *Zelmane* then Disdaine became wisdom, & Anger 3 gave occasion. For abiding no longer abroad in the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised, *Pyrocles*, being farre fuller of strong nimblenes, tript up his feete, so that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword, which he ware about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat up, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethrē, preparing themselves to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, & evē as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow upō the wast, that she almost cut him a sūder: once, she sundred

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

his soule frō his body, sēding it to *Proserpina*, an angry Goddess against ravishers.

4 But *Anaxius*, seing before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite thē wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorow, looking with a wofull eye upon his brother *Lycurgus*, Brother, said he, chastice this vile creature, while I go down, & take order lest further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise thē yet he conceived. But finding thē only strong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceale the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and thē went up to receave some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of *Zelmane*.

5 But *Zelmane* no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reasō assured her she was to expect revēge, but that she lept to a  
 ,, target, as one that well knew the first marke of valure to be defence. And thē accepting the oportunitie of *Anaxius* going away, she waited not the pleasure of *Lycurgus*, but without any words (which she ever thought vaine, whē resolutiō tooke the place of perswasion) gave her owne hart the contentment to be the assailer. *Lycurgus*, who was in the dispositiō of his nature hazardouse, & by the luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her, rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to hope. But whē her sword made demonstrations above al flattery of argumēts, & that he found she prest so upon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blind despair, but was garded both with cunning & strength: self-love thē first in him divided it selfe frō vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had not his whole globe cōprised in his brest, but that it was necessary to have strong resistāce against so strong assailing. And so between thē, for a few blowes, *Mars* himself might have bin delighted to looke on. But *Zelmane*, who knew that in her case, slownesse of victōry was little better thē ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a maine blow at her head, she warded it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her, & withall she ran in

to him, and thrusting at his brest, which he put by with his target, as he was lifting up his sword to strike again, she let fall the piece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the pōmel, with nimble & strong sleight, she had gottē his sword out of his hand before his sence could cōvey to his imaginatiō, what was to be doubted. And having 6 now two swords against one shield, meaning not foolishly to be ungratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being unweapned, then with the suddainnes therof, she gave him such a woūd upō his head, in despite of the shields over-weak resistāce, that withal he fel to the grouūd, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But seing *Zelmane* ready to cōclude her victōry in his death, bowing up his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten al pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours: Wherof you shall want the best witnes, if you kil me. As you have takē frō men the glory of māhood, returne so now againe to your owne sex, for mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no smal services, for I will undertake to make my brother obey all your commādements. Grant life I beseech you, for your own honor, and for the persons sake that you love best.

*Zelmane* repress a while her great hart, either disdaining to 7 be cruell, or pitiful, & therfore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, begā to be an Orator unto her of compassiō, whē she saw, as he lifted up his armes with a suppliāts grace, about one of thē, unhappily, tied a garter with a Jewel, which (givē to *Pyrocles* by his aunt of *Thessalia*, & greatly esteemed by him) he had presēted to *Philoclea*, & with inward rage promising extream hatred, had seene *Lycurgus* with a proud force, & not with out some hurt unto her, pull away frō *Philoclea*, because at entreatie she would not give it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the injurys which *Philoclea* had of him suffred, & that remēbrance feeding upō wrath, trod down al cōceits of mercy. And therfore saying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is *Philoclea* that sēds thee this tokē for thy love. With that she made her sword drink the blood of his hart, though he wresting his body, & with a coūtenāce prepared to excuse, wold fain have delaied the receiving of deaths embassadors.

## THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

8 But neither that staid *Zelmanes* hand, nor yet *Anaxius* crie unto her, who having made fast the Iron gate, even then came to the top of the staires, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at *Zelmanes* mercie. Therefore crying, promising, and threatning to her to hold her hand: the last grone of his brother was the onely answer he could get to his unrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine have drawne teares, which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine have spoken, but that Disdaine sealed up his lippes; but in his hart he blasphemed heaven, that it could have such a power over him; no lesse ashamed of the victorie he should have of her, then of his brothers overthrow: and no more spited, that it was yet unrevenged, then that the revenge should be no greater, then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speach, but such a groning crie, as often is the language of sorowfull anger, he came running at *Zelmane*, use of fighting then serving in steed of patient cōsideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing upon *Zelmane* in such a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that ever she had fought, she had never more need of quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature then living, as he did fully answer that stature in greatnesse of might, so did he exceed both in greatnes of courage, which with a coūtenāce formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible fierceness, was able to have carried feare to any mind, that was not privie to it selfe of a true & cōstant worthines. But *Pyrocles*, whose soule might well be separated frō his body, but never alienated frō the remembring what was comely, if at the first he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his adversarie, whom once before he had something tried, & now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthning, then weakning his vertue by that wrestling; like wine, growing the strōger by being moved. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat, as might have demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was strength against nimbleness; rage, against

resolution, fury, against vertue; confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: love, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of revēging the injurie of his brothers slaughter, to *Anaxius*, being like *Philocleas* captivity to *Pyrocles*. Who had seen the one, would have thought nothing could have resisted; who had marked the other, would have marveiled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of shippes, and men upon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces, and struggling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So betweene these, if *Pallas* had bene there, she could scarcely have tolde, whether she had nurced better in the feates of armes. The Irish greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elephāt, might be models, & but models of this cōbat. *Anaxius* was better armed defensively: for (beside a strong caske bravely covered, wherwith he covered his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as *Achilles* shewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that body was covered. But *Pyrocles*, utterly unarmed for defence, to offend had the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diversly furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For *Anaxius* most by warding, and *Pyrocles* oftneſt by avoyding, resisted the adversaries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motiō custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene fellow Counsellers, and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to prevent it. So as their strēgth fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any losse of blood.

# THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

## CHAP. 29.

<sup>1</sup>*The Combattants first breathing, <sup>2</sup>reencounter, and*

1 **S**O consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawn a little one from the other; *Anaxius* stood leaning upon his sworde, with his grym eye, so settled upon *Zelmane*, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which *Zelmane* marking, &, according to the *Pyroclean* nature, fuller of gay braverie in the midst, then in the beginning of dāger; What is it (said she) *Anaxius*, that thou so deeply musest on? Dooth thy brothers exāple make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy cōming punishmēt? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, envying my glory, hath brought me to such a waywarde case, that neither thy death can be a revenge, nor thy overthrow a victorie. Thou doost well indeede (saide *Zelmane*) to impute thy case to the heavenly providence, which will have thy pride find it selfe (even in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sex, which thou most contemnest.

2 But then, having sufficiently rested themselves, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the first and second leape, doo but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and aërie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellencie exercise. For in this pausing, ech had brought to his thoughts the maner or the others fighting, and the advantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselves; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the using of it. *Anaxius* oftner used blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him unto it. *Pyrocles*, of a more fine, and deliver strength, watching his time when to give fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he shunned any harme *Anaxius* could do to him: so would he soon have made an end of *Anaxius*, if he had not foūd him a mā of wonderful, & almost matchlesse excellēcy in matters of armes. *Pyrocles* used divers faynings, to bring *Anaxius* on, into some inconvenience. But *Anaxius* keeping a sound



maner of fighting, never offered, but seeing faire cause, & then followed it with wel-governed violence. Thus spent they a great time, striving to doo, and with striving to doo, wearying themselves, more then with the very doing. *Anaxius* finding *Zelmane* so neere unto him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitting all his strength together, at that time mainly foyned at her face. But *Zelmane* strongly putting it by with her right hande sword, comming in with her left foote, and hande, woulde have given him a sharpe visitation to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat ashamed, (as having never done so much before in his life)

A LIST OF MISPRINTS IN THE QUARTO, WHICH  
HAVE BEEN CORRECTED.

51. 4. *Reversed t in then*  
57. 3. sufficienr      29. perceivcd  
58. 1. soohest  
73. 9. Geutleman  
78. 13. applie [*correction supplied by catchword*]  
79. 24. ininjury  
90. 34. the the *before* Princesse  
96. 35. *Bafilus*  
100. 9. wenr  
101. 13. peatle  
114. 2. *Masidorus*  
116. 10. shephadrs      19. constancie  
118. 16. *Menelcas*  
120. 38. from hec  
122. 21. youug  
127. 2. couclude  
134. 8. others  
141. 24. tbe  
153. 10. ot like  
154. 39. nothing  
167. 11. lirtle  
183. 16. woule  
186. 24. *Enarchus*  
215. 33. *turned parenthesis before* delighted  
220. 5. *Tbe*  
229. 19. *shc*  
233. 22. thē cries  
238. 26. *turned u in* though  
269. 4. afterwarwardes  
285. 27. *LElius*  
318. 33. judgement  
322. 16. minlegd  
336. 16. *But*  
360. 33. of of them  
386. 18. of of that  
401. 19. forcibie  
436. 9. *turned n in* perchance  
444. 9. Q *misprints 3 for 8*  
448. 30. themselvcs  
452. 17. servc

# A LIST OF MISPRINTS

471. 20. hunanitie  
 485. 16. Q *misprints 17 for 23*  
 487. 6. a a more      40. beleeeve  
 489. 25. samc  
 505. 9. wfth  
 507. 25. injurions  
 509. 8. rhat  
 511. 13. presnme

## A LIST OF MISPRINTS IN THE QUARTO, WHICH SHOULD HAVE BEEN CORRECTED.

26. 28. *Amphalus*  
 41. 23. as( well  
 47. 10. of of      27. preferree  
 59. 24. *Amphilus*  
 95. 27. Artexias [*should be Artesias*]  
 233. 32. accnoplished [*should perhaps have been printed accomplished*]  
 239. 2. *Fenus*  
 344. 20. Dorus [*should be Pas*]  
 471. 33. comma after "*Cecropias*"

## NOTES

*In the following references to the text the lines are numbered from the top of the page, including titles, but not, of course, the headline. The page numbers are in heavier type.*

*The folio editions are as follows:*

(A) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney Knight. | Now since the first edi- | tion augmented and ended. | London. | Printed for William Ponsonbie. | Anno Domini. 1593.

(B) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the third time | published, with sundry new additions | of the same Author. | London | Imprinted for William Ponsonbie. | Anno Domini. 1598.

(C) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the third time published, with sundry new | additions of the same Author. | Edinburgh. | Printed by Robert | walde-grave, Printer to the | Kings Majestie. | Cum privilegio Regio. 1599.

(D) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the fourth time | Published, With Sundry | New Additions Of The | same Author. | London | Imprinted for Mathew Lownes | Anno Domini. 1605. [*Some copies have* "Imprinted for Simon Waterson"]

(E) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the fourth time | published, with some new | Additions. | London | Imprinted by H. L. for Simon | Waterson 1613. [*Some copies have* "Imprinted by H. L. for Mathew Lownes"]

(F) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the fift time published, | with some new Additions. | Also a supplement of a defect in | the third part of this | History. | By Sir W. Alexander. | Dublin, | Printed by the Societie of | Stationers. 1621. | Cum Privilegio.

(F') The | Countesse | of | Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney, | Knight. | Now the sixt time pub- | lished. | London | Imprinted by H. L. for Matthew | Lownes. 1623.

[*The same edition as F with a new title-page.*]

(G) The | Countesse | Of | Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the sixt time published, | with some new Additions. | Also a supplement of a defect in | the third part of this Historie, | By Sir W. Alexander. | London, | Printed by W. S. for Simon | Waterson. | 1627.

# NOTES

(G') The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the seventh time published, | with some new Additions. | With the supplement of a Defect in the third | part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight. | Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London printed by H. L. and R. Y. and are | sold by S. Waterson in S. Pauls Church- | yard, 1629.

[The same edition as G with a new title-page.]

(H) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia. | Written by Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the eighth time published, | with some new Additions. | With the supplement of a Defect in the third | part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight. | Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London, | Printed for Simon Waterson and | R. Young, Anno 1633.

(I) The | Countesse | of Pembrokes | Arcadia, | Written by Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the ninth time published, with a | twofold supplement of a defect in the third | Book: the one by S<sup>r</sup> W. A. Knight; the | other, by M<sup>r</sup> Ja. Johnstoun Scoto-Brit. | dedicated to K. James, and now | annexed to this work, for | the Readers be- | nefit. | Whereunto is also added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London, | Printed for J. Waterson and R. Young, 1638.

(K) The | Countess | of | Pembroke's | Arcadia | Written by | S<sup>r</sup> Philip Sidney | Knight. | The tenth Edition. | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | heads, and som other new Additions. | London, | Printed by William Du-Gard: and are to bee sold by | George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new buildings in Paul's | Church-yard; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in | Paul's Church-yard, M. DC. LV.

(L) The | Countess | of | Pembroke's | Arcadia | Written by | Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | The eleventh Edition | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | Heads, and som other new Additions. | London, | Printed by Henry Lloyd, for William Du-Gard: and | are to bee sold by George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new | buildings; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in St. Paul's | Church-yard, MDCLXII.

(M) The | Countess | of | Pembroke's | Arcadia | Written by | Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | The Thirteenth Edition. | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | Heads, and some other new Additions. | London, | Printed for George Calvert, at the Golden-Ball in | Little-Britain, MDCLXXIV.

*In the following notes each of these folios is referred to by the capital letter' prefixed to it in the above list. Q = 1590.*

3. 26. D *having many fancies* 29. LM *this chief*

4. 3. F—M *if much good* 10. A—M *in a* 12—13. M *and most heartily* 14. C *ornament of* 17. *This notice, as well as the division into chapters, and the summaries preceding them, are omitted in all the folio editions.*

## NOTES

*After the epistle, To My Deare Ladie and Sister, etc., the folios, with the exception of E, insert the following preface :*

To the Reader.

**T**HE disfigured face, gentle Reader, wherewith this worke not long since appeared to the common view, moved that noble Lady, to whose Honour [H—M insert "it was"] consecrated, to whose protection it was committed, to take in hand the wiping away those spotted wherewith the beauties therof were unworthely blemished. But as often in [DF—M omit "in"] repairing a ruinous house, the mending of some olde part occasioneth the making of some new: so here her honourable labour begonne in correcting the faults, ended in supplying the defectes; by the view of what was ill done guided to the consideration of what was not done. Which part with what advise entred into, with what successe [DF—M accesse] it hath [F—M had] beene passed through, most by her doing, all by her directing, if they may be entreated not to define, which are unfurnisht of meanes to discerne, the rest (it is hoped) will favourably censure. But this they shall, for theyr better satisfaction, understand, that though they finde not here what might be expected, they may finde neverthelesse as much as was intended, the conclusion, not the perfection of Arcadia: and that no further then the Authours own writings, or knownen determinations could direct. Whereof who sees not the reason, must consider there may be reason which hee sees not. Albeit I dare affirme hee either sees, or from wiser judgements then his owne may heare, that Sir Philip Sidneies writings can no more be perfected without Sir Philip Sidney, then Apelles pictures without Apelles. There are that thinke the contrary: and no wonder. Never was Arcadia free from the comber of such Cattell. To us, say they, the pastures are not pleasaunt: and as for the flowers, such as we light on we take no delight in, but the greater part growe not within our reach. Poore soules! what talke they of flowers? They are Roses, not flowers, must doe them good, which if they finde not here, they shall doe well to go [F—M omit "go"] feed elsewhere: Any place will better like them: For without Arcadia nothing growes in more plenty, then Lettuce sutable to their Lippes, If it be true that likenes is a great cause of liking, and that contraries, inferre contrary consequences: then is it true, that the wortheles Reader can never worthely esteeme of so worthye a writing: and as true, that the noble, the wise, the vertuous, the curteous, as many as have had any acquaintaunce with true learning and knowledge, will with all love and dearness entertaine it, as well for affinity with themselves, as being child to such a father. Whom albeit it do not exactly and in every lineament represent; yet considering the fathers untimely death prevented the timely birth of the childe, it may happily seeme a thanke-worthy labour, that the defectes being so few, so small, and in no principall part, yet the greatest unlikenes is rather in defect then in deformity. But howsoever it is, it is now by [KLM omit "by"] more then one interest The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia: done, as it was, for her: as it is, by her. Neither shall these pains be the last (if no unexpected accident cut off her determination) which the everlasting love of her excellent brother, will make her consecrate to his memory.

H. S.

*[After the above KLM insert thirteen leaves containing The Life and Death of Sir Philip Sidney and many epigrams and epitaphs.]*

# NOTES

5. 26. FGH shore  
 6. 3. ABDEF graze G—M grace 27. A—M to us E cherries  
 31. HI others 35. I minde how 38. L sweetness fairness  
 7. 2. BD—M the sight 32. A—M then by  
 8. 1. A other HI of the 3. G—M others A we two  
 19. M of a goodly 24. A—M water come 36—37. A—M *Pyrocles*  
 destruction? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast himselfe againe  
 9. 13. A omits any 18. DF—M precious food 26. A men  
 10. 8. KLM do condemne 11. A—M of the water 13. KLM  
 her mate 20. BD—GK—M man 30. A—M such superstition  
 36. A—M corde  
 11. 3. H—M paines 5. C discribed 14. M to fight  
 15. A—M nothing wherewith to 16. F—I not to KLM nought to  
 20. HI omits well 30. GKLM fisherman 34. LM so full  
 12. 4—11. C find thē, now sir 16—17. A—M confines there  
 dwelleth 19. HI stirs FGK come 27. AC is sweet  
 31. A—M omits but in that respect,  
 13. 3. D *Loconia* 5. A sorrowful-mind B—M *print two words*  
 12. BD—GK—M misfortune 17. E the length 30. F—M the  
 refreshing 33. ACF—M disposition 39. G voice musick H—M  
 voice-musick  
 15. 6—7. KLM *print* provision is...of magnificence *in Italics* 19. C  
 countenance 20—21. E aswell care of them that did serve, as to be  
 served. 35. A—M was thus  
 16. 2. M he had had 6. A—M that they were 12. HI  
 respectively 13. C sight 20. KLM *Laconian* Pirats 29. G—M  
 Missenia  
 17. 14. M delighted in. The 21. A—M a thicket, and behinde  
 35. A—M follie, meane while  
 18. 9. C ane other 10. DG—M were only 22. KLM be-  
 stowed nothing on 23. H—M skil on the  
 19. 2. D which extraordinary 5. C treasures 28. A did  
 serve 29. G—M as the zealous  
 20. 21. I proceedings 37. C lodgings  
 21. 6. AC daughter of 21. A—M The verses 24. KLM  
*When virtues* HI *beautie* HI *may them know* 25. BD—M  
*then C them*  
 22. 4. BD—M smoothed 6. BDFG on time 11. D in-  
 tempered 17. G—M omit his before bluntnesse 23. I she  
 33. F—M with grosse  
 23. 11. M *prints throughout "Clitiphon"* 12—13. E omits  
 preparing...celebrated 26. G—M his countrey 32. C ane  
 33. LM fancied  
 24. 5—26. 14. KLM *print this letter in Italics, with the exception of*  
*wisdom...to follow [24. 12—13] and hee cannot...is good [26. 3] which*  
*lines are in Roman type.*  
 24. 14. C to leade 16. A weakenes 19. KLM omit not  
 21. A—M kindes of soothsayings 22. F—M omit to 26. G—M  
 stretched 31. LM your obedience 38. BD—M example

# NOTES

25. 5. I be not to be unpleasant, then 28. *After then C repeats straightning...*  
 34. ABD—M to each mans C to catch mans 33. I measures  
 had 36. ABD—M then
26. 2. M ill ground 15. I But the contents 25. A—M  
 having left 29. BD—M envying the 35. I keeps
27. 13. B—M as to your 23—24. G—M discourse 37. C  
*omits* (saie they) 39. KLM are given
28. 8. KLM *print* ease, the Nurse of Poetrie *in Italics* 17—18.  
 A—M have they 18. B—M prise 36. E forbid, that where
29. 3—4. BD—M but being 12. E were throughly 28. A—  
 M *omit* and attend
30. 1. E this 3—4. *Instead of* before...marriage, E *has* not  
 long since 15. HI that, as if 37. BD—H or worse I—M  
 alike or worse
31. 35. C *Chlitophon*
32. 14. C affection 31. A had gilded
33. 24. C ane 36. A—M in the meane while
34. 13. HI *omit* the 22. KLM *omit* they 28. H—M power
35. 3. HI *insert* him *after* assured 12. BD celeration 19.  
 BD—M example 27. F—M it is
36. 5. KLM from whom 13. BD—M now to thinke 18. HI  
 to take 27. F—M it is
37. 1. I his succour 5. LM inroades 8. GH where
38. 34. G—M braver
39. 3. ABC incamping 14. G or the cause 22. A—M  
 made them 32. BDF—L his generall 37. HI *omit* to be
40. 13. BDF—I was captaine 25. M against the 33. F—M  
*omit* ever 40. E raunsome
41. 2. E the Captaine 13. GH grates 20. AC gave
27. BD—M example 33. BDFGKL master
42. 1. AC gave HI giveth 15. FG left wind 26. HI  
*omit* as M *prints* at
43. 2. KLM objections ABDF—M lightning 3. I beginne  
 10. LM *omit* that 16. D misdoubted 19. E forgot
44. 6. KLM valor 29. K *Palladians*
45. 5. L here is here 6. LM now begotten 7. F—M  
 who alreadie 8—9. HI his onely benefite 31. GHI all readie
46. 7. I & cure 14. A—M had they not 23. A—M *omit*  
 out 27. E Now I have
47. 3. BDF—L names of priviledges 4. A—M the *Spartane*
6. KLM *print* fellows and servaunts *in Italics* 7—8. BD—M con-  
 tention 10. KLM *print* forgetfulnes *in Italics* 16. HI *omit*  
 the 21. I *omits* that 24. DF—M then lose E thou to lose
28. KLM *omit* yet 29. C *omits* any 31. A—M setting
32. HI bad them



# NOTES

48. *From p. 48 to p. 49 l. 14 C prints "Parthenea"* 5. F *Kalandet*: There 10. BD—M on his face 13. KLM the sight  
13—14. F—I continuances 24. KLM *omit* then 29. GHI  
desire 32. M his company 35. G the saw 39. A—M  
that this
49. 4. A—M *omit* in *after* came 6. KLM change 7. I  
telling him 11. A—M disfigured 32. C *ane* 33. C *ane*  
38. F—M *no parenthesis before* first F—M doing FGHKLM  
*parenthesis before* doing 40. A—M am I bound
50. 1. F—M much bound 12. I beene to love 16. C  
receive such disgrace, (said she) 28. A—F lonely 30. F—M sent  
to her a 32. A—M saw he had perfourmed 39. E dearest  
40. G—M guest
51. 10. A btahbādōed C btahbandoned *instead of* both abādoned  
11. KLM taking 17. BD *omit* to 24. A—I *Messena*  
KLM *Messina*
52. 8. F—M returned 9. AELM *omit* the 14. A—M  
*omit* it *after* by 24. C other-waies 35. C the vaile
53. 2. BC with in few D—M within few 3. A—M so  
much the 9. A—M also 12. AC and they by 24. FG  
desiring 32. G—M their marriage 34. DF—M decking  
39. A—M though
54. 5. C bare she was if the vaward failed, yet that woulde conquer  
*Daiphantus* marking I bare she was, if 6. AC to *Jupiter*  
DFGHKLM saith he I quoth he 33. FGKLM whereof he
55. 4. KL its self of its own M it self of its own 20. KLM  
leav off at her secreter 23. M come 39. BD—M points  
KLM without any
56. 7. M love hath 10. M through I have ever though weak-  
ness 27. KLM thought KLM *omit* in 28. I as thinke  
29. C of the these
57. 24. G deepe sight 27. HI *Pyrocles* his countenance  
KLM *Pyrocles* 's countenance C attentation 36. HI burden  
38. HI praise
58. 7. F—M which had 20. L known 27. A—M either  
se many
59. 2. I lifted 10. C spake 20. A—M left sealed in a  
letter 31. C journey ever 35. I your selfe
60. 12. G graving 19—20. A—M trust to the 24. KLM  
advertisement 38. A—M at a bay
61. 2. CKL into 11. C for that he met 19. A—M  
candles begin 23. I *Tyrocles* 26—31. KLM *print this letter*  
*in Italics* 28. I than you me 29. A—M in the respect  
34. HI banished out of 38. BD—M thy selfe frō me
62. 6. DFG objectiō 26. G for is charge 27. G—M  
would not other 40. D *Daiphantus*
63. 16. HI of her 17. DF—M *Phineus* 19. BD—M  
tongues 20. L enquire 21. HI she was 23. E uncer-  
taine 29. F—M pulled 38. A—IL *Clitophon*

# NOTES

64. 3. C unto me 4. A—DF—M and cause of doubt E and cause of his doubt 20. CF—IL black-a-more boye K black-a-Moor-boy M Block-a-Moor Boy 24. C about a dosen 30. LM overpast 36. KLM in the
65. 1. E omits but 6. GHI his cōflict 16. HI cānot F accomplished 18. KLM into tears 37. LM omit selfe
66. 24. CE possessor of G—M possessed of 31. F—M estate 33. KLM heart
67. 25. BD—M besought for 29. F—M unto you 31. A—M monuments 34. ILM wert 37. M Then you must
68. 2. BDF—M their true 5. KLM omit a 8. KLM of an KLM parenthesis after "Argos" 10. HI parenthesis after "Basilius" FG parenthesis after "Timotheus" 11. F—I no parenthesis before betwene 12. CEKLM parenthesis after hospitality 18. B—M no parenthesis after "Timotheus" 21. C omits so 27. C to bespoken off 28. A—M conquests 36. LM stretcht 38. BD—M mine
69. 7. KLM omit a 16. KLM waited on 18. KLM this letter KLM shall 20. KLM my 38. BD—M not yet A—M to discover so much 40. KLM affections
70. 18. A will knew 20. LM omit I feare 33. KLM with thus
71. 1. ABCE injury 3. BD—I thine 7. BD—M withall so to 13. AC and unhappy 20. DF—M stage of 26. F meeding 38. ABCE omit the before thickest
72. 10. KLM caus, if at 37. LM of this
73. 36. B—M rose
74. 2. E he had 24. A—F monuments engraved G—M monuments engraven 25. A—M durably 30. AC louelinesse 34. A—M were possible 38. A—M a freshe searche
75. 1. A—M which resembling 6. A flat-tryng DF—I makes 6—7. KLM print that discreet...journies in Italics 20. C for paterne a 21. A—M the more 29. A—M part BD—M omit so 34. DF—M wore 35. A—M under her 36. BD—M fastening on 39. LM an Hercules 40. A—M but set with a distaffe in his hand
76. 27. KLM Since that
77. 2. FGKLM which was HI cause 28. D she are 33—34. KLM print to say...womanish in Italics 37—38. KLM print your behaviour...unto it in Italics 40. A—M imperfections A—M to soften
78. 3. KLM print this line in Italics A—M either excellentie 10. A—M all of them generallie 11. A—M omit right 12. After bastarde KLM print Love in Italics 13—14. KLM print engendred... idelness in Italics 18. G—M yeelding 23. E this much 31. A—F these kinde of loves G—M these kinds of loves 35. A—M womanize 36. B a distaffe spinner D a distaffe a spiner F—M a distaffe, a spinner

# NOTES

79. 12. LM of his own 14. KLM had been 15. DF—M  
this I must 23. A—M *omit* to 28. FGKLM doe well  
29. A—M disposition 34—35. KLM *print* Kite...Hauk *in Italics*  
36. F—M who is so 39. A—M to them

80. 2—4. KLM *print* like's mee...dunghill *in Italics* 7. KLM  
it were excusable 11. A—FM your now handling G—L your now-  
handling 12. BD—M to confirme my former 15. E *omits* then  
18. KLM content to 24. KLM manner and form 25. HI am a  
good 26. C witnesses KLM my own 28. E *omits* for 29.  
BD—M mine own 37. A—M a weake braine 38. A—M the best

81. 3. F' made readie 11. C *omits* and 15. A—M that  
posseseth 16. C *omits* Lord 18. E me sharp-witted 21. E  
*omits* all 21—22. KLM *print* each...knowledges *in Italics* 27. E  
excellent, said *Musidorus*, I would 28. KLM *print* Enjoying *in Italics*  
A—M deepe sigh 31. G—M speake

82. 8. G *omits* in 18. HI not establisht 19. A—M  
impatient 20. A—M this last 21. AC soule for thinking  
BDF—M soule. For thinking E soule: For thinking 23. C hew  
of HI shewes of 26. A—DF—M the triumph 35. A—M  
*omit* a A—M is there any 36. BD—M am a slave A—M  
*omit* to (*last word in line*)

83. 2. A—M was unable 4—5. A—M *omit* as if...burthen  
9. C if he had 10. KLM *omit* a 15. HI the more to melt  
21. KLM upon the other HI well point out 36. A—M with  
the two 38. AC at his

84. 1. A—M are farre fitter 13. HI no nothing 18—19.  
KLM *print* between friends...tedious *in Italics* 23. C if I by chance  
24. K Queen of *Amazons* LM Queen of *Amazon* 36. A—M  
whom so well

85. 16. BD—M *print* Architecture *in Roman type* 21. A—M those  
wishes 24. A—M part 27. A—M the sounde of 35. A—M  
call to 37. A—M *omit* needs

86. 3—4. KLM *print* a heart...lothsom *in Italics* 5—6. KLM  
*print* nothing...friend *in Italics* 7—8. KLM *print* less...will *in Italics*  
14. F—M from my 16. A—L taken 18. A—M unmarked  
by any, to BD—M escape 21. KLM *Philanax's* letter  
33. A—M me to be found 34. DF—M mine own 39. AC  
cope

87. 3. EHI pantofle 9. F—M unto me 10. KLM not  
to name 13. KLM *omit* any 17. A—M as if he would have  
had a 37. E *omits* backe

88. 14—15. KLM *print* They are...thoughts *in Italics* 19. HI  
mine own 20. A—M pleasure 23. A—M *omit* a  
25—26. KLM *print* open...themselves *in Italics* 28. KLM *print*  
generall goodness *in Italics* 29—30. KLM *print* everie one...them-  
selves *in Italics* 40. A—M hath alreadie brought

89. 7. G—M *omit* it 16. A—M tast of that E—M he had  
17. H well tell 18. KLM should use 24. E forth his  
25. BD—M *omit* all 30. C *omits* a 34. A—M *omit* a  
C *omits* of 38. I more sumptuous 39. A—M to shew how

# NOTES

90. 1. BD—M rose up 2. A—M vale 3. HI have  
seene read 7. A—M the life of beauty 8. A—M the Queene  
of 13. A—M able to have caught 20. A—M miracle with  
her selfe 26. A—M more freely 31. I stepped 35. A—M  
Princesse 39. ABD—M princesses
91. 4. A—M much mistaken 6. A—M to whom 15. A—M  
so to do 16—17. KLM *print* great.. prais-worthie *in Italics*  
31—32. A—M cleere, an other more 39. BD—M *print* Comet  
*in Roman type*
92. 8. A—M where, in a 10. A branches The C bran-ches:  
The EH—M branches, the 14. DFGKLM sensible 30. BD—M  
stole 36. A—M liddes
93. 14. LM being a familiar 16. A—M private 38. AC  
showers
94. 2. A—M are even miserable 9. A—M such vehement suits  
24. C unfortunat 27. A—M And therewith 34. L counsels  
38. KLM *print* a noble...case *in Italics* 39. E vexeth me so much
95. 4. B—M *comma at end of line* 13. HI close till that  
15. F—M bewray him 16. G *omits* a
96. 6. DF—M not ceremonies 7. A—M before 15. KLM  
upon the roots of flourishing 17. HI *Pamelia* 23. E brought  
him HI a silly 26. A—M caused all 28—29. KLM  
*print* opinion...dangerous *in Italics* 30. E of a more 32. G—M  
conquest
97. 4. FHI *Philantus* 5. KLM the better 7. HI to  
that 11. E tents 15. HI *Philantus* 18. A—M report  
of his good justing 19. KLM *print* The fair man of arms *in Italics*  
30. LM matter 33. A—M winning cherefulness 39. G  
*Arthesia*
98. 3. KLM at their first 7. A—M leave upon 9. G  
*Arthesia* 10. BDF—M thinketh 14. BD—M worthinesses  
19. A—M *omit* and A—M had taught 20. A—M both heaven  
23. ABD—HKLM good a disciple she C good (a Disciple shee...her,)  
39—40. A—G must say truly courteous HI must say truly, courteous  
KLM must say, truly courteous
99. 6—7. I *Philantus* 15. C nor affection 17. BD—M  
on the other 18—19. KLM *print* a foolish...think's *in Italics*  
19. K witness LM foolish-witnes 21. A—M of his profession  
BD—M services 27. CLM that hath 29. F—M praising  
31. G out of her
100. 2. A—M he must 14. G *Arthesia's* 15. G *Arthesia*  
16. KLM preheminiencie 19. A—M pictures C Lades  
20. G *Arthesia's* 27. KLM *omit* is
101. 11. G—M *omit "it" after "gave"* 13. F—M purple  
19. I every place 19—20. KLM turn'd 28. G *Arthesia*  
31. E assemblies
101. 35—102. 1. KLM *print* liking is...beauty *in Italics*  
102. 1. KLM *print* whatsoever...beautifull *in Italics* 4. G  
*Arthesia* 5. DF—M as a true 8. A—M her most delightfull  
21. E *omits* a 22. E her part 30. A—M a made

# NOTES

32. A—M idlenes, and with 33. A—M disswaded 34. A—M overrunne 39. A—M obeyed to that 40. A—M markte
103. 5. A—M possessioners A—M nor absolute 11. A—M but intercurled 12. A—M pearle 13. A—M fast and loose 14. A—M richnes 17. A—M thē the conterfaiting 23. A—M in pleasure 24. HI not with admiration 34. HI have sate 36. HI Ensigne-bearer 37. A—M the humblenes 38. A—M beautie
104. 5. E omits a 13. HI eyes 16. F—M which he 17. A—M of that coupled 17—18. A—M their mouthes 20. E attentive unto it 38. G *Arthesia*
105. 2. F—M some other harts 7. G *Arthesias* 19. EILM gentlewoman 24. AC all ready
106. 4. I remedillesse 12. G *Arthesia's* 13. EM reckoned 16. G—M *Thelamon* G—K *Polexena* LM *Polexena* AC *Eurileon* BD—M *Eurilion* 29. A—M pretie a grace 38. E it is not 40. LM matcht
107. 13. KLM their companion's 17. A—M beginning 26. F—M worthinesse 34. BDF—M was for a 36. BD—M scape
108. 13. K *Philantus* 22. HI could not 30. KLM *Ermelin* 37. HI who had 38. F—M the triall
109. 11. HI omit by 20. E sith 25. KLM ill apparelled 31. DF—M omit his 38. A—I two adversaries KLM but two adversaries 40. A—M himselfe came to FG stickler
110. 9. A—M but even in 20. A abickering 23. F—M he sent him 35. A—M all the other heavenly
111. 3. F—M readily he 16. AC ill by apparelled 17. A—M cōfort of 25. HI with some great 33. K keep him 39. HIM out of the Princes
112. 12. E omits or 22. A—M come, on which 24. KLM before 35. A—M sometimes cast up 36. HI strove
113. 1. A—M burthen 4. C *has no division into stanzas* 5. A—M [*and England's Helicon*] *change* 6. D *Nor he* 12. England's *Helicon* *plaints* 13. LM *is plaint* 19. M these Woods 24—25. LM *print* all is...experience in *Italics* 36. A—M in the Pulpit
114. 5. M compassion on me 6. HI pardoning of them 14. A—M secret flames 17. M light unto thee 20. HI so throughly 29. F—M sight of a 39. HI names had the 40. A—M of the Goddesses
115. 6. F—M of mind 7. F—M me such a thraldome 8. E I think, I had spoken 18. HI not to the 23. F—M omit again 25—26. KLM *print* Love...tyrant in *Italics*
116. 3. F—M everie evening 9. A—M persecutors 17. E his rayment KLM omit the 31. DF—M omit thus 32. F—K *note of interrogation instead of semicolon after Shepheard* 34—36. KLM *print* highest...miserable in *Italics*
117. 3—4. KLM *print* the most...capacitie in *Italics* 5. F—M greater 6. A—M wit to discern 9—10. G—M omit and his

# NOTES

- senses...reward him 17—18. KLM *print* though...honorable in *Italics*
30. A—M well provided
118. 5. F—M his tale 6. LM brother to the 18. A—M manners 19. E maner 22. A—M that sued to be 29. KLM omit so
119. 8. BD—M *print* Theatre in *Roman type* A—M omit a after such E sorts 12. A—M omit tree to tree 13. A—M insert tree to tree after from 17. A—M inquiring diverse questions 20. E sport for the 27. E sith 39. LM like a
120. 3—4. A—M composition 7. DF—M omit upon 17. A—M was presented to 18. E omits the before twice 34. A—M she neither 37. DF—M omit to 39. A—D presenting
121. 1. A—M his 12. DF—M grace and pity 19. BD—M Chirurgerie 21. A—M ever with the contempt of cowardes 24. A—M omit great 28. E was returning 33. A—M her witt
122. 4. A—M *bloodie strife* 7. A—M *eie* 15. HI means 18. BD—M a horrible fowle 22. LM omit I 25. BD—M on my 26. A—M this yong shepheard with a wonderfull courage having 29. A—M already neare 35. E omits up 37. G—M blessing
123. 1. KL not instead of nor 8. A—M easily decipher 20. A—M head and breast 23. HI on himselfe ILM fully 25. A—M great while 33. A—DF—M omit us 35. KLM not instead of nor 40. A—M construction
124. 4. A—M the very face 12. A—M given him a 20. M others 26. HI means 37. HI first was curious 40. BD—M desired A—M the Pastorals
125. 7. KLM omit of 11. G—M beast 16. E cause then 18. F—M those words 20. A—M mistrusting greatly *Cecropia*
126. 1. G—M Eclogue 4—6. A—M And because many of the shepheards were but newlie come, hee did in a gentle manner chastise their negligence with making 7—8. A—M omit later come 16. KLM according 18. KLM omit chiefe 20. M bawl 22—23. A answers. as the one halfe saying. C answer: as the one halfe saying. D answer as the one halfe; saying: BEFG answer as the one halfe, saying: HI answer: as the one halfe, saying: KLM answer at the one half, saying; 24. England's Helicon has "*We love, etc.*" but omits ll. 25, 27, 29, 31, 33 25. HI other 29. A—M in a quire 30. G despaire full 34. H And in who
127. 1. F—M Then joyning all their England's Helicon omits ll. 1 and 2 5. F—M song 7. A—M have "*Thyrsis*" instead of "*Lalus*" 10. A—M troubled mind 13. A—M Thyrsis and Dorus 14. A—M Thyrsis 24. G most, deep deep silent H most deep deep silent 25. D—M true-love BE comma after "*true love loves*" DF—M put a comma after "*true-love*" and omit "*loves*" A—M have "*his*" instead of "*those*" G—M his love with others 26. A—M Thyrsis
128. 4. A—M Thyrsis 5. A—E omit "*is*" 7. KLM sweet 18. FG tittle 25. E worlds BD—M shall yeld 26. FGK decke your LM deck you BDE wish your comparison 28. A—M Thyrsis

# NOTES

129. 5. FGI—M *from the* 6. HI *love with lovers hurt is*  
 11. A—I *hope fayling* BD—M *lives pleasure* 13. A—M  
 Thyrsis 16. M *if so mean* 18. M *seeds* 22. A—M  
*she did beare*

130. 6. E *charmes* 7. A—M *case* KLM *Muse my, my*  
*sorrow* 9. BD—M *one point* 11. A—M *can foile* 15. A—M  
*thrall* 16. A—M Thyrsis 27. L *we well the* 31—32. DE  
*have no space between l. 31 and l. 32* 32. E *omits Dorus*  
 34. DFGKLM *Here plaints*

131. 1. G—M *lamenting* 2. C *wares* 6. KLM *dolor*  
 10. A—M Thyrsis A—M *thus my* 12. A—M *which too*  
*much sawe.* 13. *Instead of this line A—I have the following:*

*If shee still hate loves lawe,*

KLM :

*If shee did hate love's law,*

14. CF—M *earthly* A—M *doth melt* 15. CF—M *earthly*  
 17. KLM *heart fire* 19. A—M *Thus doth* 20. A—M Thyrsis  
 A—M *Thus doth* 21—22. *Instead of these lines A—M have the*  
*following:*

*That I growe like the beaste,  
 Which beares the bytt a weaker force doth guide,*

23. *Instead of this line A—I have the following:*

*Yet patient must abide.*

KLM :

*Yet patience must abide.*

24—26. *Instead of these lines A—M have the following:*  
*Such weight it hath which once is full possest.*  
 Dorus. *Such weight it hath which once is full possest*  
*That I become a vision.*

27. *Instead of this line A—I have the following:*

*Which hath in others head his only being*

KLM :

*Which hath in others held his only being,*

28. *Instead of this line A—M have the following:*

*And lives in fancie seing.*

29. *Instead of this line A—I have the following:*

*O wretched state of man in selfe division !*

KL :

*O wretched state of man in self-divisions !*

30—32. *Instead of these lines A—M have the following:*

Thyrsis. *O wretched state of man in selfe division*  
*O well thou saiest ! a feeling declaration*  
*Thy toong hath made of Cupids deepe incision.*

33. A—M *But now hoarse voyce, doth* 35. A—M *singing thou hast*  
*got the*

132. 1. A—M *singing thou hast got the* 2. A—M *have " Good*  
 Thyrsis *mine," instead of " New friend of mine ; "* 3. A—FH—M

# NOTES

*My hart doth G My hearth doth 4. A—M hadst facilitie 5. E thy goddessse 8—9. This Eclogue...commendations. This sentence is not in the folio editions 10—19. Cf. Appendix p. 565 ll. 4, 32, 37*

*132. 19—140. 30. this songe...vaine annoy. In all the folio editions this passage is to be found in the third Eclogues*

*132. 20. A—M had ever subjected 23. A—D the couthe 33. G—M eye D chipping notes*

*133. 9. LM shepherds 14. E—M our wits 21—22. E has no space between l. 21 and l. 22 24. E—M because I loved 27. F—M recounted be 29. LM omit "was" 35. DE into hem*

*134. 2. I where n' order is 6. BDE beast 28. LM with you love 30. LM cloathed 33. I song*

*135. 4. HI her eyes faire 30. M omits "not"*

*136. 7. C omits "he" 8. E—M murther 13. M common 20. E—M may 21. C When fall on they 23. HKLM be us'd 30. A—M glorie M swelly in 35. C you strengths*

*137. 1. E—M will I sing 4. FG domewards 11. L what shee 17. C omits be 17—19. KLM print this is...them-selvs in Italics 20. KLM melancholy 32. D pray you*

*138. 20. C Pulling KLM Puling G—M have "or" instead of "and" 19. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 48 21. D cars*

*139. 4. KLM their servants 9. D live alone 11. F—M this life 13. L good good haps 25. FGKLM The father 28. HI The common-wealth 39. F—M fault*

*140. 5. HI content 7. E—M these are your 11. D wonders 31. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 29 32—33. easilie...his person. In all the folio editions this sentence occurs in the third Eclogues*

*140. 33—141. 2. But Basilus to...performed in. This passage is not in the folio editions, but cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 30*

*141. 2—143. 9. this doble Sestine...song at evening. In all the folio editions this passage is to be found in the second Eclogues*

*141. 8. A—M give 20. M affliction*

*142. 19. BD—I all those 29. A—M I hate my selfe 30. KLM my ears 31. HI maintaine*

*143. 3. C whose reproche 4. KLM mourning 8. A—M transfer Klaius to l. 9 10—13. Zelmane seing...Philocleas eares. Cf. Appendix p. 566 l. 1 13—14. laying fast...Hope. Cf. Appendix p. 563 l. 23 24. G—M becomes KLM monument HI our praise 28. DF—M but as death 31. LM humane lives*

*144. 5. G—M omit "doo" 6. BD—M doth hap. 7. KLM deceived 9—14. What exclaiming...unto it. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 1 14—16. Yea, he fel...body. Cf. Appendix p. 566 l. 7 16—18. But the...time waste. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 16 18—20. and therefore...one side. This sentence does not occur in the folio editions 20—23. and considering...death. Cf. Appendix p. 564 ll. 17, 22*

*145. 8. F—M pastorall times 10. F—M of the 13. A—M angry 18. LM whose deserts 22. ABCE—M terrors 24. I his vice 29. A—M to be witnesse*



# NOTES

146. 5. A—M *omit* or 7. C and on essentiall 8. KLM  
*have now instead of most* 21. KLM *omit* were 27. K *omits*  
*it before is at end of line* 31. KLM desire A—M *no inverted*  
*commas in margin* 31—32. KLM *print* in shame there...of shame in  
*Italics* 37. A—M *no inverted commas in margin* LM *print* a  
*lamentable...mind in Italics* 38. E drew thitherwards, in hope  
39. A—M paced
147. 7. C *has no division into stanzas* G *your labour*  
9. BDF—M *you did so send* 12. KL sights 27. C much  
thou art 28. H—M thou wast 32. I *omits* like.  
34—36. A—M *omit* and the more I...hoping.
148. 3. A—M spoke E *omits* a 8. LM to miserie  
11. A—M morning early of 13. F—M looked 25. I *has*  
*my instead of me*
149. 8. C his complaining 10. C *has no division into stanzas*  
11. KLM *transpose "soule" and "shape"* 17. A—M *doo homage*  
*unto* 27. A—M gotten some leasure 28. M he did her  
35. A—M able to discern
150. 3. F most lonely 12. D intents 29. LM *omit* up  
35. HI minde, as will with the humblest 36. HI *omit* to before re-  
ceive 37. HI speake of any
151. 9. G—M want of what 10. I my behalfe 34. H—M  
Tired therewith
152. 2. H—M Flannell 6. A—M and how with the same  
8. A—M *Dametas* holding KLM hands 12. A—M un-  
featie 25. LM languishing 26. BD—M *omit* us BD—M yet  
I am 38. DF—M in her owne
153. 2. M power 7. C desire
154. 2. A—M voyd of counsell 6. A—M that it could  
15. A—M grudge not at their C bodes 16. C enjoyning  
18. HI I have 22. E burdens 24—25. LM *print* nothing  
is...attempted in *Italics* 25—26. LM *print* Lying still...forward in  
*Italics* 28. BD—M one after another
155. 1. I eyes 9. KLM to *Mopsa* 12. A—M Princesse  
the better 14. BDFG baggage not to winne 23. LM *omit* in  
25. C *has no division into stanzas* 34. D *worthies* 37. BD—M  
mine eye
156. 1. A—M setting 3. A—M fortune must be the measure  
19. A—M *omit* of 20. L as in his soul devoted M as in his  
Soul is devoted 22. KLM hands 25. A—M wrieng her waste  
31. L *omits* in before Fortune 40. FG vertues shines KLM  
virtues shine
157. 6. D mortall would 20. KL most confess 24. H—M  
Lover 26. C tender 27. E *omits* a 30. BD—M pro-  
duced thus 33. M she should 40. M my eye
158. 4. G—M engraven 15. KLM and that my 20. C  
judgement 28. F—M inclosed 30—31. KLM *print* that as  
well...onset in *Italics*
159. 2. I discern my desires F—M *omit* I 3. F—M  
honourable Ladie 4. F—M doted you 8. B—M *omit* commas

# NOTES

- in margin* 19. I matters of HI tragedie 26. I lost duties 27. E omits his before friends
160. 7. A—M occasions 11. HI widdowhood LM widowed  
 15. DFH—M much must I say G much I say 16. E make me  
 33. HI omit a 34. D say was
161. 7. A—I omit his KLM *Musidorus's* infortunes HI misfortunes  
 8. A—M infirmities 10. F—M omit the 15. F—M beautie had  
 26. BDF—M cause 27. BDF—I at last EKLM at least
162. 2. A—M are too monstrous 5. HI his tale 11. BD—M mine owne  
 21. A—M your being here 24. A—M either  
 28. HI omit as 37. E omits his mariage
163. 5. A—M was thus to 18. E omits (said he) 27. A—M their Prince  
 30. I Historiographers 31. I Astrologe  
 34. KLM insert is before to shew 38. E has :
- On barren sweetes they feeding sterve :*
164. 2. England's Helicon desires 9. A—M her noble hart  
 20. I speake 23. KLM *Menalcas's* brother 23—24. C brother ;  
 & here I know 28. A—M omit highe
165. 13. G—M just as we 28. A—M will spurre 35. A—M omit a
166. 9. G—M omit his LM omit in 13. KLM of a rebound  
 34. A—M though but in
167. 1. A—M imbracing 11. HI of himselfe
167. 40—168. 1. F—M flie out quite another
168. 11. A—M wine-press 15. H *prints part in Italics*
16. HILM burden 32. F—M she to lie
169. 9. LM the sweet 14. A—M whose tender 16. C force chosing  
 17. F—M to a point 24. DE lovely place  
 28. D we made LM of a most
170. 1. F—M her selfe to that 8. E—M omit by 29. KLM ere she was  
 A—M the badge 35. BD—M hath an
171. 12. E—M Waking did 24. A—M descended 33. BD—M lockes
172. 7. A—M banished 17. ILM omit as 20. C has no division into stanzas
173. 16. LM she had present 17. DF—M retraction 19. C has no division into stanzas  
 BD—M a stedfast 21. KLM defile my fancies  
 FHI no comma after "defaste" 22. A—M shames
174. 16. M extremity 17. H hath oppressed
175. 7. F—M most excellent 19. A—M she ravingly have
176. 8. A—M sorow 13. M Law of the 24. LM and their  
 35. KLM whether did you 36. M Pastorals sports
177. 11. A—M pretend 16—17. A—M constancy 28. C omits so  
 33. KLM whatever hee
178. 12. I omits but 13. BD—M slow of beliefe 36. A—M dancer  
 40. F—M omit is

# NOTES

179. 8. A—M change did 34. E all but one 39. A—M  
fine cleenes
180. 4. LM strength of mine 5. A—M confesse, that as
181. 1. E shall 8. C shill shine 11. A—M and too  
late 16—17. A—M you, the onely honour 22. A—M so ever  
he be 30. I omits since 38. KLM delivered how
182. 20. E my sister 34. F—M their walking
183. 3. A—M omit But 4. A encreased, But cæ C en-  
creased But came (*There is a dot after encreased which looks like a*  
*broken comma*) BDF—M increased, but came 6. C condition  
8—9. A—FI time a day GHKLM time aday 13. DF—M of  
the agony
184. 4. ABD—M for victories C as victories 38. A—ILM  
latter.
185. 7. E not want 21. M now I wear 24. A—M to the  
age
186. 1. E—M taxation 3. G—M place of the 4. A—M  
as the abiding 10. E—M they shining 14. I were fault-  
finding F—M & so given to 17. E—M omit a 40. A—M  
*insert and his lawes before as it were* A—M his axioms
187. 10. A—M omit can E—M omit if 20. A—M delight  
in their 26. AC by an accasion BD—I by an occasion KLM  
by occasion 32. A—M was come 34. A—M betweene their
188. 5. KLM folks 33. I omits his 39. E—M requiring  
A—M of life
189. 9. A—M time so set KLM omit of 14. A—M of  
*Musidorus* 23. D cruell heart F—M ill 31. D uttermost  
heart
190. 11. KLM an habit 15. A—M nothing I so much
38. I yeares of war
191. 10. LM bound in his 12. A—M till now being both sent  
for by *Euarchus*, & finding *Pyrocles* able
192. 28. M others 30. LM where the
193. 2. KLM thunder 5. A—M floting kingdomes 6. L  
natural 7. A—M the desolation A—HKLM far-being I  
far being 10. F—M omit a 12. A—M stricken 16. I  
accused D on point 19. A—M omit not 24. H—M daies  
cleerenesse EM so blindly
194. 1. A—M roaring voices 3. KLM passion 6. I for  
his 9. KLM in the huge 17. KLM *Musidorus's* infancie  
25. G—M of a great 32. A—M they mente to
195. 9. A—M Navie they lately had, they had left but one little peece  
5. A—M exceeding 33. F—M on him, and
196. 14. BDE *print Phrigia in Roman type* 16. LM wicked  
say, ever 36. BDE *print Thessalia in Roman type* 37. A—K  
unsuccesse LM success
197. 3. A—M no humour 3—4. LM *print* there is no...service-  
able in *Italics* 4. M whom impudent 5. A—M those of desperate

# NOTES

- ambition 7. F—M as a servitude 11. KLM stirred up a  
 16. E—M their faces 21. L determining 27. A—M he  
 thought A—M take him away A—M from being 28. F—M  
 things prepared 34. I destroyed vertue 39. BD *print* Pontus  
*in Roman type* E—M have "*Bithynia*" instead of "*Pontus*"
198. 8. A—M he ever profest 18. F—M the Tyrant  
 21. A—M the worke 28. I that notable 30. E—M of the  
 conquerour 31. A—M welcome praie 31—32. A—M *omit*  
 that wisht...worste of all:
199. 1. KLM causeth 25. HIM murder 32. D this  
 case 34. KLM *Pamela* smiling
200. 1. A—M making it a KLM *omit* in 3. KLM they  
 slew 34. M Art or some 35. F—M by some chauce  
 37. E—M with a loud
201. 5. A—M wiser 11. G—M grow to a 22—23. I  
 to deliver them 27. BD—M fostered up in
202. 1. I hand 5. I for of good 6. KLM incline  
 14. I the magnificence 17. A—M and *instead of* or 18. I  
 avenge 24. KLM bearing up E—M land of *Bithynia*  
 27. G—M of the country 28—29. A—M revengefulness  
 30. A—M inconstant in his
203. 9. M burden 25. A—M *insert* death of the *after* late  
 BD—H *print* Phrigia *in Roman type* 38. A—M bubble blowne up
204. 1. A—M foresaw their 12. ABCE—M enclining  
 17. A—KM to their dead carcasses L to their death carcasses 22. KL  
 marriage to the 33. M on the top
205. 6. E—M worthy 21. A—M pleased 33. A—M  
 hands: and so they were
206. 1. E—M *omit* ever A—M make one occasion 5. G—M  
 valour
207. 4. A—M which a certaine A—M *omit* it 14. A—M  
 there *instead of* these 17. E—M grieve, and my
208. 11. HI have had mee 14. KLM ingrafted 23. C  
 years *instead of* eares 30. A—M prove some ominous 36. A—M  
 such a one 39. I no farther 40. F *omits a before* *bastarde*
209. 3. A—M or to doo 5. ABD be used E—M she  
 used 9. A—M remembrance, of naughtinesse delights 10. A—M  
 his trappes 27. EFGKLM my sea 29. KLM *omit* my  
 34. KLM murderers 38. A—M felt a pittie 39. A—M  
 unsaine duety
210. 6. F—M reckoning 7. A—M of doing himselfe  
 11. A—M well deserving 25. HI filiall pitie 28. BD—M  
 agonie 29. BD—M so you shal 32. CKLM to take  
 38. CF—KM his brother
211. 2. CF—M but of two 7. A—M assayled 29. BD—M  
 it in others 31. A—M *omit* their 32. G—M valour
212. 18. G—M once united by 28. E—I this access of  
 KLM his access of 29. HI bale no longer A—M vitall spirites  
 32. F—M *omit* for 35. A—M *omit* men

# NOTES

213. 1. A—M turningnes A of of sleights C off of sleights  
 3. M grow of good 7. M denial will but 8. M make the  
 the fault 10. D alive into hands 26. M Minister 28. A—M  
 had more come 30. KLM omit his 32. L *Plexirtos* 34. C  
 leave 35. G—M enjoy some benefite
214. 1. BD—I *print Lycia and Armenia in Roman type* 4. BD—I  
*print Armenia in Roman type* 10. E—HKLM *Euardus* I *Evardus*  
 12. A—M omit two 13. M commendation 14. A—M omit  
 yong 16. BD—I *print Lycia in Roman type*
215. 6. E—M I kneeled 7. A—D hardy earnestnes E—M  
 my graces E—M said I 16. M power 22. M farther  
 30. E—M as I 31. E—M my selfe
216. 4. G—M stole 11. KLM and speaking 12. M  
 River side 13. M in Greece M the praise 22. A—M  
 still would slippe 31. D thought it was 32. A as on bodie  
 C as no one bodie
217. 8. C omits it 25. M of a shrugging. 27. C omits so
218. 3. C make warres 8. E—K plaid then 12. KLM  
 omit he 16. C countenance 30. M whereunto 32. E—M  
*perfection* 33. M *tongues may*
219. 2. KLM *angels* 5. HIM *two heavenly* 30. M *to*  
*kiss*
220. 6. D *wantons nests* 16. F—M *Indians* 25. D *doth*  
*untie* 29. BD—L *their glad* M *there glad* 37—38. E—M  
*omit commas in margin* 40. A—M *Hir thighes*
221. 2. E—M *her stately* 3. G—M *cliffes* 28. A—M  
*hate-spott* F—M *Emerlin* 38. *Warn Snow*
222. 12. E—M *dwell therein* 17. HI *perfection* 27. KLM  
*rayment* 29. M of *instead of* upon 30. M bearing it away  
 G—M But when *Zelmane* 36. F—M in her selfe shee had
223. 6. KLM of themselvs 12. E—M sith 13. M my  
 self to part 22. C his two 24. E—M sith 29. G—M  
*bastinado* 33. KL bearing [*catchword, instead of* harkening] M hearing  
 [*catchword*] 36. D kill courtesie
224. 26. M omits yet 29. BD—M *print Macedon in Roman type*
225. 1. I *prints Arcadian in Roman type* 11. E *solitarie paces*  
 16. D left the smart 28. M hate to *Zelmane*
226. 16. BD—M omit the 20. M omits and 26. D omits  
 had 27. KLM he was forced 31. D at the first 34. F  
 omits if
227. 2. F—M omit "*long*" 11. CDF—M *spirites* 16. C  
*life is helpe* 21. F—M *Which cries* 32. HI *judgements*  
 35. F—M *mournefull*
228. 12. M *then dip so* 17. A—M *have:*  
*(Though in despaire) for Love so forceth me;*
18. A—L *shall Erona* M *shall Erona's* 25. KLM *dost move*  
 26. A—M *causefull* 35. KLM omit "*that*" 36. A—M  
*beate us on to blisse*

# NOTES

229. 2. A—M *Of windes* 7. BD *enflame* 14. HI *the*  
*spoyles* 17. C *What mynd* 21. LM *heavens* 32. A—M  
*flames* 36. E—M *omit commas in margin* 37. M *his face*  
39. HI *onely lace*
230. 1. LM *touch* A—M *we did* 2. A—M *that hand*  
M *spent* 6. M *be spent* 12. D *must prone* 20. A—M  
*these childish* 23. C *lamentation* 31. BD—M *knew*  
32. A—M *From any joy* 33. KLM *In mortall* 35. M  
*Which swelling* 36. M *help* 37. B—M *painfulnesse*  
39. A—M *this ougly*
231. 15. A—M *outward* A—M *that most* 30. M *farther*  
32. A—M *this Dialogue*
232. 2. M *omits a* 3. A—M *omit unto him after fully*  
17. A—M *Lydia* 21. A—M *Lydia* 23. M *omits that*  
24. G—M *it could be no* 26. M *all them statues* 28. ACF—M  
*Lydians* BDE *Lydians* 35. C *omits of after king* BD—I  
*print Armenia in Roman type*
233. 3. KLM *by perswasions* KLM *by threatnings* 9. A—M  
*omit by before knife* 14. M *to to the holy* 19. F—M *no man*  
CKLM *nor child* 35. M *praise her self* 36. C *tow*  
39. BD—I *print Lycians in Roman type*
234. 3. M *on both* 6. I *Evardes* M *Euardus* 22. E—M  
*were of farre greater* 23. M *Pyracles* H *Evardes* M *Euardus*  
24. BD—I *print Bithinia and Hircania in Roman type* 28. M  
*Pyracles* H *Evardes* 29. M *these Princes*
235. 1. M *omits as* 5. A—M *her to preserve* 6. CG—K  
*united* 14. A—M *shalbe still gnawing* 23. M *omits in*  
25. A—M *partie*
236. 3. A—M *fruits of denying* A—M *omit As* 6. M  
*Amphilus's* F—L *further* M *farther* 8. KLM *for his*  
*death* 11. A—M *conditions* 15. KLM *omit yet to* 17. LM  
*know* 19. M *constancy* 24. E—M *or weapon* HI *or by*  
30. M *lamentation* 31. LM *unto the world* 32. F—M *by*  
*all meanes* 35. M *reward* 38. LM *omit all*
237. 8. C *your years*
238. 3. A—M *full in your* A—M *tattlings* 6. KLM  
*omit it after have* 9. F—M *omit a before seven* 13. M *in my*  
*neck* 17. HI *old instead of wold* 18. HI *old instead of wold*  
19. M *omits as* 34. C *a long lace* M *omits of before a man*  
37. M *skirked*
239. 2. HI *of faire* 3. BD—M *parenthesis after priest, not*  
*before* GKLM *put the concluding parenthesis after had* EF *no*  
*concluding parenthesis* 5. D *we said* BD—M *ballads* 19. M  
*deceit* 21. AC *blinde young, with* BD—G *blind, young with*  
HIKLM *blind, young, with* 26. M *arrows too* 35. M *of*  
*such* 37. M *did breed* 38. *Instead of this line A—M have the*  
*following:*

*To lye, to steale, to pry, and to accuse,*

# NOTES

240. 2. A—M *feete* 11. F—M *omit "stil"* H *be deckt*  
I *bedeckt* 17. *Instead of this line* A—L *have the following:*  
*But for that Love is worst which rules the eyes,*  
M *has :*  
*But for that Love is worst that rules the eyes,*  
18. A—M *Thereon* 19. M *rivel'd Cupid* 25. A—M *The*  
Ladies 28. M *should* 30. M *with the beautifying her* 35. D  
would be  
241. 4. C *prehemencie* 8. BDEFH—L *that did ever* M  
*omits did* 12. M *omits of* 19. KL *print* And so...rejoice *in*  
*Roman type* M *prints in May...rejoyce in Roman type* HIM *they*  
*stole* 25. F—M *blessing, never to aske him* 31. KLM *such*  
*instead of as* 32. M *Skrich-owl* 40. M *to the second*  
242. 4. F—M *of that bargain* 8. M *the instead of this*  
26. BD *his King* 30. KLM *beeing at first married*  
243. 3. KLM *omit in before himself* E—M *omit a after and*  
14. A—M *onely outside* 16. M *the point* 27. M *one to*  
*the other* 34. E—M *make them* 38. M *Father into a*  
244. 3. A—M *attempt* 11. M *omits a before less* M  
*omits of before thre* 12. M *behaved himself* 16. M *omits all*  
24. A—M *so freedily* 25. *After mourning* A—M *insert garments*  
32. M *fall to despair* 38. BD—GKLM *omit I before repeat*  
245. 7. A *thinking on other* B—M *thinking on no other* 8.  
BD—M *at first* E—M *measures* 12. M *victorious over*  
*the* 17. EFGKLM *besides was* HI *besides that she was* 25. A  
*harm form* 31. F—M *print Sycophants in Italics*  
246. 12. I *putting off objection* 15. F—M *many like*  
16—17. KLM *print Ambition...lingring in Italics* 17—18. KLM  
*print ever urgeth...successes in Italics*  
247. 12. BD—M *affection* 24. A—M *made hideous*  
27. A—M *hill where upon his* 36. HI *strove, strove to be* M  
*starve, starve to be* 37. GHKLM *bolled I boeled*  
248. 6. C *who though they* 14. M *omits he* 18. BD—M  
*brought thus to* 19. F—M *the same* 27. LM *omit him after*  
*give* 29. M *farther* 34. M *bring him to a* 35. BD *she*  
*should*  
249. 5. HI *out of every* 7. BD *husbands mother* 11. E—M  
*to put to her* 17. A—M *with a sword* 20. F—M *naked, yet*  
*standing* 40. HI *engraven*  
250. 3. A—M *did even* 5. F—M *in his Court* 10. HI  
*tortures* 14. F—M *omit it* 18. G—M *hatred on* 31. M  
*his Sons council* 35. A—M *whose cause* 36. F—M *omit that*  
M *omits it*  
251. 4. M *in valor* 20. I *sometimes use* 23. M *is*  
*sacrificed*  
252. 1. AC *were not only* 6. KLM *of the divels* 15. F  
*the could be* 17. G—M *sleep in their* 20. M *comforts*  
21. M *omits up* 23. DM *chasted* 26. G—M *changling?*  
*happy, be they* KLM *that bee not* 27. M *omits thy* D *to*

# NOTES

- this respect 32. KLM the head 28. HI a great part D with so wicked 31. M comly argument E—M only desire
253. 3. A kept form 5. C *omits* more *before* his 9. KLM mishap 10. B—M blesse 15. DM too ill matched 19. LM over to the 20. HI of good old 31. LM is the work 37. F—M from beyond F—M trees 38. I she hand fully
254. 5. HI (said she) 20. HI asswaging 21. I my heart 24. G—M bent to 27. KLM no *instead of* to *after* yield 29. BD he should
255. 11. D words with Desire 15. BD over-burthened 23. I to disdain 24. I name of Father 33. M farther 36. M import
256. 8. F—M *omit* so 30. E—L streame
257. 2. M duty 9. C *has no division into stansas* M wine eyes 11. M *face even wherein* 15. KLM *thought* 16. E—M *breath* 17. F—M *sound of this* 18. C he doth 20. A—M *griefe* 28. M feet 30. A—M whose delight 32. M *omits a* F—M lighting E—M *omit of before* beauty
258. 20. F—I consisted 27. A—M passe by the KLM respect 32. KLM hath com 36. M *omits* all
259. 11. A—M me into a 27. BD let it be E—M let it not be 33. M decree 37. C how he should
260. 7. BD surfet joy 28. F—M should I doe
261. 2. E—M to be loved 10. H *Evarchus* M had almost 15—18. E—M mouthes did, they passed the promise of mariage: which faine *Pyrocles* would have sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire; but *Philoclea* commanded the contrary. 33. BD—M my eares M so sweetly be fed 38. M farther
262. 5. A—M that entertainment 9. A—M might 13. E—M sith 14. A—M give it the hearing 22. F hold his 23. KLM *omit* so 25. G pottomelesse
263. 6. A—M deeds 8. BD—M *print* Giants in Roman type 13. BDE chosen *Tiridates* 22. A—M challenge unto me 27. KLM *omit* had 28. D had *instead of* hath 29. E—M borne universally the 34. M and would needs go alone 38. D then any thing in 39. G—M what ever before K I had do 40. G what ever theres, or
264. 3. ILM such a mist K a such mist 5. A—M heaven G—M requite to him 8. GKLM stayed 10. HI strove 16. LM I after knew 19. G sore feeling 22. A—M adveture, which (though 33. DLM making my E—M eares 39—40. BD—M *transpose* they and continually
265. 10. G—M to get away 20. A—M ran all away 29. D she should A—M the sharpe remembrance 34—35. C Gentlemen
266. 3. M *omits* is 8. HI words full of 9. KLM such an one 11. A—M the delight A to thers 13. KLM such an one 23. KLM gave way 30. HIM what he had 31. KLM was the Prince 35. LM we would not 37. C *transposes* use and his



# NOTES

267. 6. ABD—H in end 9. AC by her owne 20. M  
omits a before triumph 21. KLM to him 25. HI greatest  
occasion 34. A—M joyne in fellowship
268. 18. M whatsoever 23. BD lowlinesse 27. I omits  
in before my selfe 37. ABC villanie
269. 3. M with that trifling 17. I injures 29. A—E  
in ende 33. M till he were
270. 15. B rad upon me 17. A—M omit but 22. F—M  
astonied 29. A—M omit it 30. E—M say true 32. E—M  
omit to
271. 3. M beholden to 5. LM the instead of that 12. M  
sight to me 22. A in in mine 33. HI railed 36. I  
omits as
272. 3. M as it were 11. M transposes with and only  
13—14. KLM print amongst...unpunished in *Italics*
273. 16. A—M omit a 19. D omits of 23. A—M  
mischances 28. M she had deserved 32. A—GKLM should  
finde want HI should finde wants
274. 2. M had so lately 3. A—M omit rather 4. F—M  
omit a 12. A—M for what I had 23. A—M talke of nothing  
30. HI grieved 33. F—M with that he had
275. 5. BD—M omit tyed 10. EFGKL of a 11. M her  
hand 18. KLM to the Captain A—M Garrison neere by FG  
which thought 24. ABD—HK omit in 27—28. KLM print  
a churle's courtesie...falshood in *Italics* 28. A—L rarely M  
seldome 29. F—M maners 32. C omits I 36. A—M  
And so we
276. 6. M omits I had 9. A—M omit commas in margin  
G—M guiltines 11. E—M omit yet 17. A—M he found  
23. M to farther 27. BD—M transposes before and I 39. A—M  
of the worthy
277. 17. A—M alas poore
278. 1. I for *Anaxiūs* 2. A learne thing A gone no  
out 4. I with the 11. A—M raines of affection 18. M  
to march 19. M transposes neither and guided 35—36. A—M  
omit inverted commas in margin
279. 2. A—M with his reproch 4. M decree 6. M as  
abused 12. M to stay 16. E—M her, as now 17. A—M  
yet a while she M omits so 18. A—D tempted 22. A—M  
omit that KLM not to be 28. E—M but instead of how M  
wandering 33. A—M one request 38. A—M because instead  
of that
280. 6. E—M state 7. A—M we had had C parenthesis  
before in E—M omit parenthesis after "*Galatia*" 11. A—M our  
armes 17. M omits a 18. C restraint to so 23. BD—M  
in a captivity 25. A—M insert had before saved 29. M would  
express 35. M him to send 38. A—M pleasures were directed  
to the

# NOTES

281. 8. AC hath a spot 13. E—M his Queene 18. A—M most noble *Plangus* 22. E—M *omit* not 40. M their being
282. 1. M farther 5. I alas more the 10. HI follow this 15. KLM *print* what in *Italics* 16. KLM *print* why in *Italics* 25. KLM *omit* fit before time
283. 1. A—M did *instead of* indeede A—M proclaime 2. A—M that people 7. A—M *omit* and 21. H drawne: could shee I drawne, could shee 24. A—M countries about her were 26. G—M the threatned 34. A—M *omit* by 38. C *transposes* I and have
284. 11. LM as that time 19. KLM servant 20. LM *Andronama* 24. M farther A—M sonne, nor ever to 27. F—M *insert* an before eye LM Wee are 31. LM run a Tilt 32. KLM stranger
285. 3. C neere the moone 7. FG wood 9. F—M of that time 10. HI Ladies departure A—M among whom 12—13. M *PHILISIDIS* 19. HI *omit* so 22. A—DF—ILM a crosse 26. KLM *transpose* I and have 27. QA *LElius* C *L. Elius* 30. M *omits* the 31. M *omits* but 34. KLM *omit* close
286. 10. G—M wilderness 13. M *omit* in 30. A—M farre into 34. A—M the partie 35. C otherwaies 39. A—M night on the
287. 1. LM fit time A—M the deliverie 4. M commanded 7. M farther 21. G—M *omit* a 25. HI not fearing M esteemed a few words 26. A—M many unjust 27. M both we 30. E—M now had we the 32. M their assailers
288. 8. I *omits* the 9. A—M her fault 10. KLM had com 15. A—M would have 19. KLM *omit* the 22. M *omits* I after wherein 23. M not only A—D praiers C are from 35. KLM *omit* a 36. A—M goe on in his 37. KLM *omit* how
289. 11. M sand 24. KLM *omit* and 30. A—M a wethercocke
290. 12. M impudent 24. CD kindnesse 25. A—M of his cruell handling *Dido* 26. KLM it would 27. F—L for him
291. 14. A—M her into my 17. M particulars 23—24. KLM *print* there is...becaus hee love's in *Italics* 28. M apprentice, no bond-slave 34. A—M mervailed 36. M *transposes* I and then 37. A—M a childish inexperience 38. A—M more cleere unto
292. 1. A—M But in such sort 5. M our selves into either 10. F—M called *instead of* towarde 17. M do give 22. A—M the most martiall D *omits* a 23. A—M bewondred E—M rare beautie 27. C the time 40. FGHKLM into a stray I into a strange
293. 3. E—L would he 4. M not he suffer 9. M *omits* it 17. A—M vertue to rule it 24. KLM that gracious

# NOTES

294. 10. C thought not 14. A—M even *instead of* ever  
 15. KLM each other, from delivering 18. FGH *omit as* 21. E—M  
 each promised 25. D no more then those 28. A—M those  
 two worthie 30. M in their pitiful 34. M than dying in him-  
 self 37. M having believing
295. 3. M *transposes us and to* A—M care of him 12. M  
 we learned 13. A—M story 25. E—M *omit but* 27. A—M  
 the case M farther M *transposes I and did*
296. 1. C and the excellencie 5. M school than Love  
 7. A—M *Otanes* 8. M of six 16. D—M *print* Giants in  
*Roman type* 20. A—M with all speede 26. M went to seek  
*Tydeus* 31. M we enquiring 32. M farther 39. M fell  
 presently 40. HIM swounings KL swoundings
297. 6. A—M harbingers 11. A—M *transpose it and is*  
 12. A—M gives me 22. A—M the modestie LM are amazed  
 25. BD—M *transpose we and forthwith* 31. A—M shortly would  
 oppresse 33. A—M with that word she wept 38. A—M thinke  
 that I was
298. 2. G doe, because 8. A—M your well placed  
 11. A—M manner 12. A—M *omit I* 14. KLM enfeebled  
 24. I justly received 28. A—M come once into 32. F—M  
 that I may do 33. A—M *transpose may and yet* 37. M when  
 you were 40. M petitions
299. 3. M her of her lightness 6. M and *instead of* that  
 11. A—M was of her selfe 26. A—M *Otanes* BD—M *print*  
*Giants in Roman type* 27. M that *instead of* as 28—29. A—M  
 so far engaged 39. A—M auncient Lord 40. C good Castle
300. 2. M *Plexirtua* 8. C that one child-birth 10. A—M  
 cunning to winne 15. M by *Trebisond* 18. C forget  
 19. A—M private 20. M giving himself 21. M their thought  
 28. F—M to a death 33. K *omits a before* Tygre 37. A—L  
 his beasf 39. M there *instead of* they A—M had in that G—M  
 monstrous strength
301. 4. F—M to perish 7. BD—M *omit inverted commas in*  
*margin* 7—8. KLM *print the journey...ways in Italics* 11. A—M  
 not to trouble 24. D hast bene 25. M great friends  
 30. A—M *Otanes* 38. A—M *Otanes*
302. 30. CDG—M renowned 32. CDG—M renowned  
 36. KLM of the comparison
303. 1. M judges to speak 6. A—M longer from *Erona*  
 7. A—M who had made 9. KLM who, seemed a 10. KLM  
*omit parenthesis* 24. KLM *omit so* M our selves unto 31. K  
 hath been LM have been 33. A—M And so having
304. 11. G—M while I live 17. I—M upon an old 19. F—M  
 into my mind 25. AC *commas in margin* 30. A—M shore, so  
 that they sawe 31. HI *insert he after* Then 32. GHI came  
 to the captain 33. HI it would seeme G—M dissuaded
305. 7. LM knew in time 16. G—M of the swords 19. L—M  
 drave us two 21. LM *print less evill...a friend in Italics* 29. A—M  
 evill auditours 30. A—M but by being last alive 33. M were

# NOTES

- reduced M *omits* when 34. M weary, weary of those 35. M was fast tied 39. KLM *omit* a *before* fire
306. 6. LM *print* a common...war *in Italics* 7. G—M all we are E—M by some man 13. M till truly 17. M as it might 22. LM to abide it 25. M *omits* owne 28. CF—M to abide 40. KLM such manner
307. 11. A—M knew 17. I tell your meeting: for 24. A—M desired him that 31. H—M *transpose* so *and* be
308. 2. KLM *aids* spake 22. A—M And so went 24. KLM so much molested 28. E—M with such anguish
309. 3. M had been an 11. KLM smiling 34. A—M fault 37. D though wise
310. 2. M *omits* and 7. E—M *other of Jealousie* 8. E—I *transpose* "finde" and "I" 9. M *strength* 11. I *Love makes A wakes the the jealous* 15. HI *doe doleful* 16. I *my prayers prostrate* 19. M *jewel small*
311. 10. KLM *cried save* 21. F—M trembling 23. F—M *omit* a *after* such 24. E—M *omit* such HI *omit* an 25. A *omits* for 38. A—M made him runne among
312. 1. KLM him for ever 5. FGKLM they verie killing 6. KLM by conquering 10. G—M he had 12. E—M and his eyes 21. G—M being suter to 23. M he stoopedd 30. A—M upon the side
313. 5. A—M that he should 9. A—M skirmish 14. A—M stood stock still 24. E—M more outrageous 26. M mixt 28. A—M hindering the succour 32. F—M *transpose* onely *and* the 34. M opening
314. 3. KLM go up to 4. M guess of that A—M the court gate 9. G—M daring approach 12. KLM his kindness 31. M to their 32. M cruelty 33. K *omits* the *before* principal 38. E—M I am sent
315. 18. G—M looked to M he would never 22. F—M the farmers 24. A—M al the Gentlemē 30. HI mislikings 35. LM the riches 39. LM to dividing
316. 6. LM willing 7. E—M *omit* the 13. M pretence 23. A—M this zealous rage M bent to these 24. A—M there be *instead of* are 26. C new feared C Here he nether 30. F It I is then G It is I then 31. M *omits* it 34. C a strangers 37. HI on me 38. M farther 39. LM *omit* it
317. 5. M *omits* or KLM *omit* not 12. KLM to make 13. E—M meannesse 16—17. M andetermined 19. A—M with much labour 26. A—GKLM example a lesson to you HI example a lesson unto you 31. LM *omit* with
318. 7. I *transposes* you *and* now 19. A—M such an admirable 38. KLM bent again such 40. M did guide
319. 2. A—M fault on his 20. BDEF shamefastnesse, in nature, GH shamefastnesse in nature, I shamefac'tnesse in nature: KLM shamefastness in nature; 30. M in the peoples

## INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF POEMS

- A hatefull cure with hate to heale 325  
 Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last 227  
 And are you there old Pas? in troth I ever thought 344  
 Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light 328  
 As I my little flocke on Ister banke 132  
 Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie 127  
 Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde 113  
 Dorus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion 340  
 Faire rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace 352  
 His being was in her alone 557  
 I Joye in grieve, and doo detest all joyes 349  
 If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande 143  
 In faith, good Histor, long is your delay 137  
 In vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende 147  
 Let not old age disgrace my high desire 149  
 Loved I am, and yet complaine of Love 253  
 Me thought some staves he mist: if so, not much amisse 285  
 My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve 163  
 My words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde 173  
 Now thanked be the great God Pan 122  
 Now was our heav'nly vaulte deprived of the light 394  
 Over these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes 257  
 Poore Painters oft with silly Poets joyne 239  
 Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight 155  
 Since that to death is gone the shepheard hie 498  
 The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth 442  
 Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde 339  
 Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face 327  
 Transformd in shew, but more transformd in minde 76  
 Unto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth 357  
 We love, and have our loves rewarded 126  
 What length of verse can serve brave Mopsas good to show 21  
 What toong can her perfections tell 218  
 Wyth two strange fires of equall heate possest 310  
 You Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines 141  
 You living powres enclosed in stately shrine 172

## CORRIGENDA

130. 35. *Add inverted commas in the margin*  
231. 10. *Add full stop after Basilius*  
257. 4. *for you selves read your selves*  
262. 35. *for "Evardes" read "Euardes"*  
325. 13. *The mark of quotation should be in the margin*  
334. 5. *for towar[ds] read towar[d]s*







# NOTES

320. 4. M he had a prologue 5. M *omits* a 9. HI happy  
men 12. C your good Prince BD—HKLM or good *Basilius*  
20. A—M never stay 23. HI most upon the 27. KLM  
scambling 31. M as the blow 39. M None were

321. 1. EF taught then 8. M to heart 11. A—M feeding  
wildly 13. A—M in the chase 19. M hereafter 20. A—M  
sharp marks 23. BD know this frenzie 32. E—M ushers of  
his 34. E—M miles 35. I—M *omit* a 37. M dancing  
38. I boughs

322. 8. G nigh 25. KLM *omit* a *before* greatness 28. A—M  
God wott thought 31. E—M dislike 34. M if your arms

323. 4. BD live or go 18. A—M glorious name of liberty  
25. HI *omit* man FGLM speake to other 31. M funeral  
40. KLM *omit* to *before* your health

324. 5. M thither 13. KLM murthering 18. D what  
he did A—M reached not to the E—M hundreth 28. M  
farther 37. C then *instead* of them M in readiness

325. 13. A—M *omit* *commas* in margin 15. A—M undiscreece  
18. GHKLM safety wrought 21. G—M *omit* the *before* ranke  
23. M Cittern 25. A *omits* of *after* spite 27. C *has* no  
*division* into stanzas L to hel M to hell 30. A—M *be*  
*bob'd* 33. A—L others 34. AC *omit* "brave" 38. I  
*Who have*

326. 4. A—M of the cave 5. KLM was it is his 7. A—L  
fall 8. A—M *omit* *inverted* *commas* in margin 21. BD—M  
come with an 30. A—M this solitarie 39. FGKLM hold in  
(in my conceit) one H hold (in my conceit) in one

327. 2. M *transposes* not and good 9. ABC *And uncouth*  
11. C *they beer* 13. BD—M *In thine* 15. GHI *shalt*  
19. F—M unto me 23. A—M chaunceable 24. F—M the  
authority

328. 8. HI in that seat 13—14. A—M keeping them (while  
he lived) unmarried 21. M *earthy* 22. M *do ever shine* 23. A—M  
*spoile* 24. A—M *omit* *inverted* *commas* in margin A—M *snakish*  
*sinne* 25. BD Latonus 27. A—M *omit* *inverted* *commas* in  
margin 28. I *While brittle* C *painting* 30. M *the*  
*knowledge* 31. M *fruite* 34. A—M *omit* *inverted* *commas* in  
margin 35. LM *priviledg* 39. KLM in the best

329. 7. M farther 13. E—M *omit* a 19. C *Blangus*  
38. M *omits* more

330. 3. C bad so pulled 12. LM *transpose* "Pyrocles" and already  
13. LM those too 14. E—M *insert* like *before* good 30. A—M  
bounds 36. L other

331. 2. F—M measure to their false musick 3. F—M wisest  
and worthiest 4. E—M *omit* a *before* royall 5. H—M found  
our unblushing 6. A—M *insert* though *before* unjustly 8. C not  
in it self 15. A—M messages 18. A—M shee purposed  
26. A—M yong-mastered 29. F—M *concluding* *parenthesis* *instead*  
*of comma* *after* ground 30. M flatters 32. M farther 35. A—M  
would be 40. I can excuse

# NOTES

332. 1. HI way for her 11. BD—M murther 29. M in the two 31. M then taken 32. A—M begging of life  
40. F—M guiltinesse
333. 2. I Princesse 3. A—M women both more 16. B—E which he had not 30. BD he should yeeld 32. M love of her  
38. A—M could give
334. 4. M an year 22. C be the auctoritie 33. A—M this practise 37. KLM will to escape 39. F—M should lay
335. 9. A—M from her malice 14. A—M at the humble 16. F—M hated 18. BD—M *print* Pyramis in Roman type  
33. LM of a far
336. 3. F—M by oath E—M omit that 22. A—M any conditions 24. E—M omit not
337. 9. M and instead of that 19. C Noble-men 21. C of the time 24. B would not do 40. C omits & brother  
BD—M recovering of his
338. 1. C omits before 6. H *Evarchus* 11. KLM murdered 21. I accomodated him 22. H *Evarchus* 27. C omits well 32. H *Evarchus* 35. M farther 36. A—M saw allready ready for
339. 4. KLM a skirmish 13. A—M the Reasonable 14. BD—M *Reason. Thou* 16. BD—M *Passion. No* 17. BD—M *R. Can* 18. BD—M *P. If* 27. KLM *doth ensure* 31. A—M side 34. A—M *dimme* 37. C *your strength* 38. C *your weaknes* KLM *weakned*
340. 2. C Reason 3. KLM *abode* 10. E—M *Who to be weake* BD—M *do faine* 13. A—M *Passions yeeld at* 21. A—M *R. Then let* 22. A—M *P. Which* A—M *Passions kill* 32. HI *entred speech*
341. 6. I *vertues* 7. A—D *mettals* 9. E—M *soone change* 22. C *sheepe* 24. M *my slavery* 32. M *be gets*
342. 3. A—M *his booke* BD *lover* 4. C *waild* 16. D *thy name* 28. KLM *no parenthesis after "say"* E—M *me mischiefs* 29. K *has a comma after "reflection"* LM *a parenthesis* 31. BD *fam'd*
343. 3. I *then thou mine* KLM *ear* 4. LM *do breed* 5. L *omits "a"* 7. A—M *others woe* 8. KLM *omit "so"* 23. A—M *omit commas in margin* 25. A—M *omit commas in margin* 26. BD—M *it is zeale* A—M *omit commas in margin* 27. HI *hates* 34. A—L *blow* M *blows* A—M *no asterisk in margin*
344. 12—19. the more...requited. *This passage is not in the folio editions*
344. 20—348. 27. *This dialogue is not in the folio editions*
348. 28—349. 2. Some speech...persons. *This passage is not in the folio editions, but cf. Appendix p. 564 ll. 11, 12, 30*
349. 2—3. See Appendix p. 564 l. 40 6. ABD—M *delight am tyr'd* 12. M *darkness in my sight* 13. A—M *Dwell in my ruines, feede with* A—M *no comma at end of line* 21. A—M *conquerd harte* 22. KLM *no other* 37. BD—M *of sight a*

# NOTES

350. 3. KLM root 8. HK Klaius instead of Strephon 9. B But cause  
 13. M from anchors Hope 23. M the years is  
 24. A—M no comma at end of line 25. BDG—M Hatefully growne  
 BDEF sprong G—M sprung 37. A—M Thus, Thus alas, I had my

351. 1. A—M Thus, Thus alas, I had my 16. I transposes  
 "I" and "now" ACM shall fall 17. ABDEF soule have hent  
 CG—M soule have bent 20. KL earthy 21. L earthy  
 23. A—E heavens sell 27. A—M desastres to me 28. KLM  
 thou from, O mee! 30. M and to dedest 31. M and to detest  
 32. A—M But now I and end (O Klaius) now and end 33. A—M  
 hatefull musique

351. 35—352. 1. So wel...own troubles. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 45

352. 1—5. And...unto them. This passage is not in the folio editions  
 6—11. Which he in parte to satisfie...uttered. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 40  
 12. A—M have:

Philisides.

Echo.

14. A—M what barrs me KLM who is that 16. A—M  
 Oh! I A—M I have mett 17. A—M aproche: then tell me  
 19. A—M for a grieffe 25. A—M Oh! what 27. A—M  
 which for to enjoy 29. K will no give F—M give me leave  
 30. A—M thy physick 31. KLM say they again A—M thy  
 advise for th' ev'ls 32. A—M of his harme 35. A—L that  
 leanes M that learns BD—I to fancie KLM to fantasie  
 37. KLM made on mee these torments on mee to 38. A—GKLM go  
 die? Yea

353. 1. KLM from them from mee fal's 3. KLM can that art  
 bee A—HKLM have "that" instead of "which" I omits "which"  
 KLM by speech 5. HI these words KLM transpose "more"  
 and "me" C to blisse 7. A—M omit "bad" A—M but how  
 8. FGHM what I doe gaine KL what I do again KLM since  
 under her 10. Instead of this line A—M have the following:

Silly reward! yet among women hath she of vertu the most, Most.

13. LM desire bliss A—M the course. Curse. 14. I Curs'd by  
 15. A—M be not heard? 16. A—M omit this line 17. A—M  
 What makes them be unkind? KLM speak forth ha'st 18. A—M  
 Whence can pride come BD beantie he thence 22. AC is their  
 23. Instead of this line A—E have the following:

Tell yet againe me the names of these faire form'd to do ev'ls. Dev'ls.

F—I:

Tell yet againe me the names of those faire form'd to do evils? Devills.

KLM:

Tell yet again met the names of those fair form'd to doe evils? Devills.

24. AC Dev'ls? if in hell such dev'ls do a bide, to the hells I BD Devils?  
 if in hell such devills do abide, to the hells I E Devils? if in hell such devil  
 do abide, to the hells I F—L if in hell such devill doe abide, to the hells I  
 M if hell such devil do abide, to the hells I 25. A—M omit "After this  
 well placed Echo," but Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 48 25—35. the other...private  
 desires. See Appendix p. 566 l. 19 36. A—E second Eclogues F—I second  
 Eclogues

# NOTES

354. 11. A—M from looking out 15. KLM *omit a* 19. A—M  
beames to thawe away 25. A—M *omit commas in margin*  
28. I—M unexpected 34. M *omits that after* but

355. 5—6. KLM *omit his cheere...Hope encouraging (exactly one line in F—I)* 8. C *omits away* 15. A—M first up to heaven  
16. D mazed KLM *omit the* 20. KLM *omit for* 25. I—M  
*omit so* 26. BD—M *omit It was not an amazement* 32. F—M into  
lamentation 38. M other but *Pamela* 39. M despsing it,  
greedily

356. 7. A—M that image 18. KLM thought good to 19. M  
*omits to after* and 21—22. A—M never pen did more quakingly  
24. LM *omit the before* Muses BD—M *print Muses in Roman type*  
34. M *omits he* M *omits & before* being A—M ended, was diverse  
35. D til this reason

357. 13. A—M not now to grow 22. C *craftie wretch*  
24. KLM *last moment* 28. I *omits "of"* 34. KLM cannot  
*bee hope* 37. KLM *tears of man*

358. 1. E—M *that do I not conceive* 3. ACE—M *that do I not conceive*  
C mouse clime 7. A—M *an inly relenting* 11. D  
*love he reserved* 12. A—M *he thence must* A—M *only he liv'd*  
13. F—M *the triumphes* 14. A—M *must I be* A—M *such*  
monument 20. A—M *Plannets tend* 26. KLM *omit "me"*  
*after "had"* 32. KLM *veil* 37. D *hand-nayls*

359. 3. A—M *doo so excessive* 5. A—M *O not* HKLM  
*had afforded* 6. C *leane* D *omits "a"* 7. A—M *Love*  
*be so* 8. KL *boy should bee a* M *Boy, should he a* 11. A—M  
*such faith be abolisht* 13. KLM *not yet thus refresh* 19. KLM  
*I worthy then such* 21. F—M *omit "more"* 22. BD—M *I*  
*well should find*

360. 14. G flame of fewel LM flame or farewell 22. KLM  
*transpose in and of* 34. A—M beautifull might have bene 36. LM  
full of graceful 38. F—M *omit and*

361. 7. G—M to them L who excellencies 14. BD—M  
stirred up 17. KLM *omit and* 25. F—M *omit yet*

362. 8. BD—M burthened 10. G—M deliver to them  
11. GHKLM smelling grapes 12. KLM *childe with Bacchus*  
15. M cold wine 20. F—M on *Zelmane* 23. HI *transpose*  
*in vaine and crying* 25. D *omits the before* injury 26. I—M  
*omit a before* foure 28. BD—M *omit that after* time 30. A—M  
*omit of after* mile 38. C *Princesse*

363. 35. C all speaches 36. A—M this country 37. A—M  
but younger

364. 2. IKL obtaining 6. KLM of a subjection 8. KLM  
of the Ladies 14. M seems 16. G—M my delight 23. I—M  
*omit on after* troden 26. M have need to 28. L stop 29. M  
nor *instead of* or 38. A—M *omit commas in margin*

365. 1. BDE it were faine 5. A—M two daughters 17. A—M  
then an ordinary 18—19. A—M *omit commas in margin* KLM  
*print in all miseries...folks in Italics, all excepted, which is in Roman type*

# NOTES

33. I fine-wittie 34. A—M these goodly 38. KLM omit you 39. A—M omit commas in margin
366. 9. E—M transpose are and ever 11. M may once by 13. A—L under these base M under those base 15. A—M happie my policy hath brought matters 38. GHKL lovelinesse 38—39. A—M omit commas in margin
367. 9. IKLM was not dainty 13. I into instead of unto 16. I tufts 17. M black lustre 31. KLM murder
368. 2. G—M hapned 22. I motion of her 24. M transposes her and hear 28. M thy instead of the at end of line 32. H—M degree of death 33. AC omit am
370. 10—11. A—M degenerate to such a deadly palenesse 24. A—M assuring him 40. I omits a little
371. 5. LM So that calling 7. I letters to those 9. KLM motion 10. E or instead of of 20. E—M he was then 22. I humours do blow 27. E—M transpose hide and indeede
372. 21. E—M as it were 26. A—M omit commas in margin KLM print new...remedies in Italics I required I omits there 28. I states 32. I states A—M he should be assailed
373. 14. A—M bent both his 17. LM rockly 19. LM if not not impossible 35. D peaceably 36. A—M would serve 37. E—M yeares 40. A—M wittes instead of wills
374. 13. M allotteth 23. BD—M things 40. C standerds F—M himselfe to talke
375. 1. A—M to do some thing 3. A—E hand 5. KLM about where 31. A—M more beautifull 32. F—M transpose is and it 35. C when hee
376. 5. A—M She seing her 6. A—M of a desirer 12. F—M Philoclea to receive 21. A—M teares, they hoong upon 23. C bedewed 24. KLM Art of carefulness 25. I to an neglected 28. C omits no
377. 10. M my eyes 14. G—M misconstrue 18. KLM say unto you 21. M female inquisitive of 23. BD—HKLM to burthen 25. HI omit the before very
378. 8. A—M reason & wit 12. M or instead of not 13. LM omit of before Ewe 20. E omits it 27. A—M with neernesse 36. F—M farre it is
379. 13. A—M with an unspeakable 15. F omits the before sweet 19. I omits like 23. A—M must come 27. A—M offend for sullennes 29. F is but a burdensome 33. I omits to before draw 39. A—M is for ever
380. 7. M lose of his former 10. M comfort 21. M make a just 35. A—M was resolved 37. D reasonably 38. F & constraints must
381. 7. M or those 8. B eloquent with passions through 9. E—M omit no 12. EF being besirers G—M being desirers 18. F Musicke C especiall 31. C as of authoritie 34. ABD—M colon instead of full stop after knots C prints knots. but in E—M but she in hart 35. A—D full stop instead of comma after one

# NOTES

382. 3. CF—M exprobate 4. M estate : but even 6. B  
right better servitude 7. KLM carried away 9. M *Amphialus*  
effectually L languishing M languishing 14. E—M omit  
beautie 17. A—M Therefore 21. A—M of subtle 24. K  
intend 34. A—M even where she stood

382. 35—383. 22. O all-seeing Light...vertuous *Musidorus*. KLM  
*print this prayer in Italics* M *prints* And pausing a while (383. 20)  
said she (383. 21) *Musidorus* (383. 22) *in Roman type*

383. 1. A—M hande 4. A—M unexcuseable 11. LM  
that I and thy creature 12. M omits so 13. E—M confidently  
on 17. I if so seeme 21. KLM *becom's of mee* 30. D  
they hap begun

384. 9. A—M fortune, which shoulde not onely have 14. LM  
matcht 22. A—M at lest 36. LM rise

385. 20. HI amated mind 23. H burthen 25. KLM  
omit as 27. K of this unassailed 37. A—M scarcely  
40. A—M he would hide

386. 4. M omits the after more 18. A—M the country  
24. I farther 25. E—M but to view 37. BD—M not knowing

387. 4. F—M rekning 6. HI into his 13. A—M  
vampalt 24. I whether the pity A—M revenge against the  
other 26. ABD and his hinde to his 34. BDE weapon 36. D  
flew in peeeces

388. 5. FGHKLM and the grones 11. M accident 13. I  
burdens 25. A—M common reason A—GI—M burden  
30. CG—M valoure 31. A—M *transpose* hatred and choller  
33. F—M hand 35. A—M exercises

389. 8. A—M in the never 16. KLM went to battel  
18. A—M mistrusting those verie guards lest they 24. KLM only  
his face for 27. KLM upon his enemy 35. A—M away from  
himselfe 37. F—M omit when

390. 2. BD escaping valiant hand ABD by base 10. A—M  
But thus with G—M valour 15. E—M thrust just into 19. M  
side of the 22. HI *Philanax's* KLM *Philanax* 25. A—HKLM  
Deaths 28. F—M see their I murderers 29—30. E—I  
*Philanax* sword KLM *Philanax's* sword 31. E—M squire  
34. E—I omit his KLM *Amphialus's* G—M valour 35. E—M  
to a most shamefull

391. 1—2. E—M asking advise of no other thought 6. A under  
the the hande 10. M towards to him 11. BD—M meaning  
to take 15. F—M espied 23. ABC bewaile and untimely  
25. E—M falling feete 33. LM the caus of 36. A—M  
where being 39. E—I *Philanax* men KLM *Philanax's* men

392. 5. KLM black as darkness 7. LM made him know  
13. F—M offer 17. A—M his sword 26. A—M omit *commas*  
*in margin* 35. I scarcely 36. BD—HKLM armour

393. 5. E—M house 22. F—M right let backward 30.  
KLM Fortune and Valor 35. I cryed unto him

# NOTES

394. 1. C *retreitie* 3. KLM *of the sluce* 6. F—M *re-*  
turned himself 10. A—M *gotten a horse* 16. D *as I could*  
18. BD *subject* 19. KLM *insert yet after not* 30. KLM  
seen in the 31. B *accord the pretty*
395. 6. KLM *of her death* 9. KLM *brains boyl* 11. I  
*thought* 12. I *pompe* C *bast desire* 14. BD *defile the*  
muddy E—M *defile with muddie* 18. A—M *transpose "doth" and*  
"downeward" 20. HI *omit "how"* 22. M *lid* 24. E—M  
*omit this line* 32. M *Somothea*
396. 2. BD—I *do stow* 6. M *care* 12. D *falcone*  
13. KLM *a fair Chariot* 26. C *glaring shoe* 30. M *brought*  
*for a mouse* 35. KLM *As thus I* 36. KLM *The writing*  
*Nymph*
397. 5. E—M *humble eyes* HI *O eye* E—HKLM *Summe*  
*of sight* 8. KLM *I in whom all my* 14. C *I admire* 21. C  
*estate* 24. I *off-springs spoil'd* A—M *priests* 31. CD  
*breed* 32. D *feed* 36. LM *weaking work* 38. M *heavens*
398. 24. G—M *otherwise* 36. E—M *all that I*
399. 12. M *gift* 17. C *made far to be* 19. I *Cupids*  
20. A—G *unwarn'd to take* H—M *unarm'd to take* 22. E—M  
*omit mark of ellipsis* 24. ABD—L *but as a pleasant* CM *but as*  
*pleasant* 37. A—M *worthy, then they to be loved*
400. 1. F—M *to the knowledge* 8. F—M *receive judgement*  
22. M *and instead of as* 24. D *of the bloud* 28. K *word*  
30. A—EG—M *what a maze* A—DI *of a mazemēt* 39. KLM  
*insert the before knowledg* A—M *by instead of with* KL  
*Amphialus's his*
401. 1. M *of the Town* 16. BE *catchword is seene but should*  
*be curtesie* 25. A—M *not visitinge the Princesses* 27. A—M  
*by force to be reskued* 30. A—M *their songs* 33. A—M *owne*  
*resolutions* 38. A—M *humours to prepare* 39. F—M *omit*  
*used*
402. 8. A—M *rugged race* 15. A—M *sorow that then owed*  
21. A—M *thitherward* 26. A—M *hands* 28. A *wherof the*  
29. A—E *therby* 31. F—M *unawares* 34. M *omits an*
403. 3. A—M *as if it had* 6. KLM *transpose one and might*  
10. A—M *sorrowe to dresse* 13. M *omits to* 16. E—M  
*therewith* 17. LM *fully* 28. F—M *outward glosse* 30. M  
*omits is* 31. M *farther* 38. F—M *is beyond* KLM *is*  
*a great*
404. 12. KLM *which is not most notable* AC *lawe* A *colon*  
*after lawe* 13. A—M *become lawes themselves* 15. A—EKL  
*Feare or Love* F—I *Feare of Love* 18. A—M *her onely lippes*  
30. A—M *speake* 32. KLM *the whole battels* 40. G—M  
*never to suffer*
405. 7. KLM *honouring it* 15. I *then she* 21. E—M  
*that would not be* 26. G *of of Autumn* 27. I *prints "april*  
*of your age" in Italics* 34. A—M *hidden* 38. KLM *imperfection*
406. 14. KLM *omit that* 39. A—M *chafe at the*

# NOTES

407. 5. A—M when *instead of* but 13. HI miserable foolish  
 34. A—M might have not 35. A—M so if chauceable 35—36.  
 A—M *omit* as now being, the not being 38. KLM *omit* if
408. 3. KLM changeable effects 14. ABD his goodly F—M  
*omit a before* earth 15. BD—M height of the ring E—M or  
*instead of* nor 18—19. A—M *omit* or...of these 20—21. A—M  
*omit* and eternitie...inconstancie 28. F—M absolutly 30. C un-  
 expresseable F—K unexpressible 31. E—M *omit a after* without  
 32—33. I impossible 33. KLM unless that you will
409. 2. BD name of the sea 4. A—M superscribed 10. H—M  
 regard any 17. M of the contrarieties 20. I up to so high  
 22. A—M of a base 25. KL yiel'd M yield 27. KLM  
 directed to an end of preservation 35. A—M this beastly absurditie
410. 1. A—M *omit* so 2. KLM *print* Books...defects in *Italics*  
 4. KLM need 21. M be known F—M if there were  
 23. F—M if his knowledge 30. M dissembling thoughts 38—39.  
 A—M ougly shamefulness
411. 9. F—M so fowle 12. A—M amazement of a M self-  
 excusing 33. LM both by any more
412. 14. C sailles 16. BD—M of the place 19. E—M  
 then to 20. M equital 21. I *omits* side 27. A—M who  
 refrained 32. C obeience A—M and so had 33. A—M  
 knowledges
413. 4. M both safe by 7. KLM consider he was A—M  
 and *instead of* but 15. M matter E—M dislike 21. ABE—M  
 will armed KLM *comma before* armed 22. A—M *omit* will 23. M  
 be prisoner 33. A—M *omit* much 37. I *Philantus*
414. 7. A—M from any 10. G—M valour 10—11. KLM  
*print* true...of honor in *Italics* 21. KLM reprehension 22. M  
 effect the glory 28. LM them a charge 31. A—M whence  
 she might 32. KLM And so soon as
415. 2. KLM and goodly 10. H of a tawnie 11. BD—M  
 figures 20. A—M facing the castle 25. KLM an hors  
 26. A—E freckned F—M freckled M stain 29. KLM when  
 he came
416. 1. E yet hunts it 5. A—M any thing to say to him  
 12. A—M Sunne in a cleare day shines 13. BD—M pawing upon  
 the M farther foot 15. G—M trumpets A—M sounding  
 ABD—HK together, Together they ILM together, together they 17.  
 E—M into the rest 19. M *omits a before* pleasant 24. F—M  
 breath of the other 25. E—M *omit* but 36. A—M *omit* the  
*before* one D *prints on instead of* one F—M till they being  
 E—M come to the 40. M guided his blow
417. 3. KLM customed 5. A—M such force 7. M  
 farther 9. E—I *Amphialus* horse KLM *Amphialus's* hors 13. M  
 farther E—I *Phalantus* horse KLM *Phalantus's* hors 17. I  
 burthening 18. A—M *omit* & 19. A—M *insert and before*  
 seeing 23. M farther 24. M *omits* yet 25. F—I bring  
 to me the 32. A—M boiling into his 35. KLM *print* great  
 spending...remnants in *Italics*



# NOTES

418. 2. A—M disdaining 14. DG—M renowned  
 419. 9. LM shee *instead of* he 16. K *transposes to and* bee  
 28. KLM slave of weakness  
 420. 7. G—M his quarrel 19. BD—M encreased their  
 21. A—M *omit semi-colon after* life A—GKLM *semi-colon instead of comma after* one HI *colon* 22. A—M ever bred 32. F—M lothsomnesse 35. A—M grew pale 37. ABC rocked a sleepe  
 D—M rocked asleepe  
 421. 4—5. A—M imported 10. A—M But by that time  
 22. LM adventurers  
 422. 3. A—M Where understanding 10—22. M *prints this passage in Italics, Amphialus excepted, which is in Roman type* 13—14. A and and make 14. A—M to heaven 15. F—M *omit the before* wings G—M valor 18. E—M *omit as* 23. F—L *print this line in Italics* KLM *To his* A—M *transpose quickly and* he 24—34. M *prints this passage in Italics, Argalus excepted, which is in Roman type* 24. D wore *instead of* more 36. A—M was al guilded D guided *instead of* guilded 37. HI womens 38. F—M and so spread 39. M out in the  
 423. 6. M worn in the Just, in time that 8. A—M In his shield 11. KLM of fierie BD backe list 21. M farther 22. A—M the staves HIM unshaken 24. A—M Argalus horse 28. I with striking 30. A—M maisters  
 424. 1. A—I *Amphialus* disarmed KLM *Amphialus's* disarmed 2. KLM force of *Amphialus* 5. I—M extend A—M blow 16. HI and mortall 17. A—M had over striken 25. AC arispe *instead of* arise 29. AC dissending BD descending 30. I each on his 31. F—M garnished in bloud 32. HI rose with  
 425. 8. A—M of his best blood 11. KLM so *instead of as after* not 21. AC *semi-colon after* sobbes 27. A—M as ever your harte 29. M I might 33. D unwelcome to me 34. A—M Is that  
 426. 1. D effect 2—3. M friendship of the codquerer 7. M if he had him 12. M to rest himself 26. F—M fallen? how wert 30. LM *omit in* 31. A—M thou lead me  
 427. 1. A—M *omit second* my deare 26. CE—HKLM her woman 27. A—M into the boat 28. A—M she would not depart KLM com on the other 31. A—D these warlike E—M their warlike 34. LM all was easful  
 428. 3. E—I *Amphialus* fame KLM *Amphialus's* fame EF such was was his 4. M till did but 13. M forth to him 20. I others  
 429. 1. BDEF merily G—M merrily 6. BD—M *print throughout "Dametas"* 10. K *that every went* 21. A—M every body helping on 25. A—M *omit and* 29. A—M panting 33. A—M *omit not after "Amphialus"* 36. A—M him, that by next morning  
 430. 10. LM *omit to* 14. HI from divers horses A—M coulour nor fashion 19. A—M with a great number of armes

# NOTES

26. A—M dog, and there is 30. A—M caused in a border about to  
33. E—M impatience 34. F in the land 35. I waited on  
him

431. 16. A—D *Dametas*-is friend 18. G—M the Letter  
22. KLM *omit* "as" 26. A—M *with all my* 29. E—M  
*paines* 30. HI *omit* "I" C *omits* "such" 31. B The  
terrible words 32. A—D *Dametas*-is courage E—I *Dametas*  
courage KL *Dameta*'s courage M *Dametas*'s courage 33. E  
thundrings 36. ABD—M this answer

432. 1. C *omits* (having...horsebacke) E—M into the 5—8. C  
*omits* (the Gentlemen...scituated) *and puts a semi-colon after* little 5. F—M  
Gentleman 8. ABD—M for being 11. K inconveniencies  
15. C *omits* (contrarie...vices) 17. C *omits* (if he were overcome)  
*and puts a semi-colon after* use 27. C *omits* (chosen for the purpose)  
*and puts a comma after* judges 31. A—M *Dametas* horse 33. BC  
jogd blacke with 34. C *omits* that

433. 6. C when we was 19. M withal began to strike 20. A—M  
started back a good way 25. E—M *omit* of 26. A—L could  
leade him 28. M followed him with 39. KLM used to the  
flail

434. 13. F—M to rise 19. BD sleepish A—M quietnes  
*instead of* countenance 30. F—M upon his

435. 2. A—M to his practize 11. F—M forced himselfe  
14. F framed no smiling 20. C free scope 22. BD—M  
himselfe unto 26—27. A—EG—M sorts of the *Amphilians* F sorts of  
the *Amphilians* 28. E—M discontent 32. A—M to his lure  
33. A—M of the six

436. 5. M that one of them 6. KLM *omit* had 7. M  
than an ordinary 16. BD—M condemned C hie hatred *Pamela*  
31. M got 32. A—M a seate 33. D comfort A—M  
discomforts

437. 10. D praise 16. D then creation 36—37. I *trans-*  
*poses* wearied *and* wounded

438. 5. A—M afterwarde to a promised gratefulness towards 15. L  
destroying of her M destruction of her 20. C farther 28.  
A—DF—M thy wretched wiles E they wretched wiles 31. I spake  
somewhat with

438. 39—439. 1. LM *print* who do...inferiors *in Italics*

439. 5. M according to Merits 7. A—M bare to *Ismenus*  
15. A—D was occasiō of the E—M was by occasiō of the 16. HI  
Evardes 17. HI exceeding strong 19. F—M of parts worthy  
23. M farthest-fetcht 28. HI inflexible 32. C side-gate

440. 15. F—M murthered I *transposes* he *and* did 18. A—M  
*omit commas in margin* 35. I *transposes* once *and* had

441. 9. F—M *insert* any *before* company 30. E walles, which  
was a 35. D all possessed mindes

442. 1. B—M *omit* division into stanzas A—M to see my wrongs  
for 4. A—M *his center keepeth* 8. A—M *night of evils* 9. E

# NOTES

*Alas alonly* F—M *Alas alonly* 21. ABCE—M *helpes* 22. I  
*hers I am* 24. A—M *she makes of me no treasure* 25. I seeming  
 weary 36. CD *sayed out with*

443. 7. KLM *he was* 9. A—M *were excused by the* 29.  
 E—M *omit and* ABCEF *omit with* 33. C *three adventures*  
 37. I *lighted* GHKLM *beames of their* 38. G—M *valour*  
 40. D *examples*

444. 1. KLM *of this fight* 12. A—M *following over-earnestly*  
 15—16. A—M *omit commas in margin* KLM *print courage...man-*  
*hood in Italics*

445. 5. AM *omit commas in margin* KLM *print unwelcom...*  
*injury in Italics* M *misprints unwtleome* 9. M *not only for the*  
*anlookedforness* 13. A—M *them a servant of* 20. D *omits*  
*alreadie* 22. A—M *whereon the one* KLM *was ready dead*  
 26. M *send a Damosel* 28. F—M *have done* KLM *as glad*  
*as any* 32. M *entertained* 37. B *then enemie*

446. 13. I *befriended enemy* F—M *omit the after with* 14.  
 F—M *running of him* 17. A—M *as of having* 19. A—M *omit*  
*commas in margin* BD—M *victorie with advantage* 27. A—M  
*whē in the* 29. A—M *omit parenthesis* 37. B *betrayed the hart*  
 39. A—L *& in the fall*

447. 22. H *looking upon* 33. A—M *loath to departe*

448. 4. CKLM *bands united* 12. D *up her eyes and*  
 13. BD *which lift the* 20. CKLM *beauty from the* 21. C  
*when that infallible* 23. BD—M *omit it after perceiving* 24. A—M  
*passion* 26. A—M *falling upon the earth & crying* 31. E—M  
*being instead of they having bene* 34. C *could handes* 37. A—M  
*tell such rare*

449. 1. BD *was as subject to* 4. A—M *omit foorth* A—M  
*who was come into* 11. A—M *needes lende his* 14. E—M *of*  
*a faithfull* 15. BD *making of the marble* E—M *making of two marble*  
 16. M *Basilus caused himself* A—M *add the following epitaph:*

## The Epitaph.

HIS being was in her alone:  
 And he not being, she was none. [M gone]  
 They joī'd one joy, one grieve they griev'd,  
 One love they lov'd, one life they liv'd.  
 The hand was one, one was the sword  
 That did his death, hir death afford.  
 As all the rest, so now the stone  
 That tombes the two, is justly one.

## ARGALUS & PARTHENIA.

C *omits division into stanzas*

450. 5. G—M *full of their* 23. D *all his mishaps* 28. A—M  
*So as all that* 29. D—M *and in the* 30. BD *the delight began*  
*to restore to each boy his*

451. 18. A—M *could no lōger patch up* 21. G *maried the yong*  
 27. M *but by denyal* 30. E—M *then they should look* 36—37.  
 A—M *omit commas in margin* KLM *print lust may...servant in Italics*  
 37. HI *indeed, is a servant*

# NOTES

452. 4. E—M *omit* if 9. KLM *print* No is no...mouth *in Italics*  
 10. B—M *omit commas in margin* C speaking of a womā 10—11.  
 KLM *print* a lover's...liked *in Italics* 17. F—M example 20. D  
 gotten an habite 23. M on both sides 30. C *Jubiter* I the  
 manerly-woeing 35. BD—M who wold never like
453. 4. ABCEG—M over-superstitiously DF over-superstitiously  
 5. C same Ladies 9. E—M who prayeth 9—10. LM *print*  
 who...obeyed *in Italics* 28. M a Gentlewoman of
454. 3. G *if thou liked not* 5. M such an answer 6. I  
*transposes* thou *and* hast 9. A—M inward affliction 31. D yet  
 also A—M daintely joyned 37—38. A—M by an excellent  
 painter excellently painted, with
455. 1. E—M *omit* with M *prints* was *in Italics* 4. A—M  
 forced favour 9. ABD—M formed into C formed in to 15. KLM  
*Catoblepas* 18. M *beasts* 28. A—M this combat 35. BD—M  
 upon the quarrell 39. F—M that I confesse
456. 8. KLM neither staying 16. M *omits* set 17. A—M  
*omit* nowē HI most curteous 20. D not fire 22. A—M  
 fetching still new spirit 23. A—M keeping their sight that way as a  
 matter of 28. E—M motion of the Sunne 30. F—M *omit* his  
 31. E—M that *instead* of both
457. 2. BD—M assuring trust 4. F—M their horses 6. KLM  
 advantages 17. A—M stayning their blacke couler, as if 18—19.  
 M so along a space 29. HI as well as his 30. F—M came  
 to himselfe 34. E—M his sword 39. A—M *omit* he was
458. 9. M was upon on his 26. CD but a morsel 29. A—M  
 brought to fresh feeding 31. F—M of this manner of fight
459. 11. A—M strake him so mightie 16. M force give place  
 18. ABCE—M also was driven D was driven also A—M the  
 sterne of cunning 23—24. M when only I 24. E—M fought  
 causelesse 31. F—M into this place 37. M ashamed E  
 my soule 40. D with thy owne
460. 26. C tale ship 26—27. KLM *print* make unto...com-  
 parison *in Italics* 34. M blow 35. M one of these
461. 1. FGI the latter 2. A—M hope 3. F—M brake  
 out into these 38. I seemed after-drops KLM of a storm
462. 8. BD—M burthen LM for *instead* of foe 23. C  
 silver sprangles 27. A—M began a most fierce 35. LM most  
 to deliver 36. E—HKLM most of all that I almost all that  
 39. F—M *omit* the before one
463. 10. HI *omit* them 13—14. M conveying him 19. B  
 that hast BD—M battered the most 26. M would not have so
464. 10. ABCEF *Amphialus*-is D *Amphilalus*-is E—M to  
 a diligent 11. C no sailes 14. A—M and he gave 16. H—M  
 one to another 17. BD—GK Chirurgians HLM Chirurgions I  
 Chirurgical 19. I—M waiting on it 27. GHKLM or *instead*  
*of* nor
465. 8. BD—GK Chirurgians HILM Chirurgions 12. D  
 only to him 19. A—M because she would be the 31. HI in  
 a womanly

# NOTES

466. 4. A—M among a people 7. D out of her nose 14.  
E—I *Amphialus* succession KLM *Amphialus's* succession 25. A—M  
heard from his beloved M departed from 39. A—M omit  
*commas in margin*

467. 2. LM and therefore is 3. A—M omit *commas in margin*  
F—M it pleaseth 3—4. KLM *print in extremities...of life in Italics*  
11. FGHKLM in amaze 28. F—M great, so to forethinke  
33—34. KLM *print promiss...threatning in Italics* 33—37. A—M  
omit *commas in margin*

468. 1. E—I *Amphialus* ambition KLM *Amphialus's* ambition  
9—10. CDF—M omit *commas in margin* 11—13. ABE *commas in*  
*margin* 23. A—M are but feare-babes 27—31. CDF—M omit  
*commas in margin* 28. A—E of a people

469. 1—2. A—F *Philanax* hands 11. A—M But she by this  
meanes 21. KLM *perswasions* 27. D sweete holinesse

470. 19. D omits same 22. E—M noise of

471. 7. KLM wall 29. G—M *full stop instead of comma after*  
that F—M omit and 30. E—M for a certaine G—M labour  
33. A—M omit *comma after "Cecropias"* 38. A—M So that with  
silence 39. G—M hammered on by G—M abode her pitlesse

472. 13. F—M working 18. E—M would die F—M  
then to bee false 27. K though the clouds affliction 28. M self  
*instead of els* 32. KLM shee used to her 39. F—M but thou canst

473. 4. I her doing with their suffering 7. KLM she was in  
11. D when in open 14. A—I *Musidorus* teares KLM *Musidorus's*  
tears

474. 7. A—M set in the eyes of men, to be 13. A—M sorest  
torment 22. I wherin they knew E—M they should be  
25. BD—M further off 29. F—M to their enemie

475. 6. I owle-eyed 7. F—M interpret it 11. KLM  
but the best way 14. E—M do so much 22. E—M bee in  
time 23. K of so a fair Lady 25. B—M omit *commas in*  
*margin* 37. KLM driven to stay

476. 1. D aside ward 10. E—I of peevish 14. G—M  
both with bitter termes 28. KLM also vaulted 32. ABCE—M  
looke one to another D looke one to an other 34. E—K But then  
the houre 35. BD—GKLM beginne, and curtaynes HI begin, and  
the curtains

477. 1. KLM mouth to her 12. A—M even minding to  
18. I at the first 30. I life into her 31. D when it was  
36. E—M gone to a beautified heaven 37. ABD—M hast left me  
C hath left me 38. D ever did lament

478. 1. KLM most cursed 10. DKLM shepheards apparell  
12. A—M O my God 20. M what I am born 21. D happie  
in my selfe 22. A—M had chanced unto me 24. E—M insert a  
*before lamentable* 25. KLM if stir'd

479. 9. KLM more sensible 10. G *Philiclea* 20. A—M  
was most likely both to move 25. D extremities 29. D that  
*instead of the after understood*

# NOTES

480. 7. G—L nor halfe 27. I—M how she should deale  
33. A—M of that beutie 35. CM the woman 39. D to be  
their

481. 5. M *omits* that *after* with 7. E—M no leasure A—M  
turne it selfe into 9. D of the heart

482. 7. E—M *omit* so 17. KLM *omit* was 20. E—M  
uncertainty 32. A—M taking his woonted

483. 3. BD—M over her face 6. ABD—M borrowed her beutie  
C borrow- (*end of line*) her beutie 9. D *omits* an *before* amazement  
21. F—M caried by the 22. F nor having 31. A—M Revenge,  
Revenge unto him 35. KLM *omit* it 37. E—M destroying  
of himself 39. K *omits* to *after* accessarie

484. 5. D *omits* he 9. ABCE—M into all his D into his  
10. F—M teares, nor with a 18. C Unpappie 21. AC un-  
happie hast, that haste 23. D to thy owne 28. I *omits* I *after*  
loved 31. A—M hast left thy love in me 32. KLM they revenge  
35. M look on thee when he gave the

485. 3. E—M that I would willingly 5. D with her is al my  
hope 7. D can justice 12. KLM upon earth 13. BD  
all my misfortunes C mis-fortune 28. M till I as it 30.  
A—M *omit* he 33. E—M death unto you

486. 6. KLM wayling 9. KLM in the despite of 12.  
BD—M dead on that condition 26. A—M building 31. E—M  
though I do bemone 32. F—M reason so to doe 34. F—M  
*omit* had 38. AC But that the speech

487. 8. D aske for thee 9. M whose from 26. A—M  
therefore bee comforted 33. A—M with teares of joy 37. BD  
chiefe part indeed of all

488. 1. E—M *omit* now 6. BD—M farthest 10. A—L  
into of cruelly tormenting our M into of cruelty termenting our 14.  
A—M indeede it was not my sister 27—28. M so they had set  
31. I but when they 35. B neither to receive

489. 2. LM with that joy 6—7. KLM torment 7. F  
that of one of my 8. IM proceeds from 13. KLM *omit* the  
*before* imprecations D imprecation 14. M farther 15. D  
want of libertie 20. D of a abundance 25. CF—M prepare  
thy selfe for the 35. C well-come be all my miseries 36. D  
I pittie 37. D finde in mine

490. 10. M frame his mind 18. E—L contrarieties M con-  
traries 19. KLM but *instead of* both 23. A—M now they  
would have done it 25. M we might 32. BD—M who could  
lively 33. KLM should lively paint the lightsom 34. A—I  
finding then betweene 36. A—M his *instead of* with *after* sealed up

491. 1. BDEF moning lips 3. E—M *omit* had 9. E—M  
messengers 10. A—F brought answeres 11. M to in indite  
A—M unfortunate affection 15. M with the countenance 22. D  
mortall hatred 26. M to the possession 27. K their crueltie  
28. C ungodly 31. LM with his speech 34. D *omits* most

# NOTES

492. 7. LM of great punishment 11. A—M was upon the top  
15. K with his matter 33. BD—GKLM murdered 39. KLM  
*transpose* enough and miserable

493. 3. HI *Philoxinus* 7. KLM *Ismenius* 9. KLM  
my *instead* of thy 10. D the *instead* of thy 32. M by that means  
D his double

494. 1. E—M *omit* a *before* good 9. M given me by other  
event 24. A—M *omit* there *before* giving 32. D in their  
destruction

495. 14. A—M *omit* up 15. I eyes levelled A—M from  
top to toe 32—33. M difficulties 33. G—M valour

496. 24. A—M breathing nothing but 28. E—M all the former  
34—35. KLM *transpose* yet and made 36. A—M strange disasters

497. 2. D *transposes* hast and thou 4. A—M but to weepe  
9. LM thy faith to 12. BD—M wert disdained 25. E—M  
perfection

498. 23. A *commas* in margin

498. 30—502. 19. Among the rest...*hath* made glorious. In all the  
folio editions this passage is to be found in the fourth Eclogues C *omits*  
division into stanzas

498. 35. A—M *Who* most the silly 38. C *bark*

499. 1. A—M *braunches* cleave 14. M *all* the Sun 15. M  
*The* bowels KLM *will* all 19. IM *Princes* weare 20. M  
*Tell* these 21. I *foretokens* 25. M *these* words 30. KLM  
*all* words 32. C *stars* in constant

500. 6. A—M *omit* *commas* in margin C *Too* well 8. G  
*that* thou no 9. E—M *mourning* night 19. I *be* full spent  
24. E *daily* raving 25. ACE *8 Sinne* 27. AC *set* the triumph  
30. ACD *by* the pompe 34. M *it* still 35. LM *its* self

501. 14. F—M *his* just 17. F—M *all* that life 39. A—M  
*omit* *commas* in margin

502. 4. M *of* her sight C *of* our fight 12. BD *grow* our  
14. F—M *For* such deepe 26. A—M consort of whose mourning  
27. A—M naturall tunes of 29. F—M having before both their  
31. G—M valour 32. A—M value

503. 6. M brothers 13—14. A—M *omit* *commas* in margin  
19—20. E—M whom she most dearly 22. E—M by byding  
24. I lost sound 33. ABCE *Pamela* steppes 38. D would not  
have

504. 6. BD—M in time past 11. M extremit 14. E—M  
*have* no comma after sadly and put a semi-colon after desperately 22. A—D  
them was E—M then was 23. A—M bringing force 26. BD  
his brother 28. F—M with still intention 37. E—M upon  
his pride

505. 1. F—M already *instead* of ready 4. G—M *Fame* hath  
not 21—23. BD *omit* be tied...thou so much

506. 6. A—M overcome braver Knightes 8. HI *Evardes*  
14. H—M *Evardes* 37. A—M much worse to skolde

# NOTES

507. 6. E—M *omit* at 11. C *courtesie*, end put 16. DG—M more bragged 31. D had eyes 32. BD—M set it in her memorie

508. 15. F—M unexpected 18. *Between "Fortune" and since*  
A—M *insert* since our owne parents are content to be tyraunts over us  
28—29. B—M *omit commas in margin* 35. B—M *omit commas in margin* A—M then will bee the time

509. 7. I gave consent 25. KLM the measure of that  
40. KLM he hath found

510. 6. A—M therefore detaining 8. M to enquire 10. KLM was sufficient 13. BD—M prophecyng 15. KL incrudelity  
23. B—M *omit commas in margin* 24. KLM oblations 26. B—M *omit commas in margin* 29. KLM durst any one 33. C with noble arte

511. 2. F—M by *Amphialus* 5. G—M his desires, it 11. A—F *Anaxius* privileged GKL *Anaxiu's* privileged HIM *Anaxius's* privileged 13. F—M daughter 26. BD—M take that away F—M runnings 27. F—M worthy men 28. E—M they went headlong 30. C were described

512. 18. BD—M have their beleefe 19. A—M servant  
26. D *omits* if 27. C having hard all this 29. D these excellent 36. D either for

513. 19. D such a one 23. E—M *omit* but 32. KLM stronger nimbleness 37. D mistresse

514. 1. M *Proserpine* 18. B—M *omit commas in margin*  
E—M valour 26. A—M *insert a before* spoile E—M *insert a before* fight 32. AC this whole globe 35. C looke one

515. 4. I on the inside 25. E—M *insert the before* humane  
26. FGHKLM as if hee lifted

516. 7. LM But when Pity 10. KLM *omit a after* such  
17—18. E—M therewith 18. KLM yet hee did 20. KLM and that in all the 29. BD—M remembring of what 40. KLM *omit as before* glorie

517. 3. F—L *semi-colon after* revenging E—M injuries C slauchter 18—19. I perchance such 20. A—M that great body  
23. KLM so they did differ

518. 3. A—M So that consenting 20. BD—M more terrible  
36. D sayings

519. 6. E—HKLM manly 9. A—M *omit* him 11. M as never having don so much



## APPENDIX

*The Eclogues being distributed in a different manner in all the folios, I append here an outline of the Eclogues as printed in 1593, giving the prose paragraphs which were then introduced. Such poems as appeared in 1593 for the first time will be printed in vol. II.*

### THE FIRST ECLOGES.

*Basilus*, because *Zelmane* so would have it etc. [see p. 126. l. 1—p. 132. l. 7 incl.]\*

*Dorus* did so well in answering *Thyrsis*, that every one desired to heare him sing something alone. Seing therfore a Lute lying under the *Princesse Pamelas* feete glad to have such an errand to approach her, he came, but came with a dismaied grace, all his bloud stirred betwixt feare and desire. And playing upon it with such sweetenes, as every bodie wondered to see such skill in a shepheheard, he sang unto it with a sorrowing voice these Elegiacke verses :

*Dorus.*—*Fortune, Nature, Love, long have contended about me,  
Which etc.* [see vol. II.].

*Dorus* when he had soong this, having had all the while a free beholding of the faire *Pamela* (who could well have spared such honor, and defended the assault he gave unto hir face with bringing a faire staine of shamefastnes unto it) let fall his armes, and remained so fastened in his thoughts, as if *Pamela* had graffed him there to growe in continuall imagination. But *Zelmane* espying it, and fearing he should too much forget himselfe, she came to him, and tooke out of his hand the Lute, and laying fast hold of *Philocleas* face with her eyes, she soong these *Sapphiques* speaking as it were to hir owne hope.

*If mine eyes can speake to doo hartly errande,  
Or mine etc.* [see p. 143. l. 15—p. 144. l. 8 incl.].

Great was the pleasure of *Basilus*, and greater would have bene *Gynæcias*, but that she found too well it was intended to her daughter, As for *Philoclea* she was swetely ravished withall. When *Dorus* desiring in a secret maner to speake of their cases, as perchance the parties intended might take some light of it, making lowe reverence to *Zelmane*, began this provoking song in hexameter verse unto her. Whereunto she soone finding whither his words were directed (in like tune and verse) answered as foloweth :

*Dorus.* *Zelmane.*

*Dorus.* *Lady reservd by the heav'ns to do pastors company honnor,  
Joyning etc.* [see vol. II.].

## APPENDIX

What exclaiming praises *Basilius* gave to this Eclogue any man may ghesse, that knowes love is better then a paire of spectacles to make every thing seeme greater which is sene through it: and then is never tongue tied where fitt commendation (whereof womankind is so likerouse) is offered unto it. But before any other came in to supplie the place, *Zelmane* having heard some of the shepheards by chaunce name *Strephon* and *Klaius*, supposing thereby they had bene present, was desirous both to heare them for the fame of their frindly love, and to know them, for their kindenesse towards her best loved frinde. Much grieved was *Basilius*, that any desire of his mistresse should bee unsatisfied, and therefore to represent them unto hir (aswell as in their absence it might be) he commaunded on *Lamon*, who had at large sett down their country pastimes and first love to *Urania* to sing the whole discourse which he did in this manner.

*A Shepheards tale no height of stile desires  
To raise etc. [see vol. II.].*

As *Lamon* would have proceded, *Basilius* knowing, by the wasting of the torches that the night also was farre wasted, and withall remembring *Zelmane* hurt, asked hir whither she thought it not better to reserve the complaint of *Klaius* till an other day. Which she, perceiving the song had alreadie worne out much time, and not knowing when *Lamon* would ende, being even now stepping over to a new matter, though much delighted with what was spoken, willingly agreed unto. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

*The end of the first Booke.*

### THE SECOND ECLOGUES.

THE rude tumult of the *Enispians* gave occasion etc. [see p. 339. l. 1.—p. 344. l. 9 incl.].

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants, especiallie of *Zelmane*, who never forgat to give due cōmendatiōs to her friend *Dorus*, *Basilius* called for *Lamon* to end his discourse of *Strephon* & *Klaius*, wher-with the other day he marked *Zelmane* to have bene exceedingly delighted. But him sicknes had staied from that assemblie. which gave occasion to *Histor* and *Damon* two yonge shepheards, taking upō them the two frendly rivalles names, to present *Basilius* with some other of their complaints Eclogue-wise, and first with this double Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. *Yee Goteheard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines,  
Ye Nymphes etc. [see p. 141. l. 4—p. 143. l. 9 incl.].*

But, as though all this had bene but the taking of a taste of their wailings, *Strephon* againe begā this Dizaine, which was answered unto him in that kind of verse which is called the crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. *I Joy in grieve, and doo detest all joyes:  
Despise delight etc. [see p. 349. l. 5—p. 351. l. 34 incl.].*

So well were these wailefull complaints accorded to the passions of all the princely hearers, while every one made what he heard of another the ballance of his owne fortune, that they stood a long while stricken in a sad and silent

## APPENDIX

consideration of them. Which the olde *Geron* no more marking then condemning in them, desirous to set forth what counsailes the wisdom of age had layde up in store against such fancies (as he thought) follies of youth (yet so as it might not apeare that his wordes respected them) bending himselfe to a young shepheard named *Philisides*, (who neither had daunced nor song with them, and had all this time layne upon the ground at the foote of a *Cypresse* tree, leaning upon his elbowe with so deepe a melancoly that his sences caried to his minde no delight from any of their objects) he strake him upon the shoulder, with a right old mans grace, that will seeme livelier then his age will afford him, And thus began unto him his *Eclogue*.

*Geron. Philisides.*

*Geron. Up, up Philisides, let sorrowes goe,  
Who yelds etc. [see vol. II.].*

*Geron* was even out of countenance, finding the words he thought were so wise, winne so little reputation at this young mans hands; and therefore sometimes looking upon an old acquaintance of his called *Mastix*, one of the repiningest fellows in the world, and that beheld no body but with a minde of mislike (saying still the world was amisse, but how it should be amended, he knew not) sometimes casting his eyes to the ground, even ashamed to see his gray haire despised, at last he spied his two dogges, whereof the elder was called *Melampus*, and the younger *Lelaps* (in deede the jewells he ever had with him) one brawling with another; which occasion he tooke to restore himselfe to his countenance, and rating *Melampus*, he began to speake to his doggs, as if in them a man should finde more obedience then in unbridled young men.

*Geron. Mastix.*

*Geron. Downe, downe Melampus; what? your fellow bite?  
I set you etc. [see vol. II.].*

And away with his doggs streight he went as if he would be sure to have the laste worde: all the assemblie laughing at the lustines of the olde fellowe who departed muttering to himselfe he had sene more in his daies then twentie of them. But *Basilius*, who never before had heard *Philisides* (though having seldome failed to be at these metings) desired him hee woulde begin some *Eclogue* with some other of the shepherdes according to the accustomed guise. *Philisides* though very unwilling, at the Kings comaundmēt offred to sing with *Thyrsis*. But he directly refused him, seing, he should within few dayes be married to the faire *Kala*; and since he had gotten his desire he would sing no more. Then the king willed *Philisides* to declare the discourse of his owne fortunes unknown to them as being a stranger in that countrie but hee praied the King to pardon him, the time being farre to joyfull to suffer the rehearsall of his miseries. But to satisfie *Basilius* someway, hee began an *Eclogue* betwixt himselfe and the *Echo*, framing his voice so in those desert places as what wordes he would have the *Echo* replie unto, those he woulde sing higher then the rest; and so, kindelie framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it, which with these hexameters in the following order he uttered.

*Philisides.*

*Echo.*

*Faire Rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace,  
Peace? etc. [see p. 352. l. 12—p. 353. l. 24 incl.].*

*Philisides* was commended for the placing of his *Echo*, but little did he regarde their praises, who had sett the foundation of his honour there, wher hee was most despicde: and therefore retorning againe to the traine of h

## APPENDIX

desolate pensiveness, *Zelmanes* seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrayned conceates did now burst out of prison: she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing, but to *Philocleas* eares, threw downe the burden of her minde in *Anacreous* kinde of verses.

*My muse what ail's this ardour  
To blase etc. [see vol. II.].*

*Basilus* when shee had fully ended her song, fell prostrate upon the ground, and thanked the Gods they had preserved his life so longe, as to heare the very musicke they themselves used, in an earthly body. And then with like grace to *Zelma* never left intreating her till she had (taking a *Lyra Basilus* helde for her) song these *Phaleuciakes*

*Reason, tell me thy mind, if here be reason  
In this strange etc. [see vol. II.].*

*Dorus* had long he thought kept silence from saying, somewhat which might tend to the glorie of her in whom all glory to his seeming was included, but now hee brake it, singing these verses called *Asclepiadikes*.

*O sweet woods the delight of solitarines!  
O how much etc. [see vol. II.].*

The other Shepheards were offering themselves to have continued the sportes, but the night had so quietlie spent the most parte of herselfe among them that the king for that time licēsed thē. And so bringing *Zelma* to her lodging, who would much rather have done the same for *Philoclea*, of all sides they went to counterfett a sleepe in their bedd, for a trewe one there agonies could not aforde them. Yet there they Lay (so might they be moste solitarie for the foode of their thoughts) til it was neere noone the next day, after which *Basilus* was to continue his *Appollo* devotions, and the other to meditate upon their private desires.

*The end of the second Eclogues.*

*The following variations have been noted between the text printed above from A and the other folios:*

- |   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| <p>563. 17. KLM had sung thus<br/>29. E maner so to</p> <p>564. 4. E mankind is so<br/>their wailings</p> <p>565. 10. LM this Eclogue<br/>48. KLM the place of his<br/>foundations</p> <p>566. 1. C <i>Zelma</i><br/>4. BD—M <i>Anacreons</i><br/><i>Asclepiades</i><br/>DF their agonies<br/>in Roman type</p> | <p>18. M transposes well and have</p> <p>47. F—M a good while</p> <p>33. C to the custumed guise</p> <p>49. HI omit sett after had</p> <p>2. KLM long constrained conceits</p> <p>8. KLM as hear the</p> <p>21. KLM licensed them to depart</p> <p>26. I to mediate</p> <p>28. F—I print Eclogues<br/>have "Book" instead of "Eclogues"</p> | <p>39. LM state of<br/>in sad &amp; silent</p> <p>LM</p> <p>16. KLM</p> |
|---|---|---|

## ALPHABETICAL TABLE OF THE PERSONAGES IN *ARCADIA*

[*The following Table does not contain the Personages  
introduced in the Eclogues.*]

- Aeschylus, Bk. III, Ch. 7  
 Agenor, brother of Philanax, Bk. III, Ch. 7, 8  
 Amiclas, King of Lacedæmon, Bk. I, Ch. 5, 7, 8  
 Amphialus, nephew of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 10, 11, 15, Bk. II, Ch. 11, 15,  
 18, 27, Bk. III, Ch. 2—9, 11—18, 23, 24, 25  
 Anaxius, nephew of Ewardes, Bk. II, Ch. 18, 19, 24, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 19,  
 25—29  
 Andromana, Queen of Iberia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 15, 20, 21  
 Antiphilus, Bk. II, Ch. 13, 14, 23, 24, 29  
 Arcadia, King of, *see* Basilius  
 Argalus, Bk. I, Ch. 5—8, 16, Bk. III, Ch. 12, 16  
 Argos, King of, Bk. III, Ch. 4  
 Armenia, King of, *see* Tiridates  
 Armenia, Queen of, *see* Artaxia  
 Artaxia, Queen of Armenia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 13, 15, 19, 23, 29  
 Artesia, Bk. I, Ch. 15—17, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 14, 21, 23  
  
 Baccha, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 22  
 Barzanes, King of Hyrcania, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 13  
 Basilius, King of Arcadia, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 4, 13—17, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 1, 4, 11,  
 12, 15, 16, 25—28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 8, 9, 11—13, 15, 16, 18—20, 25, 27  
 Bithynia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 22, 23  
  
 Cecropia, mother of Amphialus, Bk. I, Ch. 11, 15, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 27, 28,  
 Bk. III, Ch. 2—6, 9—12, 14, 17—24  
 Chremes, father of Dido, Bk. II, Ch. 19  
 Claius, Bk. I, Ch. 1, 2  
 Clinias, Bk. II, Ch. 26—28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 7, 11, 13, 14  
 Clitophon, son of Kalander, Bk. I, Ch. 4—6, 8, 10, 11, 17  
 Codrus, Bk. III, Ch. 8  
 Corinth, Queen of, *see* Helen  
 Crete, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6  
 Ctesiphon, Bk. III, Ch. 8

# TABLE OF PERSONAGES

Daiphantus, *see* Pyrocles

Daiphantus, *see* Zelmane, daughter of Plexirtus

Dametas, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 4, 13, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 2—5, 25, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 13

Demagoras, Bk. I, Ch. 5

Dido, Bk. II, Ch. 18, 19

Dorilaus, Prince of Thessalia, father of Musidorus, Bk. II, Ch. 6

Dorus, *see* Musidorus

Drialus, Bk. III, Ch. 7

Elis, Princess of, Bk. I, Ch. 16

Elpine, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Erona, Queen of Lycia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 12, 13, 18, 29

Euarchus, King of Macedonia, father of Pyrocles, Bk. II, Ch. 3, 6, 7, 9, 29

Euardes, King of Bithynia, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 13, 18

Eurileon, nephew of Amiclas, Bk. I, Ch. 5, 7, 8

Eurimelon, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Galatia, King of, *see* Leonatus

Giants, the two, and their sons, Bk. II, Ch. 9, 23

Gynecia, wife of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 13—15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 1, 4, 16, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 9, 16, 19

Helen, Queen of Corinth, Bk. I, Ch. 7, 10, 11, 16, 17, Bk. II, Ch. 21, Bk. III, Ch. 25, 26

Helots, the, Bk. I, Ch. 2, 5—7

Hippolitus, Bk. III, Ch. 8

Iberia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 15, 19, 20

Iberia, Queen of, *see* Andromana

Ismenus, brother of Artesia, Bk. I, Ch. 11, 15, Bk. III, Ch. 8

Kalander, Bk. I, Ch. 2—10, Bk. III, Ch. 19

Knight, the Black, *see* Musidorus

Knight, the Forsaken, *see* Musidorus

Knight, the Green, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18

Knight, the Ill-apparelled, *see* Pyrocles

Knight, the White, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18

Lacedæmon, King of, *see* Amiclas

Lacemon, Bk. I, Ch. 16

Lalus, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Lelius, Bk. II, Ch. 21

Leon, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Leonatus, King of Galatia, brother of Plexirtus, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 22—24

Leontius, Bk. III, Ch. 7

Leucippe, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 22

Leucippus & Nelsus, Bk. II, Ch. 7, 9

Lycia, Queen of, *see* Erona

Lycurgus, brother of Anaxius, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18—20, 25—28

Lydia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6

Macedonia, King of, *see* Euarchus

Megalus, Bk. III, Ch. 8

Memnon, Bk. III, Ch. 7

# TABLE OF PERSONAGES

- Menalcas**, Bk. I, Ch. 18, 19  
**Milo**, Bk. III, Ch. 8  
**Miso**, wife of Dametas, Bk. I, Ch. 3, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 5, 6, 11, 14—16, 24, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 9  
**Mopsa**, daughter of Dametas, Bk. I, Ch. 3, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 5, 6, 11, 14, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 2  
**Musidorus**, Prince of Thessalia, sometimes called Palladius, Dorus, the Black Knight, the Forsaken Knight, Bk. I, Ch. 1—6, 8—12, 14, 15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 3, 5—11, 13, 18—27, 29, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 8, 15, 18, 26  
**Nelsus**, *see* Leucippus  
**Nestor**, Bk. I, Ch. 17  
**Nisus**, Bk. III, Ch. 7  
**Otaves**, brother of Barzanes, Bk. II, Ch. 23  
**Palemon**, Bk. III, Ch. 8  
**Palladius**, son of Andromana, Bk. II, Ch. 15, 20, 21  
**Palladius**, *see* Musidorus  
**Pamela**, daughter of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 13, 15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 3, 5, 6, 11, 12, 14, 25, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 2, 6, 9, 10, 11, 14, 19—21, 23, 24, 26—28  
**Pamphilus**, Bk. II, Ch. 18, 19, 22  
**Pannonia**, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6  
**Paphlagonia**, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 10  
**Parthenia**, Bk. I, Ch. 5, 7, 8, 16, Bk. III, Ch. 12, 16  
**Phalantus**, brother of Helen, Queen of Corinth, Bk. I, Ch. 15—17, Bk. III, Ch. 11  
**Phebilus**, Bk. I, Ch. 17, Bk. III, Ch. 7  
**Philanax**, Bk. I, Ch. 4, Bk. II, Ch. 28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 8, 9, 13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 26, 27  
**Philisides**, Bk. II, Ch. 21  
**Philoclea**, daughter of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 13—14, 17, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 4, 5, 11, 12, 14, 16, 17, 21, 24—26, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 3, 5, 6, 9, 11, 12, 14, 19—24, 26—28  
**Philoxenus**, Bk. I, Ch. 11  
**Phrygia**, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 7, 8  
**Phrygia**, the new King of, Bk. II, Ch. 8, 23  
**Plangus**, son of the King of Iberia, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 12, 13, 15, 29  
**Plexirtus**, brother of Leonatus, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 22—24, 29  
**Plistonax**, Bk. III, Ch. 8  
**Policrates**, Bk. III, Ch. 7  
**Polixena**, Bk. I, Ch. 17  
**Polycetes**, Bk. I, Ch. 17  
**Pontus**, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 9  
**Pontus**, the new King of, Bk. II, Ch. 9, 10, 22—24  
**Pyrocles**, Prince of Macedonia, sometimes called Daiphantus, Zelmane, the Ill-apparelled Knight, Bk. I, Ch. 1, 5—10, 12—19, Bk. II, Ch. 1—4, 6—29, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 14, 19—24, 26—29  
**Sarpedon**, Bk. III, Ch. 8  
**Strephon**, Bk. I, Ch. 1, 2  
**Strophilus**, Bk. III, Ch. 8

# TABLE OF PERSONAGES

Telamon, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Telenor, *see* Tydeus

Thessalia, Prince of, *see* Dorilaus *and* Musidorus

Thrace, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6

Timotheus, father of Philoxenus, Bk. I, Ch. 11

Tiridates, King of Armenia, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 13, 15

Tressennius, Bk. III, Ch. 15

Tydeus & Telenor, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 22, 23

Urania, Bk. I, Ch. 1, 2, 16, 17

Zelmane, *see* Pyrocles

Zelmane, Plexirtus' daughter, sometimes called Daiphantus, Bk. I, Ch. 16,  
Bk. II, Ch. 20—23

Zoana, Bk. I, Ch. 17

Zoilus, brother of Anaxius, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18—20, 25—28









